SWALLOWED STAR

BOOK 09

I Eat Tomatoes

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Swallowed Star

(*The Legend Of Spacewalker*)

(*Tun Shi Xing Kong*)

(吞噬星空)

by

I Eat Tomatoes

(*Wo Chi Xi Hong Shi*)

(我吃西红柿)

Synopsis

Year 2056, in a city in the Yuan Jiang Su Jin area.

On top of a ruined, shattered six story residential apartment sits a teenager wearing a combat vest, militaristic trousers, and alloyed battle boots.

On his back is a hexagonal shield and equipped is a blood-shadow battle knife.

He sits there silently on the edge of the roof. At this time, the sparkling sky was shining and there was a refreshing breath within the air that blew towards him.

However, there was only silence within the ruined, deserted city, with an occasional howl that makes your heart skip a beat.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the team @ Wuxia Translations, Translation Nations, and Qidian International.

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 901: Silhouette of a Whip

Those who were able to rush over immediately were definitely the strongest of the human camp warriors in Twin whirlpools. Tens of teams plus the initial three, a total of close to ninety warriors were present. Amongst which, there were over thirty pinnacle soul masters and emperor limits!

"Blade River is retired?"

"Hehe, I heard his body is about emperor pinnacle strength, yet he's able to kill so many powerful warriors. He must have some true treasures."

"Right, back then he forced Blood Beast away, killed Purple Clock and forced Heavy Arrow into a coma and then turned him into a slave. He relied on the strongest flame god crystal. However, he wasn't even harmed by it, I don't believe that he has some powerful defensive treasures. And recently he massacred so many. It seems like his strength must have grown further, and also he must have some new treasures!"

"Attention all, the other race team has already been forced away by Blade River. Tian Chen has been saved by Blade River already."

"That other race team was said to have several emperor limits and two true treasures, yet they were forced away by Blade River? This Blade River...is too strong, he must have more than one true treasure."

Close to ninety warriors of the human camp floated about, all staring at the silver armored and winged youth.

Luo Feng gazed around. Even though they were all from the human camp, there was only one true human amongst them, the rest were from other races!

"Cha Mang emperor, you wouldn't think of making a move on me too would you?" Luo Feng looked straight at the human. As Blade

River, he had gotten to know many emperors within the Hong alliance, and this was one he was an acquaintance with.

"Of course not, I only came here because Tian Chen was in trouble. I came to deal with the other race team, why would I attack someone of the same race."

He stood among the many warriors and looked around, his voice booming like thunder, spreading far and wide. "Blade River is a human warrior, even though he's retired, he is still human! About 1/3 of you here are from the Hong alliance, are you all going to attack a human warrior?"

"No."

"We won't interfere in this, we came here for the other race team."

"We won't interfere."

Many Hong alliance members immediately said.

Since they were from the Hong alliance, they couldn't escape the rules of the alliance. Humans were the core of the entire alliance! The warrior Blade River definitely had some background. If he were to be killed by one of them...his friends, teachers etc would all come take revenge for him, it would be too easy to find them all.

"Looks like they haven't gone mad." Luo Feng thought.

While these warriors may be greedy within, with so many spectators about...there were many more problems to think about.

"Hmph, the Hong alliance may not interfere, but I'm not a member." Snow Horn said coldly.

"Hehe, they can stand by and watch."

"Since he's retired, he's not protected by the army system. Hence, he has no relation to us."

The many other warriors stared hard at Luo Feng.

The vast number of other races in the universe used humanity to enter the outer region wars. The Hong alliance was but a small portion of the human camp, but many others weren't part of it. While they may have some relation with humanity now, once they retired, they would return to their homes and have no connections to humanity. Hence, they didn't care about all this.

Luo Feng kept Ji Hong in his world ring and stared coldly at everything. He had kept him outside initially with the plans of forcefully breaking through, now however with so many emperors around, it was impossible to do so. It was better to be alone.

"More are coming." Snow Horn gazed. "Attention all, if we keep standing around, more would come to take the treasure."

"Attack!"

"Kill!"

Tens of warriors all moved simultaneously. Since they were all from the same camp, they were not worried about being attacked by others after getting the treasure. Hence more than half of the group attacked.

"Very good." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

"Hmph!"

He flapped his silver wings and unleashed strike travel. His Beast god presence was incredibly high now, and his movement was even faster than before. The tens of warriors could only watch as the silver light arced around them and easily dodged all the attacks.

Rumble...

With so many attacks, the surrounding space was torn apart as the fragments flew madly about, this affected the other warriors greatly. However with the fragments, it allowed Luo Feng to be like a fish in water, unaffected at all as his speed left them all stunned.

...

The Hong alliance members including Cha Mang emperor, along with few that didn't participate all watched on shocked.

"Blade River's instantaneous speed is absurd!"

"With so many space fragments, he can actually change directions thousands to tens of thousands of times, his speed is incredible."

"Tens of warriors attacking him and none even got close."

"Too strong"

"With such terrifying speed, this Blade River can go anywhere in the vast universe." The spectating warriors all realized how terrifying he was. With such instantaneous speed, his survival ability was crazy.

If not for the space lockdown, he could teleport away immediately.

With it there, he could still move that fast, and under the gazes of countless warriors, he would still be able to get away.

In all.

His survival ability was heavenly, unless one had a true treasure like the ice net or something, or special spirit weapon attacks, or soul illusions to affect him. They had to find a way to control his speed to deal with him, otherwise it was almost impossible.

"You want to affect me with these little soul attacks?" Luo Feng was like a god howling, his voice booming in all the attackers' minds. "I can get away easily enough. However...Snow Horn, you are detestable!"

Shua!

A silver light flashed and he was already beside Snow Horn.

"How can he be that fast, we have so many warriors and yet, we

cannot hold him down?" Snow Horn's eyes were blinded by a light as he found himself staring straight at Luo Feng's cold eyes behind the silver helmet. He instantly understood, "He wants to kill me!"

Hua!

The six purple lit black balls appeared from Luo Feng's left hand. They were all sealed stars coated in the Fei Mo poison and imprinted with the Beast god descends sky tearing claw. With a trigger of his powerful consciousness, a blurry projection of the Beast god appeared.

Howl! The right claw had the six sealed stars within, tearing downwards.

"Break!" Snow Horn had a huge turtle shelled beast image appear behind him, and two blades appeared in his arms which became a huge scissor like weapon.

The huge right claw clashed with the scissors!

Hua...

The surrounding space fragments were instantly hit by the shockwaves and reduced to stream particles. The six sealed stars within the right claw were incredibly intrepid. Every little black ball far exceeded the power of a star. Ka Cha, ka cha...the scissors crumbled as the claw slashed through Snow Horn who had no way to escape.

Rumble, his god body instantly crumbled.

In terms of strength, he was indeed an emperor limit. Luo Feng's current consciousness and spirit energy, with the general soul's help along with the powerful Beast god presence was only at the pinnacle emperor level.

A pinnacle emperor with the help of true treasures could normally match an emperor limit, and even kill an emperor limit, like Purple Clock emperor!

Luo Feng relied on the star map, and he completely suppressed this emperor limit!

Hua!

Six purple lit black balls pierced through the gathering fragments of Snow Horn. Every black ball was able to destroy about 5% of his god body, with six of them, that was about 30%.

"Trying to kill me without burning your undying energy, you must be dream...no!!!" His body was just reforming as his eyes were suddenly filled with shock. He felt a special corrosive attack on his god body as it reformed, instantly destroying 35% of his god body.

Hua!

The six balls turned in the distance and once again became a howling Beast god, its right claw descending once again.

"Die." Luo Feng looked on coldly.

"Blade River emperor!" A cold voice suddenly rushed into Luo Feng's mind. A powerful attack flew over from far. A over 300m tall black lightning hammer tore through the air. Its speed was terrifying, as the broken space fragments were simply knocked aside.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

The fragments were all reduced to stream particles as the black hammer caused Luo Feng's expression to change. "Even with the Sha Wu wings I won't be able to dodge this."

"Go." He waved his left hand.

Eight black balls swiftly flew over, and they were all infused with the laws within, forming a huge Beast god projection in mid air. Compared to the sky tearing claw beast that got formed before, this one was obviously much more condensed and real.

The eight balls formed a Beast god with a long tail which was a few hundred meters long. It swung like a whip forwards!

"Howl!" The Beast god howled as its tail whipped at the lightning hammer.

Beast god armament second form, Whip!

The Beast god armament had a total of six forms. The first was Beast god descends, while the second was whip. This was the strongest move he could use after comprehending the Nan shen seven form's second volume.

...

A blurry whip silhouette, and a majestic black lightning hammer, they clashed directly. The eight sealed stars clashed hard with the hammer.

Rumble!

The tail whip instantly crumbled from the force. The eight sealed stars were knocked away too, after which they flew back to Luo Feng's hands and landed in his left palm. This made him frown.

The thunder hammer was knocked far away too, it shrank until it was only about 30 plus meters, landing in the 20m tall black armored giant with three horns on his forehead. He stared at Luo Feng too.

"Blade River!" A voice boomed.

Silver winged Luo Feng immediately stood straight up and gazed into the distance, "Black Ti emperor!" His voice resounding about.

Chapter 902: Luo Feng Vs Black Ti

When the sealed star fell before, Black Ti didn't participate, but this didn't affect his reputation in any way.

The four camps in the outer region wars all had terrifying beings, like Life Fall, DA Long, Nan Zheng, Seven blade and so on. They were all renowned figures. Black Ti was one that could match them as well. Even though he was from the human camp, he was from a distant universe region, and not from the Hong alliance.

He had a true treasure hammer named Black Ti, hence his name.

"It's Black Ti!"

"He's actually here, and he is so fast."

"Blade River is in trouble, but Black Ti's terrifying strength. Back then when he had fought with Da Long for quite awhile, both of them decided that it was best to call a truce finally. Within the entire seventh battlefield, Black Ti is definitely one of the pinnacle beings, Blade River is disadvantaged."

"If Black Ti is here, Blade River's treasure isn't for us to take."

"Do you think you could ever get Blade River's treasure? With a flap of his wings, he'll easily leave you far behind."

...

The distant other race warriors had all given up. They were clear that this level of being, even with seven emperor limits combining forces, they would all be easily knocked back by him. Hence, the other warriors simply stayed back and watched the two battle.

Two silhouettes were floating in space with a distance between them.

One was huge, while the other was tiny.

However both energies made the others around them tremble.

"He seems quite strong." The tall and demonic Black Ti's voice boomed. "To be able to receive my hammer, he must be quite strong."

"Since I entered the outer region wars, this is the first time I'm actually dealing with a level of warrior like that. It really makes my blood boil. Come on, let me see if your reputation is well deserved." Luo Feng stared intensely from the other end and said, both sides filled with fighting spirit.

Both of them were strong!

Battling with other strong warriors and pursuing the limits of the universe, this was Luo Feng's ambition.

"Good! I'll let you see if my name is real!" Black Ti's voice boomed as he rushed forward instantly.

Xiu!

He became a lightning bolt, and his speed was terrifying.

If he had tossed out his hammer, that hammer...had a speed so fast that it even shocked Luo Feng initially. However, his own speed wasn't something Luo Feng actually bothered with. With the Sha Wu Wings, his own instantaneous speed far exceeded Black Ti's.

Xiu! Luo Feng flapped his wings and easily flew far away. Amidst the broken space fragments, his speed was demonic, easily dodging and changing directions.

"Go!" eight black balls floated in his left palm.

The eight black balls immediately revolved in space, and the law engravings on them glowed with gold light. Luo Feng's terrifying willpower that exceeded even that of knights triggered the laws and instantly a few hundred meter long Beast god formed.

"Howl..." The Beast god howled. It was actually a spirit weapon taking on this form, and its speed was absurd.

Shua!

It appeared before Black Ti and instantly whipped its tail at him.

"Hmph." Black Ti wielded his hammer and stepped forward, causing the large amount of space fragments to instantly become stream particles. He swung his hammer heavily. He had casually thrown it earlier, but this time he swung it with his full might.

Weng!

The Beast god's tail actually recoiled and evaded the head on clash with the hammer, whipping it back at Black Ti.

"So fast." Black Ti was shocked. He had used his full force to swing the hammer. Hence, he was unable to bring it back on time to defend. With a howl, he used his left hand to punch. A dark red metal covered his hand. It seemed like a special punch, as it triggered the laws, causing the the space about to completely crumble into fragments.

Rumble!

The punch clashed with the tail whip. Black Ti's punch could easily smash through a star, however, he felt intense pain from this clash!

"Good!" He actually howled malevolently, getting even crazier.

"Hahaha... Black Ti, your hammer's speed seems slower than before." The distant Luo Feng controlled the Beast god to once again attack.

In mid air, the Beast god flashed time and again. As it flashed, its tail grew even more demonic, occasionally whipping, and at other times recoiling. It was extremely fast, and it made the enemy unable to trace it. After all, even for normal animals...their tail whip movement was extremely fast.

The Beast god was the same!

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Black Ti unleashed his strength.

His swung his hammer against the Beast god's tail over and over. Every time it hit, it knocked the eight black balls far away. The only thing was that since Luo Feng was a spirit reader, even if the eight sealed stars were knocked away they could immediately gather and reform the Beast god image, attacking once again. This was the difference between a spirit reader and fighter.

The fighter couldn't back down, once his weapons were knocked away, his body would take the blow.

A spirit reader however, even if his weapons were knocked away, as he would usually attack from afar, he could still reform his weapons and attack immediately.

"He actually blocked it over and over?" Luo Feng was shocked as he controlled the eight sealed stars. "His usage of the hammer has changed too. Every attack has a revolving force, and with each attack, the force grows. Even if I make the tail dodge the attack, he would still be able to defend."

...

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The demonic Black Ti howled as he rushed at Luo Feng with his hammer, every step was as fast as lightning. Even with the Beast god's tail whipping at him, he easily knocked it away with a swing. It was almost like a huge car rushing forward easily knocking away a bicycle, however this bicycle simply reformed over and over and attacked again.

"What power." Luo Feng's expression changed, feeling the difference between himself and Black Ti. The rest of them who were watching this battle felt the same way.

"That toss earlier...I could still withstand it, probably because he didn't use too much force initially. Now that he's serious, each blow is like a huge mountain crashing down. Even my eight sealed

stars are knocked away easily."

"Even with the eight sealed stars, I'm still losing. I can only barely affect his speed."

The bicycle may have been knocked away over and over again, however it still managed to slightly affect the car's speed.

"I'm not his match."

"If I go all out and let Fu Shui use his Ice net on him, there would still be a chance. However he hasn't even burnt his undying body, it's obvious he doesn't wish to go all out with me." Luo Feng thought. "Since we've already tested each other's strength, it's time to go. However before that..."

His gaze turned to Snow Horn emperor, he couldn't forget the one that was most passionate about killing him. "I'll deal with him first."

******

The surrounding number of warriors kept growing, they all formed their own little teams and floated about, gazing from a distance at the fight.

Black Ti was intrepid and powerful. Even with Blade River's full attacks, he easily knocked them away. However, Blade River remained far away and Black Ti had no way to get close. Even if he rushed forward, Blade River could easily get away.

"Even though Blade River can easily deal with an emperor limit, he still isn't a match for Black Ti."

"Black Ti's strength is heavenly. Even though his strength surpasses Blade River, but his speed cannot even touch him." The warriors around could all see this.

"Hahaha... Black Ti sure is powerful, much respect! But I'll be leaving first!"

His voice was filled with spirit energy, which resounded

throughout the space.

Shua!

Luo Feng flapped his wings and formed a silver flash, with one flash, he once again reached Snow Horn emperor.

"You..." Snow Horn who was with his teammates changed his expression.

"Do you think you can take my treasures? You sure don't know your place!" six purple lit black balls formed a Beast god projection and howled as it rushed at Snow Horn. His teammates all actually dodged. Having seen his power, none of them dared to offend Blade River.

Tear!

The right claw tore Snow Horn apart as the six balls instantly pierced through, destroying over 30% of his god body.

"Blade River!!! I will have my revenge!!!" He howled in anger as he instantly self destructed. He knew that he wasn't a match for Blade River, but he was still an emperor limit. It was definite that he would be revived in the future. However, if he was forced into a coma and taken away, then he would have no hope left for revival.

Rumble...

The force of the shockwave rippled in all directions. An explosion with only 30% of his undying body left was something the emperor limits could withstand against together. Only a few pinnacle emperors were heavily injured, but no one fell.

Just like that, Snow Horn fell!

...

Xiu!

With so many warriors watching him, Blade River left just as he said. Before he left, he even killed an emperor limit Snow Horn emperor, and the speed he displayed as he left...made all the

warriors around shake their heads and sigh. Even Black Ti, only when he tossed his hammer could he catch up to him.

But he was clear too, that when he tossed his hammer, Luo Feng would immediately use the Beast god projection to defend. It wouldn't even affect his fleeing.

In an instant...

Blade River flew out of the space lock down area and with a teleport, he vanished from sight.

"What power, what speed." Black Ti's voice boomed, he sighed before he became a beam of light and vanished.

Chapter 903: The Legend of Blade River Emperor

The broken space fragments began to recover, and the continent that had been floating within the whirlpools for so long had been completely pierced through, revealing a huge hole with a diameter of hundreds of thousands of km. Hundreds of warriors floated there, still stunned at the scene that just took place.

Suddenly...

A powerful energy appeared in mid air. An armored metal person glowing with black light appeared, and his formless pressure spread out, causing the hundreds of human warriors to grow silent.

"It's Life Fall emperor!"

"It's the automaton Life Fall emperor!"

"He's from the automaton race, how'd he get here so fast?"

"Haven't you heard that he gave out a bounty for Blade River's location? There were definitely some from the human camp that revealed the location earlier, allowing him to rush over." Almost all of the human warriors were emperors. However, there were many low and high emperors around. Against the powerful Life Fall, they didn't dare challenge him.

...

Life Fall stood in space, gazing about, he roared, "Where's Blade River?"

"Life Fall." The warriors of the human camp may not dare challenge him, but that didn't mean they feared him. A warrior the size of a small mountain spoke, "Blade River had just battled Black Ti and left right after, along the way he even killed Snow Horn emperor. He should have teleported via god country far away by

now."

"He fought Black Ti?" Life fall looked at the warrior.

The warrior boomed, "You can see for yourself."

Shua!

A light projection appeared in mid air, producing a 3D image. This was something that earth had even back in the base era. However the universe technology was obviously more advanced, as it was 100% simulation of the battle between Blade River and Black Ti that replayed before them.

Life Fall watched on right until the end.

Him and Black Ti both belonged to the pinnacle of beings in the outer region wars. At their level, they could see wonders and little things within the battles. Without a doubt...this battle was but a test from both sides. Unless they truly wanted to go all out, no one would actually burn their undying bodies.

Black Ti and Blade River both didn't.

"Black Ti only used his most basic methods, his god hammer!" Life Fall muttered, "He only used one of the three techniques. And Blade River..."

"I heard he's most proficient in blade work, yet he used a spirit weapon this time."

"And he has Heavy Arrow as his slave, the report even said that Tian Chen and Ji Hong followed behind him. Tian Chen was saved by him, while Ji Hong is from another camp, for him to be so respectful, he should be his slave too!"

"Just how many slaves does he have?"

"His speed is crazy!"

"His defense was renowned before, and now he even revealed a spirit weapon." Life Fall felt like this Blade River was truly mysterious, with so many trump cards, just the fact that he didn't

even let his slaves attack showed his own confidence.

...

The many human warriors all looked at Life Fall, observing his reactions. When he finished viewing the battle, he was silent for a while before saying, "Blade River is worthy of his name and even if he has true treasures, he deserves them." After which, he teleported away.

Life Fall had left, however those words made the hundreds of warriors there shocked.

"Life Fall has recognized Blade River's strength."

"He recognizes that Blade River is worthy of his treasures."

"What a pity, looks like it'll be hard to see the both of them ever clash."

"Since Life Fall says so, no one will go after Blade River anymore. This fight...has let Blade River prove his strength."

The many warriors sighed. The circle of warriors was as such that only the strong were worthy of true treasures. The weak would have to be careful not to reveal their treasures. If not, they would be attacked! And Life Fall, even Seven Blade, which one of these beings didn't have many treasures?

Seven Blade, his seven blades alone were true treasures, along with the many others he had.

Black Ti and Life Fall were similar.

Everyone in the outer region wars knew about their treasures, yet no one ever attacked them for the treasures! This was strength! And this fight...with Blade River facing off against Black Ti, that was proof of his strength! It proved that he had that level of strength too, maybe he was still weaker than Black Ti, but his speed and terrifying defense...made him as hard to deal with as the others.

******

This fight thus began to spread the legend of Blade River throughout the outer region wars.

Countless warriors began to compare Blade River with Black Ti. Black Tomb, Seven Blade, Da Long etc, in their eyes...he may be slightly weaker than the others, but his speed would leave many in despair.

"I'd rather meet Seven Blade and Life Fall than meet Blade River!"

"There's still a chance of fleeing against the others. However against Blade River with space lockdown, who can outmatch him in speed? We won't be able to escape."

"Be careful to not mess with Blade River. Over 6,000 years ago, he could already withstand the blast of the strongest flame god crystal. But, right now he's even stronger, it's absurd. His defense is strong and his speed is crazy, it's better to avoid him."

The legend of Blade River thus spread far and wide amongst the many warriors in the universe, making him a renowned being in the universe.

...

Luo Feng however had already left Twin whirlpools after that fight, teleporting straight to humanity.

...

Virtual Universe Company base.

Luo Feng took on the form of his sector lord self, sitting in the Virtual Universe Company ship and headed straight to the primal region primal chaos city.

"Your majesty."

"Your majesty."

The emperor undying in charge of the ship said respectfully.

Luo Feng just smiled and nodded as he found a single cabin to rest in.

"Captain, is there a need to be that courteous with him. He's only a sector lord, with your strength as a high emperor, you can kill him with a wave of your hand." An undying member of the ship said. Beside him, the other members were all discussing. "That's right, he just got lucky and became the disciple of the city leader, if not for that, he's only a sector lord, why bother? This trip was specially organized just for him, if it were normal sector lords, they'd have to wait till the numbers had tallied before we'd take off."

The captain laughed, "Even though he's only a sector lord and I can easily kill him, he is still the disciple of the city leader. We can say this secretly, but never ever say it out loud. If he chose to pursue the matter, no one can protect you all."

"We understand."

"Relax captain, we are not stupid."

"We are just saying, I just cannot stand his behavior, as if we are supposed to be respectful of him." The undying member said unhappily.

The captain shook his head. It was normal to feel unjust as he felt that way too, but he still had to maintain absolute respect, if he wanted to climb up the ranks of the Virtual Universe Company. If his strength was insufficient, he couldn't offend anybody. And a being like Luo Feng was one he definitely couldn't offend.

"Hmph, the glory of the old days has passed. It's been close to 10,000 years after he became the disciple of the city leader, yet I've never heard of him having any achievements. He's probably been forgotten by many." The captain thought.

******

The ship flew to a stop in the air above the city.

"Your majesty."

"Your majesty."

With the captain leading, the members all sent off Luo Feng respectfully.

Luo Feng gazed at the primal chaos energy that engulfed the ancient city below. Ever since he became the disciple of the city leader, he had gotten the rights to be a permanent resident here. Actually, even with his level on the heavenly bridge alone, he already had that right.

Primal chaos city, True Yan's residence.

Luo Feng rushed into the residence, seeing some disciples in name along with other true disciples.

"Senior."

"Senior Luo Feng." Many disciples within shouted passionately at him. Luo Feng asked them to find out where True Yan's current living quarters was.

After awhile...

He rushed into a yard and stopped suddenly.

"I've heard you from far away, why aren't you coming in." True Yan's voice resounded from the yard.

Luo Feng smiled and entered the door.

True Yan sat there, with a wave, the doors shut.

"Have you come with nothing to see me?" True Yan sat there and looked at Luo Feng, seemingly cold and indifferent.

Luo Feng however smiled and with a flip of his hand, brandished a red wine bottle. This was about the size of a palm, and was peculiarly shaped, almost like an orangutan shape, with complex engravings carved on its surface and it glowed with fire law energies. Luo Feng placed this bottle on his teacher's table.

"According to what you said, I have to bring wine to visit you." Luo Feng said seriously, "I wonder if this satisfies you."

"Very satisfied."

True Yan stared wide eyed at this burning wine bottle. After careful observation, he extended his furry hand to touch it, nodding, "Indeed, this is it. Damn, only those with huge amounts of wealth in humanity can afford this, and even so, this would take an emperor limit's entire wealth. There's extremely few such wine amongst humanity, I've only tried one glass before, I didn't expect..."

"Hehe." True Yan immediately smiled happily. "My good disciple, the powerful Blade River emperor, looks like your rewards from the outer region wars have been huge."

"Hehe." Luo Feng smiled.

It was huge indeed.

Chapter 904: Primal Sky Mountain

The biggest reward of course was still the life or death inheritance from star tower, the star map and Pearl tower. After over 6,000 years of torture, his willpower had evolved greatly, and his Beast god presence had reached another level too.

In terms of wealth.

During that one month of massacre in star tower with over forty battles, everyone got several billions worth of wealth, occasionally more. In all, how much was that? Even though while massacring, he would only occasionally activate the virtual universe synchronized broadcast to accumulate contribution points. He didn't declare more than half of them.

Even so, the number of points he got was still shocking. The amount of wealth he could exchange from that may not be as much as the massacre, but it was still very high.

"If the rewards weren't big, I wouldn't have been able to afford this Purple flame ape wine." Luo Feng said. "After I retired, I discovered there was this one bottle within the army system. I was shocked that they actually had it! I immediately thought of you and bought it without any hesitation."

"Haha..."True Yan couldn't help but laugh out loud. He rubbed the bottle in his hands, as he was extremely happy.

The Purple flame ape wine was something only a special life form of the universe, the Purple flame ape could produce.

Even though it had the name ape, in truth the human and ape race had no relation to it. In fact, it was produced by the universe as a ball of purple flames that was somewhat resembled an ape. It was actually a mysterious flame! With powerful energies.

There were over 10,000 purple flame apes in the universe. However over the years, their numbers only dropped without ever

going up.

However, the years also resulted in several super beings, plus with their special living environment, like some terrifying flame regions that even knights didn't dare enter. The knights would instantly be reduced to ashes within. However, the flame apes weren't worried about this. They were in fact most renowned for their wine, hence naming it the Purple flame ape wine.

As for this wine, just its flavor alone made it a top class wine.

Of course there were countless good wines in the universe, just the taste alone wouldn't give it such a high price.

The first point of this wine was it was beneficial to the body and soul. Anyone who drank this would feel his or her comprehension of the fire laws grow! Their bodies would be more adept at the fire laws and thus become stronger with it.

The second point was that it would definitely get one drunk!

Even the strong ones, be it knights or more, as long as they didn't purposely wipe off the alcohol from within after finishing one cup, they would naturally get drunk. Once they awake from it, they would feel all headaches and troubles vanish after. To the strong, they favored this point even more mainly because it was extremely hard for such beings to even get drunk. It took endless wealth to achieve this effect.

Other than these two points.

There were many other abilities. One cup could make a normal person evolve into a universe level warrior, and drinking more would make him one with an extreme high level of understanding of the fire laws. Of course, no one would waste billions to hundreds of billions just to nurture a universe level warrior.

Even an undying wasn't worth 1% of this one cup!

For this wine...Luo Feng had spent eighty billion!

"Your luck was good." True Yan exclaimed. "The army system has many treasures within, as they are provided by the countless races. And many of them aren't from the Hong alliance! Many are from the distant regions of the universe, and the treasures they provide form the true treasure trove of the army. There are many of other races...hence occasionally there would be special treasures. Only thing is they require contribution points to exchange for. Even if a powerful warrior discovered this bottle of wine, very few would actually exchange so much contribution points just for it. Hence you got it."

"Right, there was only this one in the trove." Luo Feng smiled.

"Even I cannot afford to drink too much of this, I'll drink a little at a time." True Yan's eyes gleamed peculiarly. "I'll bring some good brothers over and make them drunk."

Luo Feng couldn't help but laugh.

"What's your plans on this return?" True Yan asked.

"I'm going to attempt the Primal sky mountain first." Luo Feng said. "After that I'll head out to explore some secret regions. Ah! Relax teacher, I'll definitely head to those less dangerous ones. Not the renowned and risky ones, I know myself well."

"That's good." True Yan relaxed. "Even so you still have to be careful. The secret regions will occasionally have dangers that exceed your imagination. They are after all special places. Their laws don't always follow the rest of the universe."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

"I know your strength too, Blade River!" True Yan laughed as he said this. The name Blade River had indeed cause quite a storm in the outer region wars. He was extremely renowned now, and even within the emperors of humanity, he was one of the top.

Those stronger than Blade River are very few. Other than True Yan and Heavenly Feather and the other invincible emperors that

had lived for trillions of years, other than that, there were none.

In terms of the younger generation.

Only Seven Blade and Meng Sui emperor and some others could compare.

"You have to keep your Blade River identity an absolute secret." True Yan emphasized. "I dare to stay this here in Primal chaos city because, I've blocked off all scans here, and this is the territory of the city leader."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded.

"Hm, head over to the Primal sky mountain." True Yan laughed. "It's been a few thousand year. I often hear others discuss about how you haven't done anything. It's made many strong warriors unhappy, standing above others without strength, it's natural they are unhappy about it."

"When you finish the sky mountain, come drink with me!" True Yan hugged the bottle of Purple flame ape wine.

"Yes, I'll head over now." Luo Feng sat before him and closed his eyes, connecting to the virtual universe."

"This punk sure is straightforward." True Yan blinked.

****

Virtual universe, sky mountain.

The mountains beside stood taller than the other. When Luo Feng appeared, he flew towards the tallest of the three, the Primal sky mountain. As he was a primal region member, he naturally could attempt it.

...

At the foot of the majestic mountain, three silhouettes sat crossed legged, playing some unseen game.

"White ape, there's someone."

"Someone is here."

"Quick, get up."

The three silhouettes seemed rusty, as they stood up. The tall and sturdy bull man looked at Luo Feng, laughing immediately, "So it's your majesty Luo Feng. Even though you are the disciple of the city leader, you are overconfident to attempt the sky mountain? You are only sector lord level!"

"Bull head, what are you saying, this is his majesty Luo Feng, what's there he cannot do." The ape man chimed in.

"Your majesty, are you going to begin?" The snake lady glanced at him, her gaze almost like water.

Luo Feng laughed, "This feels so familiar."

"Familiar?" The three were stunned.

"I'm about to begin." Luo Feng smiled and a shield appeared in his hand, it was the Beast god armament.

Fighting in the virtual universe, his tower pearl, the Sha Wu wings, the star map, everything was naturally gone. Even things that boosted his power like the general armor and general soul were gone. All he had was his normal sector lord body that was similar to all the sector lord geniuses, but the only difference was his willpower and consciousness strength!

Of course the Beast god armament was something he chose. The one he had now definitely wasn't as good as the one in reality, but it was enough for a sector lord to use.

"Come." The bull man waved his huge axe.

"Let's see your strength." The ape man's gaze shot out like lightning.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, I feel sorry for you." The snake lady's formless soul attack had already begun.

Howl...

A Beast god projection appeared in mid air. A huge Beast god howled and rushed forward, tearing through the bullman, stomping on the ape man and whipping its tail at the snake lady.

The battle ended instantly.

He had passed the foot of the mountain.

"This part sure was easy." He stepped forward. He had already forgotten that when he first became sector lord, he couldn't even pass this level. However over his 7,000 plus years in the outer region wars, he had improved greatly.

...

The mid portion of the mountain was just as easy!

...

At the peak, he had a little trouble but with his powerful willpower, the moment he got serious, unleashing the strongest Tail whip from the Beast god allowed him to succeed.

"Congratulations your majesty Luo Feng, you've passed the sector lord primal sky mountain."

"Any human able to pass this is definitely an absolute genius of ten million eras."

"Only those able to pass this can be considered the most pinnacle of geniuses in the history of humanity."

The three guards revived and were incredibly surprised and respectful towards Luo Feng.

Luo Feng stood at the peak, gazing at the vast land below. He could see the other two shorter mountains. As he stood there, thoughts filling his mind, the upper echelon of humanity had already gotten the news of him passing the sky mountain.

This piece of news was like a tornado, swiftly spreading.

Chapter 905: Gamble

Standing at the peak with the winds howling.

"I'm finally at the peak." Luo Feng gazed down at the vast land below, thinking, "The sector lord primal sky mountain, this is a benchmark for countless geniuses in human history. Only after conquering it can one stand amongst these geniuses. I'm currently standing alongside the strongest of geniuses. However, a genius is just a genius, not a true strong warrior yet."

"One day..."

"I will stand at the peak of the universe!"

Feeling his fighting spirit rush, he made a vow, back on earth when he was still weak he took on this path, for not only his family, but also for his dream! This warrior's path, he had dreams and feelings for, it was impossible for anyone to take any path without such feelings.

Shua!

He vanished from the peak of sky mountain.

******

At the heavenly bridge, on the beautiful center island, the watchman Bevin stood there for trillions of years, guarding the front.

Shua.

Luo Feng appeared there, causing Bevin to immediately smile, "Your majesty Luo Feng, it's been so long since I last saw you."

"Haha, it has been long indeed. I missed you Bevin, hence I came again." Luo Feng joked.

Bevin said curiously, "You seem very confident, which level are you aiming for this time?"

"To whichever I can, hopefully I get to fight the 21st level." Luo Feng said.

"21st level?" Bevin was stunned, "You at least have to pass the 20th level first to do that, don't tell me..."

Luo Feng smiled, "Is there anyone at the Nine universe bridge?"

"No." Bevin said.

"Very good."

Luo Feng smiled.

Sou!

He flew straight towards the Nine universe heavenly bridge. Bevin watched him go, as he muttered to himself, "That's too much confidence. He's only trained for so few years, yet he seems confident he can pass the 20th level, hm? There's a mail? Ah, and not just one."

Bevin opened his mail and got a huge shock!

"What, he passed the sector lord primal sky mountain!" Bevin stared wide eyed, turning back to face the Nine universe bridge, "Looks like he'll really get to fight it out with the 21st level guardian."

******

The upper echelon of the Virtual Universe Company were the first to know of such news.

Within Primal chaos city, amidst the primal chaos wastelands, the city leader exclaimed as he sat crossed legged. "Luo Feng's improvement speed sure is fast, to be able to pass the sky mountain." This was no surprise to him. Even though Luo Feng had mentioned before that he had the law comprehension to pass the 20th level.

But passing the 20th level of the bridge was only one prerequisite to passing the sky mountain, it wasn't assured that he would

definitely pass it! Because during battle, many other factors come into play, such as techniques, amplification, spirit energy, willpower etc!

"His success will definitely quell all earlier fights and competitions. They all said that Rong Jun had a limitless future, and that my disciple couldn't compete with him. This time, they'll definitely be speechless." The city leader smiled and nodded.

...

Above Blood river continent, the powerful fortress Tian Shi palace that stood over the continent for countless ages.

This silhouette seemed to have countless illusions about. He was one that stood high in the Virtual Universe Company, with countless warriors respecting him, the Tian Shi palace leader. He laughed out loudly, resounding throughout the palace, causing all the sector lords and even undyings on the 1st and 2nd level to be shocked. They didn't know why he was so happy.

"Good job!"

He gazed into the vast space, smiling, "The Huge Axe Dojo and Universe 1st bank punks, they all bet on Rong Jun! Back then I said Luo Feng was the one! Even when he was accepted as the Primal chaos city leader's disciple, they still didn't admit defeat! They even said that becoming a disciple only changed his status, and it didn't mean he was stronger. Back then when Luo Feng passed the domain lord sky mountain, they didn't care...thinking that it didn't mean anything."

"Now they definitely have to admit their defeat."

"The sector lord primal sky mountain represents the strongest of geniuses! This means that his law comprehension is only one step away from the knight level. Even though Rong Jun's improvement is extremely fast, compared to Luo Feng, it's much slower." The leader was incredibly gleeful.

Back then, the upper echelon of humanity, be it the Virtual Universe Company, the Huge Axe Dojo, the Universe 1st bank...all of them were debating about Luo Feng and Rong Jun.

How high were their perspectives? Even though Bolan's initial talent far exceeded theirs, his weakness in character made it so that it would be hard for him to reach high, unless he fixed it. Luo Feng and Rong Jun were different, as Luo Feng had his terrifying willpower and mental state. Such a genius...even if he didn't improve fast, he would constantly grow and finally become an absolute warrior.

As for Rong Jun, he was even more special!

The upper echelon of humanity were all placing bets on these two! Beings like the Tian shi palace leader, or even high universe masters, their bets would naturally be absurd. When Luo Feng returned from Blood river world back then, the leader couldn't help but give him some pointers as well.

...

While the city leader and the Tian Shi palace leader were celebrating, some others were sighing in despair.

"We actually lost, Rong Jun cannot compare to this genius."

"Rong Jun is too much of a disappointment."

"We can't blame him, Luo Feng's improvement is just too crazy. We all knew that he would have high achievements, but we'd never expect him to improve this fast! In another million years, there's no doubt Rong Jun would become an emperor pinnacle. He even has a certain possibility of becoming a knight."

The beings all sighed.

...

The news of Luo Feng passing the sky mountain swiftly spread, shocking countless warriors, and making those that were unhappy

before submit!

How could they not?

He had already conquered the highest benchmark of humanity's geniuses...sector lord primal sky mountain! Every genius that did so...when they became undying, would become emperor limit, even maybe invincible emperor. Their chances of becoming a knight were extremely high as well.

******

Virtual universe Yu Xiang mountain, within a restaurant.

A white armored Bolan and a tall and sturdy Rong Jun walked together into the booth. There was already someone inside...Wu Ka!

"Haha, you've come. Sit, sit." Wu Ka smiled.

The two of them sat down.

"You can all leave." Wu Ka ordered the staff.

"Yes."

The staff left respectfully out the door, leaving only these three behind.

"You all know about it?" Wuka helped to pour the wine.

"Hm." Bolan nodded.

"I thought the distance had been shortened, who'd expect it to get even further." Rong Jun's voice was heavy. After close to 10,000 years, his energy had grown tremendously, and the overpowering energy emanated from his bones. This energy was one of solitude strength, yet it wasn't detestable.

Wu Ka sighed, "Back then, we were the Absolute beginning brothers, you, me and Luo Feng. Luo Feng was the first to enter the primal region, and you too Rong Jun. Your improvement speed gets faster and faster. Back then as a domain lord primal region

member, you were number one. With that you rose to sector lord and became a sector lord primal region member."

Bolan and Rong Jun were both primal region sector lords!

Bolan had changed after his revision back then, he began to display his genius ability as a genius of 10,000 eras, improving at an incredible rate! Right now, he was already a sector lord!

As for Rong Jun.

He wasn't too fast initially, however as they all grew, his speed grew faster and faster. Later on, he was even faster than Bolan! And his speed kept growing. It was so fast it left many stunned. Back then when Luo Feng had already become the disciple of the Primal chaos city leader, only thing was he hadn't displayed any achievements since then.

Some had said that the most exceptional genius of this group should be Rong Jun!

Even though they were both primal region sector lords, should they have a qualification battle, Bolan would probably be knocked out into the absolute beginning region. Rong Jun however would still be able to stay within the primal region!

"Too fast, his improvement speed is too fast." Rong Jun shook his head and sighed. "Over these 8,000 years, I thought the law comprehension would get harder towards the end, and that Luo Feng's speed would definitely slow down. However..."

"To surpass him, there's only one way." Bolan said coldly.

Wuka and Rong Jun looked at him immediately.

Bolan said coldly, "Become a knight! Otherwise, we'll always be below him!"

"Unless we become a knight, we will never surpass him." Rong Jun nodded.

"We'll work hard together." Wuka lifted the wine glasses, "My

aim is to become an emperor, you two will become knights, we'll do it."

"Work hard."

"Work hard."

Rong Jun and Bolan lifted their glasses.

The three of them toasted.

As they discussed, another piece of news came over.

"Hm?" The three of them read their mails.

"He's passed the 20th level of the heavenly bridge?" The three exchanged glances before sighing. It was true, that Luo Feng passing the sky mountain meant that he had the ability to pass the 20th level of the heavenly bridge. However, to truly get the news, it still made them sigh, because...

From the 20th level to the 21st, there was just one step left.

Finishing this step meant he could become a knight!

...

Standing at the bridge amidst the darkness, there was only one winding bridge that extended far into the void. Luo Feng continued to fly along this void. He had just passed the 20th level and was heading to the 21st.

"The guardian of the 21st, he has the comprehension of a knight."

"I want to see if a sector lord's world energy will be able to fight against a knight's law comprehension." His eyes were filled with fighting spirit.

Chapter 906: 21st Level

Within the vast darkness, there was silence.

The bridge extended deep into the darkness. Luo Feng's heart was cool and yet was burning with fighting spirit!

"The 21st guardian! Complete space laws!" Luo Feng thought.

Even an emperor pinnacle or limit or an invincible emperor, they were mostly stuck at the 20th level. While their talent and comprehension may not be that different, and they may have even more resources and treasures, however they were still all stuck at this point. Why? Because this last step was simply too hard!

True Yan, with his many techniques and resources could match even a knight, yet even he still couldn't finish this step!

This one step...

Meant a step to heaven!

No matter how powerful an emperor is, he is but a strong warrior in the universe, as the knights were the true absolute beings! And the Tian Shi palace leader and Xi Luo Duo were absolute beings of the universe! As for the Primal chaos city leader and other such beings of that level etc...those were already pinnacle beings of the universe.

The 20th to the 21st level may seem like just one step, however, the difficulty of this one step was not lower than the 1st 20 levels combined!

******

Luo Feng slowed down, the end of the bridge was right before him. Located there was a 2m diameter ball that had caused the space around to tear. Large amounts of space fragments surrounded it.

"Every three levels of the heavenly bridge is a new environment.

The 19th to the 21st was a black hole environment, and flying outside earlier allowed me to see the black hole." Luo Feng looked at this ball. Since it was but a background image, he couldn't feel any effects of the black hole gravity at all, and no light was being sucked in.

A true black hole was something that couldn't be seen with the eyes. In the earth era, there were even debates about its existence.

However the universe had long made it clear.

It was a heavenly body that had been compressed to an ultra degree. This was much higher than a star or planet, it was a super evolution of a star in the universe, and it would swallow everything, including ships, stars, asteroids and so on, strengthening itself constantly.

Black holes could be separated into weak and strong ones too. The stronger ones had a greater area. Even a weaker black hole would require at least a knight to actually enter its core. The stronger ones were avoided even by knights.

"Pick your opponent. Fighter, Controller, Illusionist, pick one and if you defeat him, you will pass the 21st level and become a knight." A voice resounded from within the black hole.

"Controller." Luo Feng wielded the beast god armament, saying directly.

Hu...

A large black dot suddenly floated above, forming a human silhouette. He was covered in black armor and had a mask on. He carried a huge blade on his back, this huge blade was actually formed from a blur of fragments, it was some special spirit weapon.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, to meet a sector lord challenger is my honor." The guardian stood above the black hole and floated.

"To battle against the 21st guardian is my honor too." Luo Feng

smiled too.

"I have to say, without completely comprehending the space laws, you will not pass my level." The guardian was very graceful. "However, I will let you feel the strength of the complete space laws. After passing the previous levels, you should already know that I'm unable to use the beast god armament."

"I know." Luo Feng nodded.

Theoretically, choosing controller should result in the guardian using the same spirit weapon as himself. Back then when he used the Nan shen armament, it was a space type spirit weapon, mixed with gold laws. This was a mix of the laws, but not a fusion. The beast god armament however...was a fusion law weapon. This fusion made it so that it was no longer just a space or gold law weapon, but it was of a higher level, a fusion of the two laws.

"Your majesty, please make your move. Once I attack, you won't have a chance." The guardian laughed and seemed respectful.

"Then take my attack." Luo Feng wasn't arrogant at all.

Rumble!

The beast god armament immediately shot out fragments that were imbued with law engravings within, forming tens of thousands of threads that swiftly interweaved. Luo Feng stared at his opponent, his powerful willpower and world energy triggering the many fragments, after which a hundred meter long Beast god appeared.

Howl...

The Beast god became a beam of light and rushed at the guardian, as the surrounding space was torn apart.

"Seal!" The guardian pointed at the howling Beast god.

A powerful formless binding instantly descended. The Beast god that was rushing forward suddenly stopped, and Luo Feng floating

who was in the distance was stuck too. The sealing power was strong, as even the Beast god was held back. Luo Feng was shocked in disbelief.

"The complete space laws' power exceeds your imagination." The guardian was very graceful. "You should feel proud that you managed to get to this level, however the complete space laws isn't something you can...what!"

He looked shocked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng gaze was filled with madness. The veins on his face were twitching, almost like when he reached the limit of the life or death inheritance back then. Back when he attempted the Primal sky mountain, he had only unleashed his spirit energy amplification, and he didn't even push his willpower to its limit.

But this time, he unleashed it!

Pushing his willpower and consciousness to their limit, the form he took when he was at his limit at the inheritance before.

"Tail whip! Break!!!" He howled. With his willpower as the commander and consciousness as the general, he controlled his world energy and poured his beast god presence that had been trained over countless years into the Beast god. At this point, the beast god projection seemed almost life like.

It didn't even howl, simply whipping its tail strongly.

"Ge ge ge..." The space about trembled.

The Beast god's tail seemed slow but it moved steadily. With rumbling all around, the sealed space was completely broken apart.

"Kill!" The graceful guardian before starred with ferocity. He was no longer graceful, as the huge blade on his back became countless gold lights and flew into the air, forming a huge arc blade. This arc blade slashed at Luo Feng, creating a huge tear in the space around it.

Luo Feng controlled the Beast god to defend.

"Chi chi chi!" Even though the speed was slow, the blade slashed past the entire Beast god, causing it to crumble. After which, its speed soared again. Luo Feng was unable to escape this slash, as it destroyed Luo Feng's life core.

Luo Feng fell.

Failure!

Watching him vanish, the guardian's eyes once again regained its calm from before, he said softly, "What terrifying willpower, to actually force me to use my kill technique. Even the knights that have passed the 21st level, when they were knights, very few had willpower like that, and he's only a sector lord..."

...

In the center region of the heavenly bridge, watchman Bevin watched Luo Feng's battle on a screen that floated before him. He had originally wanted to smile and joke about with Luo Feng, as this was something he found interesting. However, his expression changed very quickly.

"Seal, he actually broke through the seal?"

"He forced the guardian to use his kill technique?" Watchman Bevin was stunned, and his mouth opened wide.

All the space guardians, even though they may use different weapons, they all still had three moves, Seal, Kill and Teleport. These were the evolution of the normal moves of the space laws, and they were very powerful. Amongst which, Kill was the one with the highest offensive ability.

And Seal was normally used on weaker opponents. Only when they met opponents that were hard to deal with would they be forced to use Kill! Meeting an opponent of the same level, they would be forced to use all three moves together.

******

Primal chaos city, True Yan's quarters.

True Yan sat silently in his yard, facing Luo Feng who finally opened his eyes.

"Haha, Luo Feng, congratulations on passing the Primal sky mountain and the 20th level of the heavenly bridge." True Yan hugged the bottle of purple flame ape wine. "I still thought you'd stop right after the sky mountain. I didn't expect you to go attempt the heavenly bridge. The 21st guardian is very powerful eh."

"Hm, he is very strong indeed, Seal alone was absurd."

Luo Feng nodded. With just Seal alone, if his willpower was any weaker, or he didn't have the 32 times spirit energy amplification, he wouldn't even have been able to breakthrough. It was obvious that the 21st level was hundreds to thousands of times harder than the 20th level!

"Of course it's strong." True Yan laughed. "Our space law techniques can be split into Teleport, Kill and Bind. These are the three distinctions, and as we have to train them individually, it takes an extremely long time. And the three combined form the complete space laws. Only when they are fully combined will they be complete! The difference in power is huge, a complete space law Seal...that's the true Seal! The knights can easily use it on the normal undyings."

"In all, simply comprehending one side of it compared to the entire complete thing, has a difference of thousands of times."

"Just like the god body!"

"Our human emperors, along with their comprehension of the laws, the amount of stable god energy we can condense is only 100,000 times that of sector lord energy. However, the moment we become a knight, using the complete space laws, the god body condensed from that far exceeds ours. Just that difference, with

the difference in law comprehension, soul amplification, genetic evolution and god body amplification, treasures, techniques...will naturally be much stronger than us emperors, creating a huge difference in levels altogether."

"Of course some special beings like Seven Blade, and me, with true treasures, we can exceed normal knights. With our created techniques and special encounters, only because of these, I have the right to be considered an invincible emperor, who is able to flee from knights. However, that's only for surviving."

Luo Feng nodded.

Comprehension at the 20th level was still fragmented, but the complete space laws were much more powerful.

"Don't worry about these. In just a short 10,000 years, you've already created a name comparable to Seven Blade, and are very close to me. You are impressive enough. If you go out and listen, you will realize that right now everyone in Primal chaos city should all be discussing you." True Yan laughed. "Who cares what goes on outside, your job now is to drink with me and celebrate."

"No one can drag me away, I'll drink with you, give me more." Luo Feng said.

True Yan stared and hugged the wine, "One cup is enough to get drunk, yet you want to drink more. Let's slowly savor it."

"I understand" Luo Feng smiled.

At this time...

Ambition, law comprehension, techniques, and everything else was tossed aside. All he wanted to do was to relax and drink until he was drunk.

Chapter 907: Devil Hand Emperor

Luo Feng lay in his bed and opened his eyes, after which he sat up. Shaking his head, he laughed, "The feeling of getting drunk sure is wonderful, it's a rare thing to enjoy." He pushed open the door and walked out. This was a yard within True Yan's residence, he had drunk with his teacher before and got drunk from just one cup.

His fighting spirit soared!

The winds blew as he looked up at the visible laws that revolved in the skies.

"I feel clarity like never before, and all my troubles gone. Even though frequently getting drunk would make one troubled and eat away at one's willpower, to the strong, occasionally enjoying it once in awhile is a form of release." Luo Feng walked out of the yard and walked about True Yan's residence, meeting the many disciples in name and true disciples, chatting with them for awhile.

He simultaneously sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe to begin his business.

******

Yu Xiang mountain, Luo Feng's villa.

"Before I head to Ice hell star, I better prepare well." Luo Feng sat at his desk and pondered.

There were a total of five books to the Nine volume manual, and he had already acquired two of them. The other three were in three separate secret regions.

According to the guidance he got, at sector lord level, he could go get the first one, and the first one was in a distant secret region, within Ice Hell star. From the information his teacher had given him, he knew just how dangerous this place was.

It was a given, this was a test the Sitting mountain guest gave to his disciples. As he was clear on all his trump cards, the test given would naturally push him to his limits. Without ample preparation, how could he recklessly enter the area?

"The entire outer region wars trip."

"The hunt in star tower had forty six battles! I got a total of 2.86 trillion mixed elements worth of treasures. I also got the Separation tower, Ice net and Ancient clock true treasures." He thought. Among these three treasures, the Separation tower was worth the least. The other two both exceeded at least his 2.86 trillion.

Cash was important to emperors.

However to the knights, they mostly bartered with treasures! There were few treasures that could be purchase with cash that were actually useful to them, they required extremely rare items.

"I cannot sell the three treasures, since it would be hard to buy them back."

"The others are worth 2.86 trillion. Along with the over 300 billion contribution points, and the 100 billion points from the Primal sky mountain."

"How should I use it?"

Luo Feng pondered.

Without a doubt, he had to increase his own strength. Next, he had to leave some trump cards for his family, and lastly, he had to strengthen his little team of warriors. He had a total of thirteen warriors under him now! If they weren't emperor limits, they were emperor pinnacle soul masters, and every one of them needed strengthening.

For example, giving all the pinnacle emperors a plant life form? However, Luo Feng couldn't afford something like this. The number may seem like a lot, but the true treasures were much

more expensive than this.

...

As he pondered, Babata shouted on his shoulder, "Luo Feng, there's a mail. It's from the Primal chaos city leader."

"The city leader?" Luo Feng was shocked, immediately tapping the air, a screen appeared and the mail showed before him. Luo Feng tapped one more time and read the mail.

The details were quite long.

The gist of it was, "You cannot reveal the secret of Blade River emperor. Back then the 108 managers of the Hong Alliance may have formally invited you into the alliance, but none of them had the rights to view your footage. Hence, no one knew...that you are Blade River. Even though you could enter the alliance as Blade River later on, this didn't prove that you were Blade River.

Because the alliance has a practice.

Any emperor can be invited straight into the alliance without the managers having a discussion. Only certain special additions require that.

Even the 108 managers, they probably all thought Blade River was another emperor being invited in.

The member identities of the alliance were all kept secret, as the 108 managers couldn't get detailed information. Especially the strong human warriors, the shrine leaders of the other races will never be able to get the secret information of humanity, only the human shrine leaders can see them.

Hence...

Since you passed the sector lord Primal sky mountain, you can enter the alliance immediately! I will arrange a special location for you within. Everytime you enter the alliance...you can pick whether you will enter as Blade River into your little district or as

Luo Feng in the new place.

As for the Luo Feng identity, you have extremely high status and privileges. As long as you don't make a mistake, the Hong alliance will never reveal your identity.

You have to remember, you cannot reveal your identity as Blade River for now!

...

The details of the mail were pretty long, of which the warning was severe. It was clear that Blade River's accomplishments had indeed shocked the city leader. For a sector lord to do so much, if the other races knew about it, they definitely wouldn't believe that he had no special encounters, even the city leader wouldn't believe him!

He was set to become one of the greatest warriors, the other races would definitely be willing to pay a huge price to kill him!

That would be troublesome.

"I'll have two identities from now on, Blade River and Luo Feng." He laughed at the mail.

"You should be proud, the city leader personally arranged for you to have two identities in the Hong alliance." The fist sized Babata on his shoulder shouted loudly. "Your Blade River identity is afterall shocking, as you true strength far exceeds many emperor limits. It's even close to Seven Blade and Life Fall. Back then when I followed your teacher around the universe, we respected such warriors as you, and we didn't dare offend such warriors."

Luo Feng was stunned.

Hu Yan Bo? He couldn't help recall, Hu Yan Bo was killed back then by an undying that was barely an emperor. He had remembered that he had to help him take revenge, to repay him for the inheritance. Hu Yan Bo had after all given him huge help initially. Without it, he may have still had the chance to become an

absolute warrior, but the path would have been completely different.

"Babata, back then, who killed the master of the Yun Mo planet." Luo Feng asked, "You didn't want to say back then, now I'm sure you can tell me."

"Luo Feng, are you going to take revenge for the master?" Babata was very excited.

"Hm."

Luo Feng nodded, "After I've made preparations with the treasures in Primal chaos city, I will visit my home. Once that's done, I'll head to Ice Hell star. Along the way...I'll go take revenge for the old master."

"Haha, if you go now, it'll be extremely easy." Babata said, "Back then the murderer was a low emperor soul master, he's called Suo Luo Pu, or Devil Hand emperor, as for his strength now, I'm not too sure. Only a few tens of thousands of years have passed, he shouldn't have grown too much."

"Devil hand, Suo Luo Pu?" Luo Feng muttered, he had never heard of this name before.

"One thing at a time."

"I'll first head to Hong alliance city and sell and buy items. After that, I'll research about him." Even though he couldn't care less about a low emperor, he still had to study his enemy well enough, to prevent allowing him to escape later on.

******

Virtual universe, Hong alliance city.

There were many small districts within the city, and every one with at most 10,000 residence. Even though the spaces were separated fairly, as long as one had power, there would never be absolute fairness. Some small districts had True Yan, Heavenly

Feather, Seven Blade, such beings. The price and value of these districts would soar, afterall, to be able to get close to such beings allowed people to become friends with them easier.

"This is my new district?" Luo Feng walked out from the stairs and looked outside.

"Luo Feng."

"How do you do, your majesty Luo Feng." two calls resounded.

Luo Feng turned to look. One human and another race warrior walked side by side. The human had short blue hair, and his eyes were blue too. He was dressed in a simple armor, and his face had unsteady blue engravings, his smile was friendly.

"You are...Dream Fire emperor?" Luo Feng was stunned. He had checked up on some absolute beings of humanity. Even though there was only a small amount of information online, it all came with pictures and footage.

"Your teacher True Yan was in this district back then too, now he's in the inner city." He smiled.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, this is one of the top three districts of the Hong alliance city, the strongest emperors are all here." The other race warrior who was beside him spoke. Dream Fire introduced, "This is Nan Shi emperor of the Tuo Ma race. He's the most exceptional emperor of the younger generation in his race."

Nan Shi emperor said, "That's too much, to compliment me before his majesty, I'm ashamed."

Luo Feng looked carefully at Nan Shi, as he had definitely heard of him before. The two may not be the same race, but they were on good terms and were life or death brothers. They often explored together! Dream Fire was simple and honest and hardly used power to pressure others, and it wasn't easy to enrage him. But Nan Shi was the opposite. He may seem simple too, in truth, he was ferocious, at least hundreds of times stronger than Life Fall or

Black Tomb. His reputation was built from massacre.

"Such a bloodthirsty fellow actually looks that simple." Luo Feng thought. "You really cannot judge a book by its cover, one is so friendly while the other is ferocious, yet they are life or death partners, how interesting."

"This little district...looks like there are truly many powerful warriors." Luo Feng thought.

...

He walked about the district, the number of absolute beings far exceeded that of Blade River's district. It had a total of over 8,000 warriors, with close to 1,000 emperor limits, and there were quite a few other terrifying beings like Dream Fire and Nan Shi and so on.

Luo Feng's name was huge now. Anyone able to pass the Primal sky mountain was set to become a terrifying being.

Even Dream Fire and Nan Shi were that courteous to him, much less the other emperors.

Luo Feng browsed the entire street and got familiar with it. Once others had known that Luo Feng was in this district...he returned to his own villa on Yu Xiang mountain, beginning to plan what to do with the spoils of his battles.

Chapter 908: Back To Earth

After staying in Primal chaos city for over a month, he kept only a few of the treasures from the battles, like some items that were good for recovery of the undying bodies etc. Many of the warriors he killed had such items, he naturally kept them, along with three top class ships.

He sold everything else and begun his huge spending spree, to buy for his team, his family, himself, until there was only about 100 billion left. Only then did he leave Primal chaos city happily.

******

Solar system, a majestic palace was floating in space protecting earth, this palace far exceeded the size of earth.

Within its first level.

There was a fixed pathway that connected the Virtual Universe Company camp along with the Huge Axe camp, The Universe 1st bank, Universe Galaxy bank and the Universe Mercenary Alliance.

Hua...one of the pathways lit up with light.

"Someone's coming."

"Someone from the Virtual Universe Company is coming." The guard team of ten sector lord were all respectful. Anyone able to take this pathway would either have to be extremely strong or had high status. They all looked on curiously at a black armored youth that walked out alone.

"It's his majesty Luo Feng." The sector lords immediately recognized him. Half of the rights of earth belonged to him, how could they not recognize him?

"Your majesty."

They all bowed respectfully.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded and glanced at them. "You've stood guard

over the solar system for 10,000 years, has there been anything special?"

"Nothing, everything is normal." The leading sector lord replied respectfully.

Luo Feng nodded and teleported, vanishing from sight.

"Teleportation!"

"Wa, only sector lord and yet he can teleport, he is truly too impressive."

"Don't you know, he just passed the sector lord Primal sky mountain. I heard that any one who passes that would have 100 billion points in reward."

"100 billion!"

"I haven't even got 100 mixed elements yet." The group was all stunned. Even though these sector lords that were within the five leviathans were much better off than the lone wolves, their wealth was still pitiful. Compared to an absolute warrior like Luo Feng, easily spending over two trillion mixed elements before, normal sector lords were nothing but ants to him, he could easily kill them.

...

In the space above earth.

"Hu!" Luo Feng appeared, turning to look at the majestic palace in the solar system, he sighed.

After which he rushed into the atmosphere.

"This is earth, this is earth, invader, please identify yourself." A little ship suddenly appeared within the atmosphere. He sent out sharp ripples that pierced through his earths, using universe language.

"What's going on?" Luo Feng frowned, after which he used world energy to swiftly check, covering the entire earth. There were

many little such ships hidden throughout the entire earth. Also, above the atlantic ocean, pacific etc many luxurious floating palaces stood there. In them all sorts of races, winged humans, ape man etc all lived.

"It's changed." Luo Feng was stunned.

"When I become a true power, I will definitely take the earth back." Luo Feng thought, "Even if I have to pay a huge price, it'd be worth it."

"Please identify yourself." The little ship continued.

Luo Feng frowned and glanced at it, roaring, "Get lost!" his voice shot out like a shockwave, instantly destroying the ship and leaving it in fragments.

"I know you can see me!" Luo Feng stood there and said coldly, "But remember this, this is earth and we own half of it, I, Luo Feng coming to earth...is not for you to supervise! This will never happen again!"

Sou!

He rushed down.

******

Earth, within a huge floating city, lived hundreds of millions of residents, within a particular skyscraper.

This was the headquarters of the immigrants, within a control room stood two middle aged men and a lady. They all watched the screen, on it displayed Luo Feng speaking in mid air.

"That Luo feng sure is arrogant." The green armored winged man said coldly, "What's his deal, he is only a disciple of the Primal chaos city leader. Doesn't he know that those that have moved here are under the Huge Axe dojo, and Virtual Universe Company's people too? And many have universe masters behind them?"

Earth was a special nurturing basket, each slot to move here was

extremely expensive.

Many universe masters had paid the price to let their elites come here, and the status required to get here was extremely high.

"Control yourself!" Another four armed middle aged man said, "Luo Feng is the disciple of the city leader, he's not someone you can mess with, and he just passed the Primal sky mountain. He may become a knight eventually! Even though those that come here have huge backgrounds, backgrounds are after all just that, it doesn't represent their own strength. When Luo Feng becomes a knight, do you think you can even withstand his blows?"

"I'm afterall still an emperor! At least right now, I can still deal with him." The green armored man said coldly.

"Shut up." The lady ordered, "There are strict orders that forbid challenging Luo Feng."

"Hmph!"

The green armored man looked through the glass at the ocean below, "Such a beautiful planet, yet it's owned by rubbish! Our Huge Axe dojo hasn't been firm enough. We should have assassinated that Luo Feng back then, then the earth would be ours..."

"Shut up." The lady ordered.

"If you wish to die, don't drag me along." The other four armed man turned and left.

******

Asian, Yang Zhou city, Luo Feng's residence.

This residence had a history of over 10,000 years, it was steep in meaning and culture. Ever since it received news of Luo Feng returning, the upper echelon and elites all rushed back, all wanting to see the family leader Luo Feng.

...

"I didn't expect that the house I lived in back then is still doing well. Look, this was the layout back then, even now, it's still the same." Luo Feng walked with his wife and two sons along.

"We kept it this way over the 10,000 years. Of course it's still like that." Xu Xin joked.

Luo Ping laughed along too, only Luo Hai's expression wasn't too happy.

"Luo Hai." Luo Feng looked at his son.

"Dad." He replied.

"What's the matter?" Luo Feng asked.

"No, it's just the return to earth that pissed me off." Luo Hai said unhappily. Beside him Xu Xin frowned at him, silencing him.

"Speak." Luo Feng said directly, he had somewhat guessed.

"It's those immigrants!" He raged, "When I returned, I took my ship directly into earth from space, they actually stopped me. I still went along with them initially, who'd expect them to take me to their floating city and lock me in there for half a day. Only later on did someone come tell me saying it was a mistake, this was obviously all part of their plan.

"That is considered ok." Luo Ping sighed. "Brother, you've been staying here all this while, you know little about the family matters, during the later parts of when dad vanished for over 6,000 years, this wasn't our earth at all. It was purely the territory of the immigrants, they all came over to our land like we were some goods, all acting arrogant, not showing us any respect."

"Which one of us would dare mess with them?"

"No one, we could only swallow our pride!"

"However despite all this, they still haven't dared to chase us away." Luo Ping sighed.

"Chase you all away?" Luo Feng's expression changed. Back then

he had signed a deal with the Virtual Universe Company. It stated clearly that the floating immigrants couldn't disrupt the lives of the humans of earth, now it was extensive bullying.

"Dad, the deal you signed before told us that too." Luo Ping shook his head. "But it's useless. Despite all that, they are still arrogant and brash, bullying us earthlings. But they all say...they are only making friends with us, not disrupting our lives, what can we do? It's hard to clarify such matters."

Luo Feng's expression was ugly.

He was indeed offended when he returned this time. It was obvious that the group of immigrants were incredibly arrogant, to act like that towards him, much less the others.

"Luo Feng." Xu Xin said softly, "These immigrants all have huge backgrounds, they are involved with the super families of the universe. I heard that many are straight from the upper echelon of the Huge Axe dojo and Virtual Universe Company."

"Hmph."

Luo Feng raged. Back then the huge axe founder had found the special qualities of earth, the pinnacle beings and the super families sending their elites was totally understandable. These elites were naturally proud. With such huge backgrounds, they obviously believed, "Would one Luo Feng dare offend so many of us?"

"Luo Feng, calm down." Xu Xin said.

"Relax, I won't go crazy." Many thoughts flashed through his mind.

"Dad, since you passed the Primal sky mountain, they've actually controlled themselves a little, it's not too overboard." Luo Ping said.

"What do you mean not too overboard! They have no right to bully us!" Luo Feng frowned. Even though he was incredibly

enraged within, at this time...he hadn't found the right solution to deal with the problem.

Chapter 909: One Order

"Go back and rest, let me think." Luo Feng said.

Luo Ping and Luo Hai exchanged glances and left, leaving Xu Xin with Luo Feng.

...

As they walked away, Luo Ping couldn't help but say, "Brother, why'd you tell dad about this. He just passed his life or death inheritance and got back safely, yet you spoke of such matters. Wouldn't that completely endanger him? Don't you know how terrifying the backgrounds of these immigrants are?"

"I, I...I just couldn't take it anymore." Luo Hai said weakly.

"Can't take it? How many times have you returned over the years, you've been exploring the universe for so long and you are now a sector lord. With the many treasures and techniques dad prepared for you...you yourself are powerful. Also, for your safety, mum even prepared an undying plant life form for you, not mentioning your strength, with just your statues, which warrior would dare mess with you? You've gotten so used to having it your way, you haven't suffered before!"

"But dad is different from you."

"He is the pillar of our Luo family, he is the pillar of earth! The stronger he grows, the more jealousy will occur. He's been eyed by the many other races of the universe, and all of them want to kill him. His exploring of the universe is constantly met with life or death situations! Can't you let him relax when he returns? It's just some bullying? Those of us here being bullied have just endured it. As long as dad keeps getting stronger, they would naturally lose their guts. When he passed the Primal sky mountain, they've already controlled themselves quite a bit. Just bear with it, until dad becomes an absolute being of the universe...then all these will

vanish." Luo Ping looked at his younger brother. "As his family members, we shouldn't trouble him, dad is tired enough."

"Hm." Luo Hai was regretful, "I, I just couldn't stand it..."

"Who can."

Luo Ping shook his head, "The world runs this way, whoever's fist is bigger is stronger! Those immigrants...many have terrifying backgrounds. I heard that they are linked straight to the upper echelons of the Virtual Universe Company and the Huge Axe dojo! The upper echelon! Which one of those princes would even consider us? They are only wary of dad."

"Hm." Luo Hai nodded.

"Just wait until dad becomes an absolute being, then they will all obediently follow." Luo Ping sighed, he didn't wish for their father to do something now.

The saying went as such, the king of hell was easier to deal with than an imp.

The powerful great beings have lived for eternity, their families stretching over millions of eras. As for their later generations, how many of them have personally seen the founders of their family? The universe masters? Even though they haven't seen them, the pride in their bones was ingrained. Just like how the Luo family had Luo Feng, they all exuded pride and were proud of him.

And the founders of these families were all universe masters, it was easy to imagine their pride.

And on earth, these princes formed a huge group!

******

Pacific ocean, within the huge floating city.

"What's that Luo Feng's deal!" The winged green man sat in his throne, rubbing the seat rest as his eyes gleamed fiercely.

"Master don't be angry." A simple robed lady with purple hair

smiled and walked over. "He is the disciple of the Primal chaos city leader, it's natural that he's proud. However, no matter how proud he is, he cannot do a thing against us. The immigrants of the floating city here come from the five leviathans. With many the disciples of universe masters' families, even though they are but the later generations, they still aren't people Luo Feng can deal with."

"Hm."

Only then did the man reveal a smile. With a wave, the purple haired lady flew over and landed in his lap, they were about to engage in intimacy right there.

Suddenly, a voice resounded, "Jie Li emperor!"

"Hm?" The green armored man frowned and looked outside, hugging the lady. He was dissatisfied, "Feng Chen emperor, what's the matter?"

A four armed man walked into the hall, his voice booming, "Jie Li, no matter what, Luo Feng is still part of our Virtual Universe Company, and he's the disciple of the Primal chaos city leader. Don't go overboard, if things get messy, will you be able to deal with it?"

"I don't believe he dares mess with me!" Jie Li stood up fiercely.

"Hmph."

Feng Chen looked coldly at him, "Jie Li, be clear on this, even though you are the later generation of a universe master, your family has been around for trillions of years. The members have reached countless numbers, even though we are emperors, and we are the elites of the family, however the true elites...wouldn't have been arranged to earth to protect a group of infants."

Jie Li was about to interrupt.

"Let me ask you, have you seen the founder Void gold master before?" Feng Chen asked.

Jie Li's expression was ugly.

"Even I haven't seen him before." Feng Chen sighed. "To the universe masters, the Zi Si family has countless people within, what are we? It's better to stay low profile."

"However, you have to see who's dog you are beating. The immigrants here are all considered elites from the many universe masters, nobody would dare mess with us." Feng Chen said. "But you shouldn't get too arrogant, treating the earth humans one way is ok, but to Luo Feng, you'd still have to show him some respect. That challenge earlier wasn't worth it at all...who doesn't know his appearance? Yet you still purposely made him identify himself, he would easily see through this."

"Enough."

Jie Li's expression was ugly, "It's just one Luo Feng? He's only a sector lord now, I don't believe he'd get much stronger anyway! Do you think becoming strong is that easy? Every step is filled with danger, the better he performs, the more the other races would want to kill him! Not just the dangers...just the law comprehension required to become a knight is incredibly tough! Even the group of disciples under the Primal chaos city leader, even a bunch of them haven't become knights!"

"Don't bug me...it's only because that Luo Feng is part of the Virtual Universe Company just like you, that's why you are helping him by speaking for him."

"Hmph." Feng Chen's expression changed and he left immediately.

Jie Li watched the scene and snorted coldly.

"Proud earthling." Jie Li looked out at the vast space, gazing at the earthlings below. "Even if you have Luo Feng behind you, that cannot change your low bloodline. When he falls, I want to see your look of despair. When that happens...I'll make sure you all

leave earth!"

"Luo Feng?"

"Let's see how long you can stay proud." He was filled with anger within. Since he was not respected within his family, his hatred and dissatisfaction brewed...and Luo Feng was a shining star, compared to him. He naturally couldn't stand it, and he wished to see Luo Feng's look of despair.

******

Virtual universe, Chaos energy engulfed the palace at the peak of thunder island.

Luo Feng entered respectfully.

"Teacher." He bowed respectfully.

"Is something the matter?" The city leader's voice resounded.

"I have a favor to ask of teacher." Luo Feng replied respectfully.

A silhouette walked out from the energies, a gold robed city leader said, "You experienced quite a lot of danger in the outer region wars, yet you've never come to see me. You are naturally not the type to ask for help, speak...what's the matter?" The city leader had indeed favored Luo Feng a lot more now. Ever since he displayed his strength, to so easily kill emperor limits, even matching Black Ti.

It made the city leader realize...

This disciple of his was still hiding other things! Otherwise, no matter how talented a sector lord was, even with the general armor, even with law comprehension reaching the 20th level, he still wouldn't be able to kill an emperor limit so easily! Much less exchange blows with Black Ti. He wasn't bothered about his disciple hiding things from him, as everyone had their own secrets. He understood that there were some things he didn't wish to share.

He also realized that Luo Feng's future achievements would be

shocking, hence he personally cleaned up the mess and gave him another identity of Blade River.

"It's like this, when I returned to earth, there were many things that happened. I realized...that the other immigrants have created trouble for our earth humans." Luo Feng said respectfully. "I had no other way, hence I came to seek your help."

He had come to seek his help.

He said it blatantly, the city leader, with his status, wouldn't get angry about this. If Luo Feng had to beat about the bush, that would in fact irritate him.

"Such a small matter...right, the immigrants come from many powerful families, you better not mess with them. I'll give out an order." The city leader nodded, "I know you value your family and fellow earth humans, I will settle these things for you. Don't bother about such matters...what you need to do is become strong!"

"Yes teacher, I will do my best." Luo Feng was gleeful, as his teacher's response was simple and straight to the point.

"Go on." The city leader nodded.

Luo Feng bowed respectfully and left.

The city leader smiled as he watched his disciple leave. He had never come to ask for help before, and yet now when he did, it was over such a small matter.

"Caring for his fellow humans and family, such character...as long as humanity treats him well, he will naturally fight to the death for us." The city leader nodded. There were several traitorous warriors of humanity. The moment they got strong, they wouldn't even care about their own race's safety.

Just like how Yan Di, the leader of the Yan Shen race was originally from humanity, however he chose to leave humanity with his race and become his own power. This had enraged many

pinnacle beings of humanity, but Yan Di's power was huge, and he had the great being behind him, hence they could only bear with it.

...

Half a day later, an order was passed on to the palace guarding earth, and to the managements within the immigrants and the earth humans.

The order was very simple...

It stated that no immigrant was to set foot or fly over the earth territories, and no earth human was to set foot or fly over the floating cities territories, anyone that went against it...were to be killed!

"What!" The green armored youth who was fooling around with the girl howled when he got the order.

Chapter 910: 1,000 Vine Star Eating Plant

"Who, who gave this order?" Jie Li emperor was angry. "I will definitely report this to the upper echelon of the Huge Axe dojo!"

The order seemed to apply to both sides, however in truth, it was mainly to protect the earth humans more.

As the immigrants all had huge authority and backgrounds, they often headed to the continents to explore, who'd dare resist them if they bullied the humans there? And there were many powerful warriors amongst them, domain lord guards and sector lord guards were common. As for the earth human strength, how weak were they?

In contrast, the earth humans didn't dare step into the sea regions at all, not invading the immigrants' space, or the little ships they controlled would swiftly appear and capture them!

In all, the situation was that despite staying within their territory, the earth humans still had to suffer humiliation from the immigrants.

...

The three emperor managers of the immigrants gathered. Feng Chen from the Virtual Universe Company, Jie Li from the Huge Axe dojo and the lady Huang Shi emperor who represented the 1st bank, Galaxy bank and The Mercenary alliance. In terms of strength, she was the strongest, as she was a emperor pinnacle.

The other two were quite a bit weaker.

"This is too much. How can he do this, who gave this order. Did they discuss with any of my Huge Axe Dojo upper echelon? I will report this, definitely!" Jie Li howled.

"Report, go on, this is from the Primal chaos city leader." Feng Chen said casually.

Jie Li could only stare wide eyed, "Primal, primal..."

Huang Shi was shocked too.

"There's no mistake." Feng chen nodded, "He gave the order personally."

"It must be Luo Feng, that despicable Luo Feng." Jie Li gritted his teeth. He felt even more jealous now. He had reached emperor level and yet he never got the chance to meet his family leader Void Gold master, Luo Feng however was able to easily get the city leader to give such an order, how big was their difference?

"Of course it's Luo Feng, but what can you do?" Feng Chen looked at him.

Jie Li gritted his teeth, he couldn't think of anything.

As Luo Feng had signed an agreement with the Virtual Universe Company back then with the Virtual Universe Company as the main controller, and not the Huge Axe dojo. The Huge Axe dojo had to pay a huge price to be able to send a large amount of young warriors over. In truth, everything was left to the Virtual Universe Company to manage.

The Primal chaos city leader was the number one person in the company! He was the biggest power in the entire company! Who would go against his order?

Jie Li gritted his teeth, "This order...every order will always have a loophole..."

Suddenly...

An incredibly terrifying energy spread throughout earth, engulfing the entire planet. Whether it was Asia or Europe etc, even the Atlantic or pacific floating cities, everyone could feel the terrifying energies.

"Look."

"What's going on?"

"Who is it?" The three emperors flashed to the air above their floating city, gazing about. With their vision, they could easily see thousands of km away.

"That is..."

The three of them were all stunned.

A majestic vine plant had risen from the continent of earth, each continent have many vines. Its height...pierced right through the atmosphere, tens of thousands of km high. The three emperors easily saw hundreds of vines.

"Star eating plant!"

"Undying star eating plant!" Huang Shi was shocked, "Every vine has the same energy, they are from the same undying plant."

"Check how many vines it has!" Feng Chen said.

"1,000!" Jie Li's voice was tiny.

"A 1,000 vine star eating plant, just who is that wealthy? Nurturing such a plant would require hundreds of billions of mixed elements!" Huang Shi's eyes were filled with disbelief. "Is it Luo Feng? Is he that rich? Even passing the Primal sky mountain would only give him 100 billion points, it's not enough for this at all."

"Of course the Primal chaos city leader gave him this, do you think his pitiful wealth would be enough?" Jie Li said coldly.

Even though the 1,000 vine star eating plant was emperor pinnacle, plant life forms were special. Its sturdiness could compare to a human emperor limit warrior!

And its huge form...even against a human emperor limit warrior, it would still have the advantage. Its life energy was much stronger too, even a strongest flame god crystal wouldn't destroy it. 1,000 vines could easily spread over 1 million km, the flame crystal would only have a small area of destruction.

"The Virtual Universe Company has ordered!"

A cold voice resounded throughout the entire earth, within every earth human and immigrants' ears, "From now on, no immigrant is allowed to enter the land regions, and no earth human is allowed to enter the ocean or floating city regions. Anyone who goes against this...will die! This is an undying 1,000 vine star eating plant, and it will guard the borders of the continents. It's main job is to guard, whether it's earth humans or immigrants, anyone who goes against the rule will be killed!"

His voice lingered for a long time.

All the humans of earth, whether it was the earth humans or the immigrants, everyone was in uproar.

The earth humans couldn't stop cheering.

"Haha, those despicable immigrants won't come here again."

"This is great."

"Who's voice was that? To actually arrange an undying to guard us?"

"Stupid, who else can help us, it must be Luo Feng."

...

As they cheered, the immigrants were all raging.

"Who gave this order, forbidding us from entering the continents? We've never heard of such a rule before."

"Who gave the order."

"What guts, even if the upper echelon gave the order, to actually use a 1,000 vine star eating plant to threaten us, he must be too arrogant. This is a threat to our lives!"

****

As both sides were in uproar, Jie Li, Feng Chen and Huang Shi all flew to the edge of the Asian continent, Luo Feng flew there too

and they exchanged glances.

"Your majesty Luo Feng." Feng Chen said courteously.

"Feng Chen." Luo Feng smiled and nodded, he recognized him.

"Luo Feng, even if the city leader gave the order, you cannot place a 1,000 vine star eating plant there." Jie Li howled. "This is a threat to all immigrants, we will follow the order of the city leader, but you have to take the plant away."

Luo Feng looked at him coldly and smiled at Feng chen and Huang Shi, "You two, we will chat in the Hong alliance soon, I'll be taking my leave."

Feng Chen and Huang Shi nodded.

"Stay there." Jie Li shouted.

Luo Feng turned and vanished, leaving a cold voice, "Idiot!"

Jie Li's face was flushed red. Beside him the other two looked at his stupid expression. In their eyes, Jie Li was an idiot, just who was Luo Feng? This was the disciple of the city leader, Jie Li was but a later generation disciple of a family, he hadn't even met Void gold master before.

The two of them had completely different levels of authority.

And he still yelled out?

Luo Feng couldn't even be bothered!

"Jie Li, you better be careful, don't let your anger take control. You'll be killed by that 1,000 vine star eating plant." Feng Chen said casually, after which he became a beam of light and left. Among the three of them, the two often didn't see eye to eye, Huang Shi usually settled such matters.

"Calm down Jie Li." She said, "He didn't dare mess around with your challenge before mainly because of many immigrants behind you The over 10 billion immigrants all represent powerful families and they have universe masters behind them. As for you...with

Luo Feng's status, he can't even be bothered with you. Look, your only saving grace is your personal strength. Since he easily took out a 1,000 vine star eating plant, he can kill you easily. We are in the same line, let me give you some advice, don't lose your life over this."

Sou! She too flew away.

Jie Li stood in mid air and gazed at the borders of the asian continent, his expression struggling, he could only turn and leave.

...

Later on, there were even two arrogant immigrants that were killed by the 1,000 vine star eating plant, the rest quickly got the news and knew that the order was real. They all got a stern warning from the upper echelons too! They all immediately fell in line, the city leader was afterall the number one person in the Virtual Universe Company, who'd go against his order?

The earth humans cheered, they no longer had to suffer in silence, they could lead their lives freely.

...

One month later.

Luo Feng was finally about to leave earth.

"There's the 1,000 vine star eating plant, secretly, there's also the emperor limit Metal Flag emperor." Luo Feng spoke to his wife. "And the many trump cards I left you, you can nurture an undying plant too. All in all, you can make the arrangements, I leave the family to you."

"Hm." Xu Xin nodded. Within she felt warmth...the husband explored the universe while she watched the house.

"You better be careful this time." Xu Xin said.

Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

"Dad, mum." Luo Feng said goodbye to all his parents, brother

and sons before leaving, teleporting and vanishing from sight.

...

Within the dark universe.

A malevolent armored bug ship was flying swiftly. This was one of the top three ships Luo Feng had acquired when he hunted the emperors. This living ship, under normal circumstances, only an other race emperor limit could use it.

Within the control room.

"We'll first go and deal with Devil Hand emperor, then we'll head to the distant secret region Ice hell star!" Luo Feng ordered.

"Yes master." The ship's voice replied.

Chapter 911: Heavily Injured Devil Hand Emperor

Through god country teleportation and the living ship travelling through the dark universe, it took about half a month for Luo Feng to reach where Devil Hand emperor was.

"Luckily I had Tian Chen." Luo Feng was surprised. "My other eleven slaves are all other race warriors! Only Tian Chen is human, and other than the three soul slaves he has, he has other weaker undyings, where many of them were humans too."

"Human undyings have many markers around humanity's territory. Hence, it's easy to teleport via their god country."

"At least I can reach any universe country easily within Humanity's territory."

"And with my other race slaves, I can easily rely on them to reach the distant regions of the universe too, it would save a lot of flying time." Luo Feng was happy, discovering the advantages of having more slaves.

The longer one lived, the more one has explored, the more the markers were left around.

Tian Chen and the others had painstakingly left many markers all around, and now they were all for Luo Feng to use.

"Master, we are about to engage in universe travel."

Weng!

The living ship slowed down to a stop, flying out of the dark universe and back to the actual universe.

"Devil Hand Star." Luo Feng stood in the living ship's control room and gazed at the vast space. Under the glare of a huge star, a green life planet was giving off powerful life energy ripples.

"According to the information from the Virtual Universe Company, his nest is here. And half a year ago, he had connected to the virtual universe, while his marker was right here." Luo Feng frowned at the green planet. The virtual universe wasn't all knowing, they could at most give as much information as they could get.

"Luo Feng, let me out." Babata's voice resounded within his mind.

"Come out."

Luo Feng let Babata out of his world ring, he was draped in black armor, and his face was masked, revealing red blood crystal like eyes. He was about 1.45m, like a child with two gold horns on his forehead.

This was Babata with the Heart of evolution!

Luo Feng's earnings in the outer region wars were huge. Hence, he bought one for Babata, allowing him to finally have the chance to train and evolve! As for his arm computer, that was the Subsidiary AI Babata made.

...

"I want to see that Suo Luo Pu die!" Babata gritted his teeth.

"Ok, but you have to stay by my side." Luo Feng said.

"Hm." Babata nodded, as his eyes were filled with hatred. Even though he had recognized Luo Feng as his master at domain lord level, he was a living AI with emotions. His old master had brought him around for long periods of time, allowing him to evolve from a normal AI to a living AI, Hu Yan Bo was like a father to him.

"Let's go." The cloud contact armor swiftly wrapped around Luo Feng.

Hua!

A glaring gold armor, that covered even his face appeared, Luo Feng was like a gold armored man. The Sha Wu wings were kept

within his body...from the appearance alone, no one was able to identify who he was.

****

He kept the ship.

The black armored man and the gold armored man teleported straight to the atmosphere of the green planet.

"Why aren't you entering?" Babata asked anxiously.

"Let me check on the accurate location before making my move." Luo Feng used his large scanner to sweep the entire planet. Babata was stunned, "Luo Feng, I've lost control."

"Haha, it's extremely rare for a living AI to lose control, this means that emotions have affected your judgment." Luo Feng laughed, "It's a good thing."

Babata was filled with hatred.

Luo Feng didn't really feel it, as he had never interacted with Hu Yan Bo before. With no connection, all he had was respect for his elder.

"He must, must, must be on this planet." Babata muttered within over and over anxiously.

"Found him." Luo Feng suddenly said.

"On this planet?" Babata was happily surprised.

"Right, on this planet, and from my scan, he should be heavily injured." Luo Feng said. His large scanner was advanced enough to avoid detection by Devil Hand emperor.

"Heavily injured? Who cares, we must kill him." Babata pushed, "Let's go."

"Let's go see him."

Babata brought Babata and teleported...entering the core of the planet.

...

The star field around this planet was a forbidden place within the Gu Lun universe country. Several super families within the universe country knew, that this space was taken by a powerful undying! And since this undying didn't have too much ambition, only taking up nine galaxies within the starfield, no one dared to mess with him.

The core of this starfield was Devil hand star!

"The demon emperor has been in a bad mood recently, be careful not to make him angry or you'll lose your lives." An undying said to a group of lady staff.

"Yes."

The most intelligent and beautiful women chosen from the nine galaxies around were all trembling within. For the past thousand years, the demon emperor had been in a bad mood, any little bit of aggravation would result in tragedy.

"Go on in." The undying ordered.

Over 800 ladies all lifted their dishes and went into the palace. The deeper they went, the more they trembled...finally they reached within the hall.

When only half of the group entered, they heard a cold voice.

"Devil Hand emperor!"

The voice was ice cold! A formless pressure spread throughout!

Over 800 ladies couldn't help but kneel down, the terrifying pressure caused main managing undying to actually kneel too, "My god, what terrifying pressure. This is over a hundred times stronger than when the master was at his peak! Just who is this, where did such a warrior come from in the Gu Lun universe country?"

"Rumble!" The roof of the palace was torn right off, as a grey

silhouette rushed into the sky.

Shua!

A gold silhouette floated there, kicking the grey silhouette. The law infused kick...made the grey silhouette instantly spit out gold blood, flying backwards until he landed on the broken palace. This evil looking man had a head of an eagle, he was dressed in grey armor.

The undying kneeling within the palace was shocked at the scene, thinking, "Teleportation? That gold armored man can teleport? It's over for the master!"

Countless staff within the palace knelt, some looking up secretly at the scene of the invincible devil emperor being defeated so easily. That gold silhouette was shining bright above.

...

"Teleport?" Devil Hand floated in mid air, looking up at the gold armored man and bowing respectfully, "Greetings lord, if you can teleport, you should be an emperor pinnacle. How have I offended you, please tell me...I will do my best to repay you. If that's still insufficient, then you can take my life."

Luo Feng gazed down at him, his voice booming, "You sure understand formalities."

"Since you can teleport, it means I cannot escape at all. Even if I'm at my peak, it would still be far from your strength. What's more I'm heavily injured now, with my strength lost...you can easily kill me, what should I do? I can only do my best to survive, if I can't...then I can only submit." He was incredibly respectful.

Luo Feng's voice boomed, all the staff below could hear him.

Devil Hand wasn't afraid of humiliation. He spoke directly, and his voice spread around. Obviously he wanted to display sincerity, as for the staff below?

"Hmph, those staff that have seen me like that, as long as I can survive...I'll kill all of them!" Devil Hand thought within.

...

"How come the demon emperor is like his servant?"

"Just who is this gold armored man, he's much stronger than the demon emperor." Countless staff didn't know the danger they were in.

...

"Kill, Luo Feng, kill him." Babata communicated to Luo Feng.

"Please state how I offended you, I'm clueless as to how it happened." Devil hand said respectfully.

Luo Feng gazed at him, "It's useless to struggle, I'll tell you...you will definitely die."

"I..." Devil hand's eyes had a look of fear. Just as he was about to speak, Luo Feng had already appeared before him, wielding a thorn, this was a Fei Mo poison coated cloud contact vine thorn. Luo Feng used it to stab forward!

Chi!

It pierced through the armor straight into Devil Hand's body, after which, gold blood was spilt as it dripped down.

Devin Hand's body was corroded by the poison, his eyes filled with fear. After which, he crumbled along with the gold blood, leaving only the armor and world ring that fell before it was swiped away by a black silhouette.

The black silhouette stopped beside Luo Feng, it was Babata.

"It's over." He wielded the armor, his blood crystal like eyes with a complex gaze, "Over 60,000 years..."

Luo Feng looked at him, not interrupting.

"Boss, do you see this? Devil Hand is dead."

"He's dead."

"Back then you entrusted the inheritance to me, I didn't dare tell him who the enemy was, I'd never expect...to be able to take revenge!"

"You've been avenged."

"He had no resistance at all, back then he had chased us for so long. But against Luo Feng, he was so weak..." Babata muttered. Luo Feng had completely shut off all sound around them with his spirit energy, his mini scanner jammed any signals too. Luo Feng did all this while patiently waiting for Babata to recover.

Chapter 912: God Body Separation

Babata muttered and released his emotions which were suppressed for tens of thousands of years. The pain from his master's death, the thrill from avenging him, and the memories from countless ages ago...

"Luo Feng, I'm ok now." Babata looked at him, "Thank you."

"I owe Hu Yan Bo a debt of gratitude, and I even paid my respects to him as my teacher before, this is what I should do. Babata, now can I keep you back into the world ring?" Luo Feng asked.

"In the ring, I can get guidance from the other emperors. I'll do my best to become undying as soon as possible." Babata nodded. "My current strength will only affect you, however I can contact you via my subsidiary AI."

With a thought, Luo Feng placed Babata back into his world ring.

With the heart of evolution, Babata was now similar to the automaton race. It was easy for them to reach sector lord, however...reaching undying was extremely hard.

Luo Feng gazed at the shivering countless people below kneeling before him, he teleported and left Devil Hand star.

"He's gone."

"The gold armored god is gone."

"Too terrifying, the demon emperor had no resistance against him whatsoever. I heard that undyings have undying bodies, but he was still killed so easily."

"With the demon emperor dead, we have no need to fear anymore. This starfield is now ours haha."

The power of Devil Hand star started to shift immediately.

...

In a distant starfield away, countless light years away from humanity's territory, within a normal star. The stars were the most commonly seen heavenly bodies in space, this star however was somewhat special...because within, amidst the endless flames, there was a silhouette.

This silhouette sat cross legged within.

"There really was a warrior that killed me." A hate filled voice resounded. This silhouette was Devil hand emperor Suo Luo Pu.

He sat crossed legged, the star's heat not affecting him at all.

"And he was that strong, yet he still hid his identity. He may very well been sent by that Luo Feng. I had guessed long ago...that this day might come!" He muttered softly. Back then Luo Feng was extremely exceptional during the genius battles, being absorbed into the Virtual Universe Company. Even from back then, Devil Hand had been observing him.

He suspected that Luo Feng had gotten Hu Yan Bo's inheritance.

"When I killed Hu Yan Bo back then, I used a soul technique to make sure he would die. Plus he fled too quickly into the dark universe, it was hard to chase him, and because of the treasure, I didn't continue."

"He had many hiding spots, who knows where he fled to."

"50,000 years later, Luo Feng suddenly rose to power. A spirit reader just like him, and he could buy earth, an aboriginal punk... without any special encounters, how could he afford a planet? And his performance was heavenly during the genius battles? I suspected back then he was linked to Hu Yan Bo! However he had been in the Primal chaos city for such a long time, I couldn't do anything against him."

"Finally..."

"He became a domain lord and returned to the Ganwu universe country, and the ship he used was actually the Yun Mo planet ship!

Hehe, this ship...confirmed my doubts that he was the disciple of Hu Yan Bo!"

"But he was the investigator this time and resided in the Primal region of the Virtual Universe Company. If I made a move and was discovered...I would be dead."

"I could only gamble that Hu Yan Bo left no information on who killed him, if he knew what was good for them, he would let them go against an emperor. Afterall when he was alive, his disciples were only that weak, how strong could his later disciples be? And he could never predict the future!"

"Looks like my guess was wrong!"

"He left something that told Luo Feng."

"Luo Feng's status is extremely high, it's very easy for him to engage a super warrior's help, for them to hide their identity and come kill me." He sat crossed legged within the burning star, and his eyes gleamed with ferocity. "Luckily, even though I gambled, I didn't place all my bets on one table. I cut part of my god body, of which one part had 40% and another had 60%."

"God Body separation."

"I left the weaker body to pretend to be seriously injured on Devil Hand star, awaiting the day. The other, I hid in a distant region, patiently waiting. My plan was to wait one million years. If there was no danger after one million years, I would show myself again. Haha...luckily I left a way out for myself!"

"I'm not eligible to be revived, but I left a way out! Gold armored warrior...even though I don't know who you are, I can guarantee that you were sent by Luo Feng. Other than him, there's no one else able to engage such a powerful being."

"Luo Feng!"

"I may not win against you now, however...I will return. I will definitely return to humanity's territory!!!" Devil hand howled, his

voice rippling throughout the star.

...

God body separation wasn't something normal warriors had the guts to do.

Devil Hand separated his body into 60% and 40%, of which the 60% body had 10% of his perfect condition strength. As for the 40% body...it was even weaker. Under such circumstances, the strength drop was simply too much.

Another risk was that if one side was soul controlled, then all of Devil Hand will be controlled.

The weaker one was!

The easier it was to get controlled!

There were two big risks, it wasn't something just anyone could risk! Of course the only benefit of this was that he would have a chance to survive!

The two separated bodies resonated off each other, hence both bodies would never regenerate. Only when one side had fallen would the other gradually recover over long periods of time to its perfect form.

******

Time passed.

The malevolent bug ship flew within the dark universe, maintaining 80 times light speed.

Within the control room, a crystal made dining table had a total of twelve super warriors sitting around it, and Luo Feng was in the main throne.

"Tomorrow we'll arrive at the secret region. It's been over two years, but we've finally arrived. To reaching the destination! Cheers." Luo Feng raised his glass.

"Congratulations master." The twelve warriors all shrank their bodies to human size, raising their glasses.

They toasted and celebrated.

At this time, Luo Feng still didn't know that he had only killed a portion of Devil Hand over two years ago, afterall the chances of that happening was very small. Actually even if he did know, he had no way to do anything about it. The other portion of Devil hand was hidden well within a distant region afterall.

Even so, Luo Feng wasn't afraid.

It took trillions of years for him to become a low emperor. With Luo Feng's twelve slaves, they were all either emperor limits or pinnacle soul masters! A normal emperor didn't even have the right to become his slave. As for Tian Chen, Chi Mang, Honed heart etc these were all soul masters, and they all had a group of soul slaves under them. Only thing was, they had many normal undyings and officials, and occasionally a normal emperor, they weren't even worthy to show.

"Universe..." Luo Feng lifted his glass, "Is too huge. By relying on god country teleportation, I reached close to the secret region, yet it's still close to two billion light years away. Even at 80 times light speed, it still took over two years."

"Master, the Black flower region is simply too desolate, none of us have been there." Heavy Arrow smiled.

"The universe is vast and endless, with countless universe secret regions separated throughout. For those of us that have taken part in the outer region wars, we aren't even considered far from humanity itself. And there are several slaves under you that come from much further. However there wasn't even one that has been to the Black flower region. Hence, we have to fly for so long." Fu Shui added.

Luo Feng nodded.

The great being had placed the third black metal board within Ice Hell star. It was desolate and dangerous, far from humanity. If he relied only on flying, at 80 times light speed, it would take over a hundred years. One could only imagine the distance. Luckily he had a slave that could teleport close, saving most of the travel.

"And lucky this ship is that fast, faster than even the Yun Mo planet ship." Luo Feng thought.

Rumble!

A powerful energy ripple shockwaved from outside.

"It's a robbery."

"Another one."

Heavy Arrow, Fu Shui, Ji Hong and Tian Chen all laughed, Luo Feng laughed too.

The dark universe within humanity's territories was considered relatively safe, only very few would try and rob others within. It was mainly because humanity's control was very strong. However outside of that, in the dark universe, in these desolate areas...it was common to have such incidents within the dark universe.

"It's some officials and normal undyings." Ji Hong extended his god energy over and swept the enemies, laughing.

"We are so lonely" Tian Chen said, "After flying for over two years, even though we encountered a few attempts, no one actually dared to make a move."

"They are not stupid either. Even though the living ship's level cannot be discerned from the outside, we've maintained a speed of 80 times light speed. Anyone that is able to do that...even most emperors don't have a ship like that. Would they dare?" Ji Hong's voice was ear piercing. He laughed, "If you want to be attacked, it's simple, we just have to slow down to 10 times light speed, I guarantee...every day we'll be attacked at least once."

"Haha..."

"Interesting."

"This has to be approved by the master." The warriors all laughed.

Luo Feng laughed too. It took killing many warriors and enslaving many for him to get this ship, it was the fastest of all his ships! The Yun Mo planet ship's max speed was 50 times light speed, and this was after modification from the Virtual Universe Company, and it was much harder to upgrade from there onwards. 80 times light speed however, was unbelievable.

"No rush, when we get to the secret region, you will get to fight." Luo Feng smiled.

Chapter 913: Black Flower Secret Region

The Black flower secret region's largest diameter was 160,000 light years, and it was considered small amongst the secret regions. The entire level of danger was considered normal as well, as even normal undyings could enter. Other than six extremely dangerous areas, it was much less dangerous than many others, only threatening to normal undyings.

And these six dangerous areas were spots that even knights could fall!

Ice Hell star was one of the six spots!

...

Within the secret region, Ice Hell star was the outermost region, a malevolent armored bug ship appeared within the space.

"Ice Hell star, I've arrived." Luo Feng stood in the control room gazing out. He had gone through universe travel straight to the outer regions of Ice Hell star, even though the great being had given him the exact coordinates. However, since it was a huge area, even knights wouldn't be so daring as to rush straight into the core region. Naturally, Luo Feng didn't dare do so either.

"According to the data, the Black flower region's danger level is relatively low. However, this Ice Hell star area is very dangerous. This test from the great being, truly doesn't care about my survival." Luo Feng thought. As one of the greatest beings of the universe, it wasn't strange that he trained his disciples that way.

"Six dangerous regions, these were all stated before. And the secret region is simply too huge, there are still many that haven't been explored. There might even be a seventh."

A small secret region could have a diameter of tens of thousands of light years, and a large one could go from millions, up to hundreds of millions light years.

Not mentioning the super huge ones, just the million light year diameter ones, flying at lightspeed straight through it alone would take a million years! To completely explore the area, would require one passing through different areas trillions of times...and such scanning may not even detect its true dangers. How could one detect the dangers flying at lightspeed?

Hence every secret region, warriors hardly went to the unexplored regions, unless they were completely confident.

"Depart!"

Luo Feng took the living ships and activated his large and mini scanners, allowing the living ship to head towards Ice Hell star. He didn't dare teleport, as the entire region had a diameter of only 2.1 light years. Just one teleport could lead him straight into danger.

*****

The living ship flew at sub light speed for over three months.

Luo Feng closed his eyes and sat crossed legged within the control room.

"Warning, warning, attack imminent, attack imminent." The AI reported, "Power level high official, unable to damage the ship."

"Hm?" Luo Feng opened his eyes, his expression changed, "Not good!"

Rumble!

Rumble!

Two powerful attacks swept past the ship, it only slightly shook, easily withstanding the attacks. It's defense was over a hundred times stronger than the Yun Mo planet ship, and the entire ship was infused with the special life form Nuo Wei Ka tree. It was a type of plant life form, with low offensive abilities and intellect, simple but with powerful survival abilities.

Just like metal ships fusing with metal life forms, a living ship

could fuse with special life forms too, allowing it to evolve.

This ship had incredibly strong defense and was extremely fast, and it had the ability...of regeneration. The only thing was that its offense was weak.

"Bastard!" Luo Feng gritted his teeth after being attacked.

"Those bunch of bastards."

He immediately teleported and flew out of the ship.

Silver armored and winged Luo Feng stood beside the ship and gazed far away. There in the distance he could see a vast green and purple milky way stretching through the space. This milky way was over three hundred million km thick, and over one hundred million km deep. Its length stretched on forever...this was the renowned star river of Ice Hell star.

"Two bastards." Luo Feng looked about cautiously, after which he looked angrily at the two silhouettes that appeared from the star river.

The ship could easily withstand the attacks, however Luo Feng was afraid of the energy ripples...spreading and drawing out the terrifying enemies within Ice Hell star, the master of the area.

"Luckily we are still far from Ice Hell star." He relaxed.

"Haha, human, do you think that we cannot detect you with your scanner jamming the signals? The ripples from flying at sub light speed are easy for us to detect. However, your ship is not bad, it was able to withstand our attack."

"Human, why stand there, why don't you come here? Don't you want to make a move?"

These two warriors had fish tails and were covered in black scales with a layer of green light surrounding them. As they shouted out, Luo Feng easily recognized them as the E Tuo race, they were adept in water and this star river was filled with extremely cold droplets

of water.

This star river's water was known for its coldness and density. Even if an emperor entered it, he would feel extreme cold, reducing his speed to 1%.

As long as one used the star river water to make an metal armor.

Wearing it would allow one to withstand the cold, and one would be completely at home within the star river, with no resistance. It was obvious that the two warriors which were glowing with a layer of green light had worn the special armors.

"Haha, are you afraid?"

The two warriors mocked, wanting to lure Luo Feng in. They had both stayed in the star river for tens of thousands of years, and they were clear on the many dangerous areas. As long as Luo Feng rushed in...with their natural proficiency and the armor, plus their knowledge of the area about, they believed they could kill this human.

"Two scum!" Luo Feng's expression grew serious.

Two black balls appeared in his left palm.

"Go!"

Xiu! Xiu!

They swiftly formed two beams of light, rushing towards the star river. These balls were sealed stars, and every one of them was incredibly heavy, much heavier than stars. No matter how high the density of the star river water, how could it compare to the sealed stars? The force had little effect on the balls, as for the cold, it was completely useless.

"Flee."

The two E Tuo warriors quickly rushed into the star river, however the two black balls were incredibly fast.

"His undying energy isn't weakened by the star river at all?" They

couldn't believe as they fled, fighting hard to defend against the balls.

"Spirit energy piercing into the star river would be weakened by 1,000 times. Luckily I have the general soul, otherwise just relying on sector lord world energy...it would probably be destroyed by the star river." Luo Feng's spirit energy was decreased by 1,000 times. Even so, with the ability to suppress emperor limits, dealing with these two officials was easy enough.

"So heavy."

The two E Tuo warriors could only feel the unbelievable force from the two black balls, knocking away their weapons and piercing their bodies.

Chi! Chi!

The balls pierced right through their chests, the Fei Mo poison on the balls instantly began to madly corrode their bodies, their eyes revealed shock and fear as they crumbled completely. They had spent too much time in the star river, they didn't even fear emperors. However they didn't expect to fall today.

Luo Feng used his spirit energy to guide the black balls and treasures from the two officials back to him.

"Two arrogant punks." Luo Feng shook his head.

He had ample preparation before coming, and he understood every bit of the special areas of Ice Hell star. The star river was vast and within its depths there were some dangerous areas. The terrifying beings of Ice Hell star were even more adept at the cold and the water, Luo Feng had never once thought of entering.

"The two of them were right in hiding in the water. Using their understanding of it and its specialties, plus their speed, even emperors couldn't deal with them." Luo Feng shook his head. If they knew of Blade River emperor's name, it would have been another story.

It was a pity the news had spread rampantly throughout the virtual universe network. Other than that, only the automaton race managed to get little information on him, much less the other pinnacle races.

Even the demon race and bug race couldn't even complete their long distance transmissions. As for these little races like the E Tuo, who lived far from everyone else, how could they know what happened in the outer region wars.

...

"Flying too fast in the universe ship creates space ripples."

"Teleporting will create special space ripples, allowing those proficient in it to detect." Luo Feng frowned in space. "I'll just fly myself, the larger the frame, the more commotion there'll be. My body will definitely have less commotion than a living ship. Using the Sha Wu wings to control space, I'll be extremely fast, and the effect on the space would be minimized. And I can fly slower."

He kept the living ship and began to fly, accelerating gradually to 100,000 km per second. With the sha wu wings, the energy flow was much smoother.

Xiu!

The mini scanner completely covered him.

******

He carefully proceeded. Whether it was because of the great being or the information he had found on the place before, he didn't dare get careless. As he got deeper, he discovered the many special things about the region.

The outer most star river...

Along the way, there were frozen corpses floating casually around the 10,000 mausoleum...

As one went even deeper inside they could locate the dangerous

star belt.

"Star belt." He stood in space, beside him ice mountains floated. Ahead was a colorful water flow, almost like a belt that revolved about the core area of Ice Hell star. The water gave off terrifying cold energies, Luo Feng was that far away and yet he could still feel it.

He knew that that wasn't water, but peculiar frozen little crystals, forming a landslide like river flow. It was the second dangerous region of ice hell star.

As for the most dangerous...

It was the core area's vast region, with the many frozen planets! With a glance, Luo Feng could easily see a hundred of them.

"Ice Hell stars." Luo Feng thought.

Chapter 914: Name Doku

Luo Feng stood beside the vast galaxy, gazing at the Ice Hell star. Even though it was very far away...it was similar to how earth humans could easily see the sun. Luo Feng's vision was at a level where he could see one's facial hairs up to 10,000 km away, naturally he could see the distant Ice Hell star easily.

"Black metal board." Luo Feng felt the strong calling from there.

"Yes."

"That one!"

He fixed his gaze on one particular star, "It's coming from there! The coordinates the great being gave was right. The black metal board is there on that star."

"The mission he gave me was very simple. It was to enter the Ice Hell star, take the metal board and leave."

"However, the stars are nests for special life forms, and every star represents a type of special life form." Luo Feng thought. The special life forms that lived within each Ice Hell star was named Doku by the other races of the universe.

Doku were life forms formed from extreme cold. They were demon like in appearance and incredibly pure. Though pure, they were purely bloodthirsty, as killing was a game to them, and they felt no sense of evil.

Even though they had no way to reproduce, they were all naturally talented. It was said that there were a thousand Dokus within the area, and this was their nest! According to the information from the Virtual Universe Company, among these thousand Doku, there were a hundred that became undyings and two that even became knights!

Among which the hundred undyings built their own Ice Hell stars.

"Dokus are special life forms, and even at the same level, they are stronger than humans by hundred times." Luo Feng thought. A human emperor's body limit was 100,000 times that of sector lord strength, unless there was some genetic evolution. For the Dokus however...an emperor could reach 10 million sector lord strength. This was their pure god body, and not accounting amplification techniques.

Just like how the golden horned beast was 10 times stronger than humans.

The special life forms of the universe, the weakest of the lot were comparable to the beast.

...

"Every Ice Hell star is very dangerous. I may be able to fight a doku undying, but the moment there's a commotion, I'll be exposed." He thought. There hasn't been anyone that had survived after being exposed within Ice Hell star, because there were two knights there!

They were special life forms, hence they were much more powerful than many human knights.

******

Just as Luo Feng had finished observing the situation and pondering. Suddenly, a blurry silhouette rushed out from the vast space ahead.

"Ha...haha..."

"Ha..."

A crisp voice filled with cold energies pierced through the space and spread throughout, the laughter was filled with joy.

"Hm?" Luo Feng gazed. In the distance three silhouettes rushed out, one purple in color, and two green colored. The purple one was about 3.2m tall, tall and graceful, and was completely purple.

He had a hundred purple braids from his head, the crystal like armor on his body was translucent. From it, one could see its body,and it took on the form of a human lady. The other two green ones were 3.6m tall, extremely handsome, with a hundred green braids each. They donned a green armor, and were similar to human males in looks.

As special life forms, they had no sex distinction, this outer appearance purple represented the difference in their talent level

The purple were rarer, the green were more populated.

The cold air around the purple Doku could easily freeze souls, and the green ones could freeze the bodies.

Together.

The three of them laughed and cheered about. Their speeds were incredible, easily reaching light speed and going through universe travel, disappearing from Luo Feng's sight.

"Universe travel?" Luo Feng looked on carefully. "The rubbish about the space about have been cleared, it's easy to reach light speed. Hm, the three dokus earlier...they are weaker, they should be sector lord level! But their strength is similar to a normal undying, and they can easily go through universe travel to return to their nest."

"Looks like I have to do it this way." Luo Feng nodded.

...

Within his world ring.

Black clothed Luo Feng stood there, the twelve warriors bowed respectfully, "Master."

"Tian Chen." Luo Feng looked over.

"Master." Tian Chen replied.

"You have a few officials under you right, call them out. The more nimble the better, the smarter ones." Luo Feng said. Tian

Chen and Chi Mang were both soul masters, both with a group of slaves under them. They may have few emperor slaves, but there were many officials.

"Yes." Tian Chen waved his hand, and beside him a 1.1m tall little crooked being appeared. It was filled with black scales, and its eyes were jade green. This was the demon race's Devil Shell monkey.

"Master." It smiled evilly.

"From now on, you will listen to my master's orders." Tian Chen pointed at Luo Feng. "Fully submit to him, his orders to you...is akin to my orders."

"Yes yes yes." The monkey replied.

Black clothed Luo Feng looked at this official level undying, "You have a small and large scanner?"

"No." It replied.

"Mas..." Tian Chen was about to speak when he was shushed. Luo Feng flipped his hand and tossed out a scanner, "This one has both the functions of a large and small scanner."

"This is a virtual universe connection device, anonymous device." Luo Feng tossed out an arm band. "Make them both recognize you."

"Yes yes yes." The monkey was very excited, "Virtual universe..."

The helmet devices kept its users anonymous, much less with Luo Feng's high status, it was easy to get one that could last forever. The only thing was these devices...were controlled strictly by the virtual universe.

"Listen well." Luo Feng ordered.

The monkey listened.

"When you leave in awhile, you will accelerate to light speed and universe travel. In the dark universe, you will reach these coordinates and come back to the actual universe." Luo Feng's

armband projected the star map. It was within the Ice Hell stars, of which he gave exact coordinates.

"When you appear, you should be sixteen million km away from this Ice Hell star."

"Remember, you need to activate the mini scanner and hide your tracks to not be detected."

"Then you will sneak into this star that you are closest to and search for a black metal board, this is what it looks like." Luo Feng explained the metal board to him. He also explained what to do after discovering it, in case the monkey screwed up. It was better to personally tell him what to do.

"Very good." Luo Feng nodded. "Get ready to leave, I will immediately lead you in."

"Yes." The monkey had no sense of hesitation.

Luo Feng's order was akin to his master's order, even if he ordered him to self destruct now, he wouldn't even resist. Hence, the moment one's soul was controlled, its entire core and being would submit to his master.

...

Amidst the vast space, Luo Feng stood hidden. His mini scanner was activated, and beside him stood the Devil shell monkey.

"Just like that, accelerate and reach light speed and universe travel, go on." He ordered.

"Yes."

The monkey's eyes were lit with excitement.

Sou!

His speed increased, becoming a beam of light in space, quickly reaching light speed. The space shook before he vanished.

Luo Feng gazed at the scene, "The Doku's use universe travel to

get from one Ice Hell star to another and to return. The distance is so far, just flying normally would take ten days to half a month, and universe travel ripples occur frequently. Then, the monkey's universe travel wouldn't garner too much attention."

"It'll depend on luck."

"Let's hope that it's luck is good, let this one slave bring me the metal board." Luo Feng thought. "If he can't, at least I'll gain some information about the area." Entering the area was too dangerous, Luo Feng wouldn't blindly enter himself.

******

Sixteen million km away from the Ice Hell star, the universe space rippled and the monkey appeared, he naturally activated his scanner.

"Hehe, it's been too lonely following the master for so many years with nothing to do. There's finally something to do. Just what is this place, it seems dangerous." The monkey surveyed the area cautiously, using his consciousness to connect to the virtual universe, sending everything he saw to Luo Feng.

"Ice Hell star."

The monkey was clueless but brave. He had never heard of Ice Hell star, and he didn't know just how dangerous it was, but he still flew in cautiously. Sixteen million km was very close, even though he flew slowly, he got close within an instant.

Hu!

Hu!

Two beams of light shot out. Two sector lord Dokus appeared, and these two extremely handsome Dokus were chatting and laughing, even though their gaze had passed the monkey, with the scanner blocking him, he was completely hidden. At least he was not visible to the naked eye. The two Dokus laughed and joked, they began to accelerate to light speed...after which they vanished

into universe travel, heading to another area.

"Luckily they didn't discover me, however master's master sure is cowardly. The two punks should only be at sector lord level, I can easily kill them. He even made it so that I cannot attack anything." The monkey carefully began to fly into Ice Hell star, finally...he entered the Ice Hell star.

Chapter 915: Da La Sha Teacher

Luo Feng stood hidden within the space belt, his consciousness connected to the virtual universe.

Virtual universe primal region, within his villa.

"He's entered ice hell star." He sat his desk, looking at the laptop before him, the screen displayed everything the devil shell monkey was sending.

"You can only depend on yourself now, even I don't know where the black metal board is hidden." Luo Feng looked on.

...

Ice hell star's temperature was extremely cold, the monkey landed on the surface.

"So cold." It looked about, his mini scanner covering his area, "What metal board does master's master want? And where is it?"

This ice hell star had a diameter of over 8k km, its surface was bare, only vast pathways lay ahead straight into the depths of the star.

"Pick a route."

The monkey chose a path and sneaked in, relying on the small scanner to look about.

The deeper he went, the colder it got.

After about 3,000 km, it finally reached the end.

"Ah, the depths of this star...is actually a palace?" It blinked its eyes and looked ahead, it was a completely purple and green mix crystal palace that was over 1,000 km tall, a terrifying energy emanated from within.

"A terrifying warrior is within." The monkey gritted his teeth.

"Master's maser, what should I do?" It asked Luo Feng via the

virtual universe.

"Activate your large scanner and control it to engulf the entire star but avoid that palace! Other than that palace, scan everywhere else." Luo Feng ordered.

"Yes master's master."

It had no sense of disobeying, immediately activating the large scanner.

Weng!

It began to swiftly scan through the entire ice hell, other than the palace itself, it scanned everything, all the information was sent via the virtual universe to Luo Feng.

...

Luo Feng looked at his laptop and frowned.

"Ice hell star is very much like the bug clan mother nest." He said softly, "All the areas within the star have nothing, it's simply all ice. Without a doubt...the black metal board, should be within the palace!"

"Devil shell monkey!"

"Close the large scanner and activate your mini scanner and enter the palace." Luo Feng ordered.

"Yes master."

******

The monkey felt the strong energy from the palace, but it had no way to go against Luo Feng's order, he could only cautiously enter, the palace was too huge and empty, he couldn't see anyone.

"So cold."

It flew slowly through the palace, not daring to fly too fast, in case he drew attention from the powerful warrior.

"Just where is it, black metal board, where is it?" The monkey

used his mini scanner to search about, just as he flew past one door...

A formless ripple spread throughout the entire palace.

"Other race!"

An enraged howl resounded, a purple light almost instantly appeared before the monkey.

"Not good." The monkey was shocked.

"Activate your large scanner and scan the entire palace before fleeing." Luo Feng quickly ordered from the virtual universe.

The monkey immediately did just so, he couldn't care less as he fled for his life.

"You think you can run!"

The purple silhouette pointed at the monkey, a purple beam of light shot out of his crystal like finger, hitting the monkey, ge ge ge...a layer of ice swiftly formed throughout its body, becoming a huge ice block. The monkey was completely immobilized within, its soul imprints completely frozen to the point it crumbled.

It had fallen.

Actually the moment it became a soul slave, it was akin to having fallen, the universe was like that, the weak was the prey of the strong.

"Hmph." The powerful purple silhouette snorted coldly, "These other races, they all wish to get the ice hell star stone and the ice hell dew. An official and yet he dared come here, become an ice statue."

After which he waved his hand.

A powerful energy flowed through the corpse within the ice as it flew straight into the corner of the palace, there were already tens of ice statues there. They were all other race undyings that had come here to explore the palace, they had all been frozen solid.

...

Virtual universe.

Luo Feng carefully examined the last scan, seeing the layout of the entire palace.

"This palace actually has ice hell star stone." Through the scan, he had detected a finger nail sized translucent purple stone."

"The black metal board...is stored in another location, ok, luckily it isn't with the stone." Luo Feng thought, there were 2 renowned treasures within ice hell star, making some desperate warriors take the risk, gambling it all on the treasures.

As long as they managed to get one, they would rise again!

The 1st treasure was the ice hell star stone, another was the ice hell dew, of which one took extreme amounts of efforts from the green dokus to create while the other from the purple.

These 2 were extremely valuable materials, they had special qualities.

That fingernail sized stone within the palace was worth about 2 trillion mixed elements.

"Treasure."

"However the more valuable it is, the more dangerous the area." Luo Feng shook his head, "Ice hell star is one of the top 6 most dangerous spots in the Black flower region. Especially with the 2 Doku knights, they are extremely powerful even amongst knights, akin to the Tian Shi palace leader."

"The great being's test sure isn't easy."

"This palace has obviously been refined by that undying doku into a weapon, the moment anyone enters...it would immediately sense." Luo Feng frowned, "If I want to get the black metal board, I have to enter the palace, and yet the moment I enter, I would be detected."

*****

Luo Feng stood hidden in space, gazing at the vast stars ahead, straight at that one ice hell star.

"I will definitely be detected if I enter the palace."

"That would mean death!" Luo Feng frowned.

He looked forward, recalling the 3 sector lords earlier, he immediately thought and the mosha Luo Feng appeared. With black energies revolving about him, he became a 3.6m tall green doku, giving off ice cold energies.

"Natural ability...clone!"

His life energy swiftly changed, becoming exactly similar to that green doku earlier.

"As long as one doesn't specially scan my body, no one will be able to detect. This is one of the many plans...and the safest one with the highest chance of success, let's hope it works." The earth body and the mosha body looked at the distant ice hell star, after which, the mosha body became a beam of light.

...

He quickly accelerated, the mosha body had the presence of the 20th level of the heavenly bridge, in terms of strength it could completely suppress normal officials, its high law comprehension allowed it to easily reach light speed.

Chi!

Universe travel!

...

In an instant.

About 6 million km away from the star, he appeared, it was in his green doku form, his life energy was similar to the one before. Naturally he flew openly towards the star. He wouldn't be stupid

enough to use a scanner to hide himself.

"Bei Fa, Bei Fa." A voice resounded within his ears.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was shocked, turning to look.

A distant beam of light flew over, it was a purple 3.2m tall doku, it was obviously more detailed and fine than Luo Feng, it flew over excitedly, "Bei Fa, you heard that Teacher Da La Sha caught an other race warrior too?"

"Ah...I only came here to pay my respects to him." Luo Feng thought fast and replied.

Luckily, the language they used was the common demon language in the universe. Actually due to the rarity of the special life forms, they all normally used common other race languages. Luo Feng could obviously use them too, as for his voice, he had heard the one before.

"Let's go, we can go see him together." The purple doku grabbed Luo Feng's hand and flew downwards.

Luo Feng could only follow.

1 green, 1 purple...flying down.

Luo Feng and made ample preparation before, he also knew that the relations between the dokus was very good, they were special life forms, born with endless life spans! And life forms that could reproduce endlessly had to become undyings to achieve such a state. The long years of mingling together...

Made it so that they valued every race member, as long as one died, even if it was only a sector lord punk, it would enrage all the dokus! Even the 2 knights would come look for the murderer. However the many explorers still killed many of them.

...

The 2 held hands and followed the pathways of the ice hell star, quickly reaching the ice palace.

"Teacher Da La sha, Teacher Da La Sha." The purple doku dragged Luo Feng and flew straight in.

Luo feng could only follow.

They quickly reached the dangerous region of the palace, a silhouette walked out, it was the one that killed the monkey earlier.

"Ya Wu, Bei Fa, you've come." Da La sha smiled, nothing like before, he was warm and friendly, but Luo Feng was clear...this was only towards its companions, if it discovered Luo Feng's identity, Da La Sha would definitely turn vicious.

"Where's that other race warrior?" Wu Ya said, heading towards the ice statues.

Mosha Luo Feng followed suit and looked at the ice statues behind.

"It's the demon race Devil shell monkey, about official level strength." Da La Sha pointed at the statue.

Wu Ya dragged Luo Feng and headed over.

Luo Feng followed and landed before the monkey's statue.

"Ah, Devil shell monkey...this is the 1st I've seen personally." Wu Ya's eyes gleamed.

"Bei Fa, you usually talk the most, why are you so quiet today." The purple silhouette reached Luo Feng in just one step, rubbing his braids affectionately.

Chapter 916: Exposed

Luo Feng tensed up within, he let Da La Sha rub his braids as Ya Wu said beside, "I too felt that Bei Fa was boring today."

"Are you troubled?" Da La Sha continued to rub his braids.

"I'm just not in a good mood, I don't wish to talk about it." Luo Feng said.

Da La Sha looked at him affectionately, "Looks like Bei Fa is troubled. Think about it properly anything you cannot solve you can talk to me, I will tell you."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded, he could feel the strong bonds shared between the group.

This was a very powerful bond.

"The information was true, the Dokus are extremely vicious against intruders, but amongst themselves, they are very affectionate. Any person who kills a Doku would be chased down by all the others." Luo Feng thought.

"You two can play here."

Da La Sha smiled, "If you have any matters, come to the shrine to look for me."

"Ok teacher." Wu Ya said.

"Understood teacher." Luo Feng said.

Da La Sha smiled and turned to leave.

Only then did Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief, the footage of when he killed the Devil Shell monkey earlier was terrifying. Da La Sha was cold and murderous, now however he was almost motherly. Luo Feng didn't know...that when the universe evolved, it produced the special life form Dokus at different times, and not simultaneously.

Some were produced earlier or later than the others, and it had been over 300 million years since the last one was born.

Da La Sha...was one of the first nine to be produced, trillions of years before Bei Fa and Wu Ya. Strength wise he was also among the top ten, and it was his responsibility to mentor the weaker dokus. Hence Bei Fa and Wu Ya all called him teacher.

...

Luo Feng looked at the ice statues before him, of which the monkey was in one, and there was a Lei Quan race warrior too. There was even a human warrior! They were all frozen, and their souls long frozen to death.

"What an interesting monkey." Wu Ya carefully examined the monkey for awhile. "This is the first time I've seen it in real life, I've only seen it in the virtual world before."

"Virtual world?" Luo Feng thought.

The virtual skills were considered a very normal technology in the universe, a small area can be called a virtual world. Just like earth back then, with the quantum computer they acquired from an ancient ship remains, they built the war god shrine world. This was common technology, the hard part was expanding the area.

A world that had an entire galaxy.

One that had a starfield, or a one whole territory of humanity, or the entire virtual universe!

The larger the area, the harder it got!

"The Dokus have created a virtual world that covers the Ice Hell star area, this is indeed easy. Acquiring many quantum computers from the generations of intruders should make this easy." Luo Feng understood.

"Bei Fa, let's head to the shrine to take a look." Wu Ya said. "The techniques teacher created are very complex."

"I'm not going." Luo Feng said, "I wish to walk alone."

"Ah."

Wu Ya nodded, "Right, the techniques he made are suited for us, not you all."

Luo Feng was stunned for awhile before he realized she was referring to the green and purple dokus.

"Then I'm going." Wu Ya happily skipped and vanished.

"My luck sure is good." Luo Feng relaxed. "I wanted to find a way to move alone, I didn't expect to get the chance so easily. Hm, I'll head to where the black metal board is stored." He began to fly madly about the palace.

******

Within the depths of the shrine.

Da La Sha sat crossed legged on the ice floor, his formless god energy permeating throughout the entire palace. He smiled, "Wu Ya's headed to the technique shrine, Bei Fa has gone to the 10,000 item shrine. Wu Ya sure is something, she knew that Bei Fa wasn't in a good mood, hence she didn't keep him company, instead she headed off to the technique shrine. Bei Fa isn't trained in our ways...it's ok, there are all sorts of items there from the other races, it'll help him cheer up."

After which he closed his eyes and connected to the virtual world, chatting with other Dokus within.

To the special life form Dokus...

Over the long periods of time, there were indeed many daring explorers that have come before. Even though 99% of them had been caught, there would still be lucky ones. This made it so that there would always be others that would come and try their luck. After they are killed, the many treasures and items they carry with them were mostly useless to the Dokus, normally they were all just

used as decoration and toys.

Da La Sha had placed all these toys within a shrine and called it the 10,000 items shrine.

The black metal board was located here as well!

...

Within the shrine.

Luo Feng turned casually and arrived there. As the entire palace had been scanned in detail by the monkey before, he already had a clear idea of the construct of the place.

"Right now, it's just luck."

He stepped in on the cold ground, his gaze fixed on a bunch of items before him, it was filled with everything, weapons, armors, special materials etc. They were all placed randomly, and they weren't worth much, at least not to Luo Feng.

"Black metal board." Luo Feng waved his hand and moved the items to the side, looking at the black metal board buried below.

"The third metal board." He knew the moment he touched it that this was what he was looking for.

"Now it's up to luck...I have to leave the moment I take it." He thought. "It'll take awhile from the palace to get out of Ice Hell star! Within this time, if Da La Sha discovers something off...then I'll be in trouble. However, she shouldn't be too wary of her own race, I have a chance."

"And from the looks of it, seeing how the board is placed here casually, it's obviously not valued." Luo Feng didn't hesitate anymore.

He kept the board in his world ring and headed out.

Sou!

He flew within the palace, not too fast or too slow.

As he headed out of the entrance of the palace, a voice resounded in his ears, "Bei Fa, you are returning? Not going to wait for Wu Ya?"

"No, I wish to return." Even though he shook within, he still managed to say, "I'll come visit teacher again soon."

"Hm. Go on." Da La Sha said affectionately.

Luo Feng couldn't care about anything else, quickly flying out and heading out of the Ice Hell star. Even though he could teleport, it wasn't something he dared to do...because the moment he teleported, he would be discovered. This was something the virtual universe company's information had stated.

Even though he was in a rush, he had to continue flying.

...

Ice Hell star's virtual world.

Within a vast plaza, Da La Sha was sitting with three other Dokus, drinking wine and shaking his head, "This child Bei Fa, I wonder what's wrong, when he came to me earlier. He seemed to be troubled and I felt like there was some change."

"Maybe his confession was rejected." Another Doku laughed.

At 1,000 Dokus, even though they were unable to reproduce, the green dokus had always chased after the purple ones, living together. The green ones were more numerous, and the purple ones were less. Also, the purple dokus enjoyed living in solitude more, hence it was normal to face rejection.

"Da La Sha, you said Bei Fa visited you and was troubled? I just saw him with Bo Ya and they were laughing happily, playing some battle games."

"Laughing?"

Da La Sha's expression changed, the Dokus were pure, they wouldn't lie to each other. How could he have been troubled

earlier and then gone to play battle games, laughing happily at the same time?

...

Da La Sha who was sitting crossed legged within the shrine suddenly opened his eyes, his expression changed. A formless god energy swiftly spread outside, sweeping past mosha Luo Feng who had just flown out the pathway of the Ice Hell star. His spirit energy easily scanned through his body...discovering that the fake Bei Fa had a life crystal within.

"It's not Bei Fa!"

"Intruder!" His eyes were instantly filled with murderous intent.

Shua!

Da La Sha instantly teleported and vanished from the shrine, appearing before Luo Feng.

******

Teleportation, this was forbidden within Ice Hell star!

Even though there were powerful Dokus that could do it, like Da La Sha, they normally didn't use it, relying on universe travel to visit their friends. Because...the quickest method used by intruders was teleporting.

As long as the Dokus didn't use it, the moment they discovered a teleportation space ripple, it would definitely be an intruder!

Other than that...when chasing down an intruder, they could all use it.

In all, discovering a teleportation space ripple meant intruders, or a major situation.

"Intruder!"

"An intruder is here?"

Within the many Ice Hell stars about, ten powerful Dokus felt the

space ripple.

And within the two biggest Ice Hell stars, one with a diameter of 13,000 km and another with 96,000 km...the terrifying knights lived within them. The special life form knights, they were terrifying from birth.

"Intruder?"

"There's an intruder?"

The two knights instantly felt it too.

...

"As long as I fly out of this Ice Hell star and accelerate to light speed, I'll be able to escape." Luo Feng rushed out of the pathway and continued to fly. As he got close to the outer surface, a powerful air force similar to earth's atmosphere rushed forward.

He had to fly out to accelerate to light speed.

Rumble!

A powerful energy appeared in the air before him, it was the purple silhouette Da La Sha, filled with murderous intent, his eyes fixed on Luo Feng as he roared, "Intruder!"

Luo Feng who was flying out saw the silhouette, his expression changed.

Chapter 917: Flee

Da La Sha was filled with rage within, she didn't expect an intruder to disguise himself as one of her clansman, she even rubbed his braids, this enraged her further." No mercy!"

Rumble!

She teleported to the air above Luo Feng, looking coldly at the fake Bei Fa. Without saying anything she pointed a finger at him, a purple light instantly shot at Mosha Luo Feng. Luo Feng knew things weren't good, "Shit, I've been discovered, plan c!"

He immediately teleported. However the purple light's speed was incredibly fast, it shot through his body and a terrifying cold pierced his body, almost like it was freezing his consciousness. It couldn't be helped, the power of this beam was against the soul, however it was completely useless against the mosha body which was immune to soul attacks.

Sou! He vanished.

...

"What!" She couldn't believe it. She had used her full strength to freeze the enemy's soul, yet he still escaped. She closed her eyes and sensed about, connecting with the space ripples...however Luo Feng's teleport was too far away, exceeding her area.

"Da La Sha, don't make such a mistake again, leave it to me." A booming voice resounded within her mind.

"Leader, he stole a black metal board."

"I know, leave it to me."

"Yes leader." She nodded, feeling unjust within.

Yet she still didn't think that the thief could get away. As she teleported, the terrifying two knights had felt it. Even if she let the thief get away, with the two knights...anyone of them could easily

catch up to him.

******

Sou!

Mosha Luo Feng appeared in the space far away before vanishing again.

Sou!

He appeared in the air above a continent before vanishing again.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

Madly teleporting about, everytime over one light year away, as he didn't care about the dangers, and was simply fleeing as fast as he could...

...

In the air above a continent, a powerful green silhouette stood in space his eyes smiling, "This punk sure is fast. However he only knows how to teleport, compared to grasping the entire space laws...it's an entire different level, how can he escape?"

He began to sense the ripples all about...easily finding a spot where there were teleporting ripples.

"There."

He flashed and began to hunt.

Once one comprehended teleportation, whether it was a sector lord or emperor, the distance would all be about the same. It was a reflection of the comprehension of the space laws! Communing with the space ripples and teleporting via the ripples to a far away location.

Comprehending teleportation would allow one to usually sense up to one light year away in a particular direction.

However sensing in all directions, that was much more taxing. And the distance wouldn't even be 1% of working in one direction.

Hence, as Luo Feng fled...Da La Sha had no way to guess where he teleported to. The knights however were different.

Once one fully comprehends the space laws, the knight's teleportation was much more powerful. They could easily teleport over 1,000 light years! Even sensing in all directions...they could cover over ten light years in area.

Luckily Luo Feng teleported constantly, changing his direction over and over. It would take the knight quite some effort to catch him.

******

Hu!

Mosha Luo Feng appeared above a mountain range, his hands and feet landing.

Sou!

He once again vanished!

A green silhouette appeared right after before vanishing again.

...

One was fleeing while the other one chased.

"This punk is really not stopping." The green silhouette chased for ten seconds before he got impatient. As they teleported ten times per second, and he had originally wanted to easily capture this intruder. It was much harder now. He could only teleport after he detected where Luo Feng was.

The moment he confirmed, he teleported, however that time alone was enough for Luo Feng to get away.

"I'll have to use some energy."

He stood in space, surrounded by little black mountains. There were many ship remains amongst the mountains. This was one of the dangerous regions in the Black flower region, of course to the

knights...he couldn't be bothered, he unleashed his move.

Rumble!

A blinding green light shot out from his body, he instantly became a star, shooting lights in all directions.

He gave off such powerful energy to disturb the space ripples about, with a knight's strength, he could control the entire space laws, allowing him to easily seal and disrupt space ripples! Just affecting the ripples was easy enough, but it had to be within a fixed area, he had burnt some of his undying energy, and his strength had soared to an unbelievable level...

Weng!

Almost like plucking a string, rippling throughout.

The knight had used his full strength to disrupt the space ripples around, spreading over ten light years.

A light year was a huge area.

In a normal fight, knights had no way to affect one light year in area. Even if it was simply affecting the space ripples, they still had to burn some undying energy to affect over ten light years.

******

Amidst the mist.

Mosha Luo Feng was about to teleport when he turned and sighed. He clearly felt the space ripples affected, with broken lines all over, even though they would recover quickly, for now...he couldn't teleport.

Rumble!

A powerful pressure extended over, covering the space. The area around naturally had its space locked down too, the powerful seal...made Luo Feng immobile, almost like a full binding!

"Greetings knight." Mosha Luo Feng shouted.

"Return to your original form, I don't like killing my own clansman." The voice boomed as the green silhouette appeared before him. He was about the same height as the other Dokus, but his pressure was much stronger. The willpower and strength he gave off...shocked even Luo Feng.

"Since you want to kill me, why order me to do something." Luo Feng looked at the knight before him.

The green knight looked at him, "You sure got some guts. As a mosha clansman, you aren't afraid of soul control."

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded.

The mosha clansman didn't have a soul, naturally it couldn't be controlled. This was the difference in life forms itself! Luo Feng had checked up on this long ago, he was clear on this.

"Speak, mosha genius." The knight looked at him. "A sector lord and yet you can teleport. Even amongst the mosha, you are definitely an absolute genius, but you came to us. What I'm curious about is, from the way you kept teleporting, you knew well you couldn't escape, yet you still did something so useless, forcing me to burn 0.1% of my undying body! You should know that doing so would only enrage me. Knowing there's no escape and enraging a knight, that's not wise at all."

"Yes!" Mosha Luo Feng smiled, "Kill me and you'll know the reason."

"Don't tell me?"

The knight gave off murderous energy, revealing a look of rage, he waved his hand and with a rumble... a formless slap smashed the mosha body, instantly reducing him to nothing. Even the normal world rings and devices etc were all destroyed.

"Nothing! That black metal board...it's gone!" The knight looked about. He had destroyed everything and even amongst the fragments, he didn't find anything.

His expression changed.

Within the entire Ice Hell star...the other Dokus all didn't know the importance of the black metal board, however only he and the other purple knight knew!

"I've been played!" He raged. "He must have placed it somewhere else when he teleported."

...

In another area of the black flower region, thousands of light years away from Ice Hell star.

A living ship was floating.

Within.

Luo Feng stood in the control room, wielding the stone in his hand, smiling, "I've got it!"

To get this Nine volume manual, he had come up with many plans, just the mosha plan alone had six side plans! Enough to deal with all sorts of predicaments. This plan c...had taken in consideration the knights not being willing to burn his undying energy.

According to this plan, If the mosha body were to be discovered, immediately take the board and teleport away! After that, teleport over and over! The process had to be fast! Fast! Fast! No hesitation!

Teleporting over and over, even if the knight wanted to kill him, he wouldn't bear to burn his undying energy immediately.

Only when he got impatient would he do so!

However...

In truth, within the mountain range from before, Luo Feng had arranged for a slave to be in a world ring there, hiding within. When the mosha teleported there and landed on the mountain, he would place a stone like world ring there and teleport away.

The green knight would keep chasing...not knowing that the slave had taken the ring away and gone through universe travel. After ten seconds in the dark universe, they would have already reached a far enough place.

"I've got the item, time to leave."

"I lost an official Devil Shell monkey and the mosha body this time. However it would just take some energy to reproduce him." Luo Feng wielded the stone and smiled.

Suddenly, a cold energy engulfed the area.

Luo Feng's expression changed, turning.

A beautiful purple robed demon stood behind him. Luo Feng was stunned, he knew...just who this was. It was the other knight of Ice Hell star...the purple Doku knight!

Chapter 918: Ice Hell

"Purple Doku knight!" Luo Feng hated the fact that his plan still fell short. Now he was in trouble.

He bowed slightly to express respect, "Greetings purple Doku knight!"

"Little punk, you sure are impressive." The knight looked at him and smiled elusively. "You actually manage to swindle the other knight and make him waste his time."

"No matter, I still couldn't escape from you." Luo Feng shook his head, after which he turned curiously to him. "I wonder if you could explain to me how you managed to find me even after I got free from the green knight?"

The purple knight looked curiously at him, she didn't expect the mastermind behind the stealing of the useless black metal board... to actually chat with her so casually. It was almost like he was speaking to his elder, wasn't he worried at all? Worried that he would be killed? Wasn't he worried that he would be made a soul slave?

"Purple knight." Luo Feng was being stared down.

"Aren't you afraid I'd kill you, that I'll enslave you?" The knight asked.

"At this point, I have no way to resist, what's the use?" Luo Feng said.

"Interesting."

The purple knight smiled, "You little punk, you sent the mosha to steal, and he stole nothing but the useless special metal board. Even though it's special, it's still useless. Da La Sha had the Ice Hell stone, it's interesting you didn't go for that instead."

"My underling was useless. His perspectives were too low and he

knew too little about the treasures of the universe. When he saw the black metal board, he thought it was special and thought it was a treasure, hence he took it." Luo Feng shook his head. "But he knew too...the stone would be guarded well, he'd have no chance of stealing it."

"He is smart, if he went to steal the Ice Hell stone, Da La Sha would immediately suspect he was the fake Bei Fa." The knight nodded. "I chanced upon this metal board back then, however after studying it for awhile, I didn't find any use for it. Hence I took it as a toy and passed it around, it finally ended up with Da La Sha."

Luo Feng was stunned.

Toy?

Indeed, the Nine volume manual within the metal board was limited by the universe laws, only one person could use it. To others, it was completely useless. The two knights probably didn't recognize its importance and took it as a toy.

"I wonder if the knight can release me, I'm willing to pay for my actions." Luo Feng bowed. This wasn't something he thought on the fly, but rather from the information he gathered from the virtual universe company. The two knights liked to collect treasures, some intruders that had been caught had used treasures to exchange for their lives before.

"Release you?" The purple knight looked curiously at Luo Feng. "Seems right, that black metal board is but a toy, I'll sell it to you, but the cost wont be small."

"Please speak." Luo Feng was gleeful within.

There were pros and cons to the deal, but he didn't expect to get lucky enough to get to keep the metal board.

"Seeing your moves, your background must not be ordinary, the cost would naturally..." her expression suddenly changed, she glanced at him and said seriously, "Punk, you actually forced green

knight to burn part of his undying body and you've completely enraged him. It looks like I cannot let you go."

Luo Feng's expression changed, he naturally knew that the mosha had completely enraged the green knight.

"Come with me!" The purple knight didn't say anymore, a formless space ripple spread throughout.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

There were three consecutive teleports, and each of them over 1,000 light years. When Luo Feng's sight finally regained stability, they had already reached an incredibly cold planet. He looked around, this vast ice planet had many Ice Hell stars in the sky.

"This is on an Ice Hell star, and it's an extremely huge one, it's where either of the knights live." Luo Feng thought.

"Where's my ship?" He was originally in the ship, yet now it was gone. "Looks like they took my living ship away."

Rumble!

A powerful energy appeared in the air and stared down at Luo Feng, it was the green knight.

"Haha...you sure got humiliated." Purple knight laughed.

"Hmph, this human." The green knight landed and stared at him. "You sent the mosha? Where's his main body? He actually sacrificed himself so easily, that must not be its main body."

"Green knight, the mosha's real body is my friend." Luo Feng said respectfully, "I specially got his help this time and I already owe him a favor, how can I rat him out?"

The purple knight spoke beside, "Stupid, if you just say a special person, like if this friend was the disciple of the Huge Axe founder, or the disciple of the Primal chaos city leader...anyway, any disciple of the super warriors of humanity. I wonder if he'd dare go take revenge." The purple knight mocked.

"Hmph." The green knight stared at Luo Feng. "Despicable! If I can just kill you like that, it would be too easy..."

Suddenly...

In the distant space, ripples occurred, ten silhouettes had come through universe travel over. Some were green while others were purple, they all landed down. And the numbers kept growing, more ripples kept appearing about.

"This is the one that acted as me?" Bei Fa stared at Luo Feng.

"The one that did has already been killed, this is the mastermind." The green knight said.

"Leader is so powerful, killing that impostor and catching the mastermind." Bei Fa said excitedly. Beside him the group of sector lords all stared at Luo Feng like he was some rare goods. The group of Dokus were all close and affectionate. Their treatment of the knights weren't how sector lords usually treated knights with fear and respect, however it was almost like respect for their grandfather.

"Leader, you killed that intruder, he even held my hand." Wu Ya seemed unhappy.

"That was an impostor." Bei Fa shouted, "I'm the real Bei Fa!"

"I know." Wu Ya said

The hundred Dokus all cheered. Da La Sha stared at Luo Feng, his eyes filled with murderous intent, it was obvious he was still angry from being deceived earlier.

"Two leaders, I wonder how you will deal with this human." Da La Sha asked, immediately the rest of the Dokus all turned to the two leaders.

The green knight looked at the purple knight beside.

The purple knight laughed, "You seem enraged, you decide."

"Hmph." The green knight stared at him. "We have to slowly

destroy him, Da La Sha...you will personally bind him, send him to the Ice Hell!"

"Yes!"

"Wa, Ice Hell?"

"This intruder sure is unlucky."

"The Ice Hell is about to be opened again."

The other sector lord dokus all cheered.

Luo Feng's expression was ugly, he thought within, "Ice Hell? It's just as I thought. As long as they don't kill me...they'd definitely lock me in the Ice Hell, hm, there's still a chance. I don't have to get the city leader's help yet."

Why was this region called Ice Hell star?

The ice cold planets, why not simply call them ice stars, instead, Ice Hell stars? Why the word hell?

It was because of a legendary place within the area...that was Ice Hell. According to the information he had gathered, Ice Hell was a powerful special weapon similar to the sealed stars. It could lock up many warriors within, one of the two knights was in control of the weapon.

"Go." Da La Sha and the others stared at him.

Luo Feng didn't resist.

He allowed himself to be chained, what a joke, Da La Sha and the other two undyings were the top ten warriors of the Dokus. Their god bodies were all ten millions times stronger than a sector lord's. With body and spirit energy amplification and etc...these three were all as strong as True Yan!

These were special life forms! Their basic genetics were much higher than humans, plus these three were the most exceptional of the undyings. Naturally they were extremely powerful.

Before, the mosha had escaped because soul attacks were useless against it, and with its teleportation, even True Yan wouldn't have been able to chase him. It had to be a knight with a full grasp of the space laws, only such a warrior could have caught him.

...

Within the dark universe.

A ship was flying slowly, within the control room stood Tian Chen.

Within his world ring.

Howl! The golden horned beast's huge body was lying there, its internal world was producing another mosha body.

Hu!

Black clothed Luo Feng appeared beside.

"Master." Fu Shui and the others bowed respectfully.

"Luckily I left a back door." He said softly. "I knew the great being's mission wouldn't be that simple, hence my main core had to absolutely stay safe. Afterall, the moment I fall, even if the Primal chaos city leader reversed time and space to revive me...I wouldn't be able to have the star tower and other treasures. I'd also lose the Nine volume manual."

Of all the plans, there was one simple prerequisite...the main core had to be safe.

Hence...

When the mosha body was in action, the earth body had separated from the beast's body, the beast carried the main core and Tian chen and the others, flying in the dark universe.

"No matter how my plans fail, at least the main core will be safe."

"The earth body has the tower pearl guarding the soul, hence he cannot be soul controlled. If a powerful attack hits, to protect the

many treasures on the earth body, I'll get the help of teacher." Black cloth Luo Feng thought, "There's no need at the moment, the two of them haven't discovered my true treasures, they are simply locking me in the ice hell."

Chapter 919: Stuck in Ice Hell

The two knights obviously didn't know that this was but the earth body of Luo Feng. Even though he had the sha wu wings, the star map and tower pearl which were all incredibly important, if he was forced into a corner, Luo Feng would call his teacher the primal chaos city leader to show himself, and he would be able to take his treasures away.

The star map and tower pearl were almost considered true treasures. Even if the city leader discovered them...he wouldn't take them away.

Hence he was still grounded within. The only thing was calling his teacher was his last choice. Until he was in a dire crisis, he would never do so.

*****

Within the core of the purple knight's ice hell star, there lay a majestic ice palace over 10,000 km tall.

Both knights walked side by side within the palace.

"Actually...I really want to slap this human to death!" The green knight said.

"Are you looking for death? The sitting mountain guest, just who is he? That's one of the strongest in the entire universe! If we offend him, even with the warriors we know, no one would be able to protect us. If you want to die, don't drag the clansmen with you." The purple knight scolded him.

The green knight smiled, "I'm just saying, come on...we are both knights. What's more, we are among the most powerful of knights in the universe, yet we have to put on a show before this human."

"This was an order from mountain sitting guest, we definitely have to follow them. And he even gave us quite a bit of rewards." The purple knight nodded.

"Back then...he had ordered for us to casually put the black metal board within an Ice Hell star, forbidding us from putting it on our stars, awaiting an intruder to steal it. He even said...as long as a flesh or blood life form stole it, we cannot kill him, we have to lock him in Ice Hell." The green knight frowned. "That mosha was an energy life form. I killed it instantly...however the mastermind was actually a human!"

"Why do you think he gave such an order?" The green knight asked.

"Isn't it obvious, he spent so much effort probably to nurture a strong warrior." The purple knight's eyes gleamed, "This human should have been picked by him."

"Nurturing a disciple?" The green knight shook his head. "What a vicious teacher, he knew very well the rules of our Ice Hell, yet he still wants to send this human in? Even if his disciple is powerful, he should know what kind of warriors are within our ice hell."

"Vicious." The purple knight said. "It could be a tough training. If he can't get past this, and the human dies...it's akin to the sitting mountain guest killing him. Anyway, it's none of our business."

"Hm." The green knight nodded.

The two chatted as they walked.

"However this human was indeed crafty, even I was fooled. How did you find the black metal board?" The green knight asked curiously. "When the sitting mountain guest gave the order back then, he said if some intruder managed to get away with the black metal board, so be it. Only if he was captured by us would he be sent to ice hell."

"Hehe."

The purple knight laughed.

"Quickly, tell me how you did it." The green knight asked.

The purple knight smiled, "Didn't the mosha teleport over and over with the board? Along the way, he disguised it as a rock in a world ring and placed it on a floating mountain range. That was when I took notice that another intruder took the rock and fled. I followed him and finally discovered the human! After observing him for awhile, I confirmed that the mastermind was the human, only then did I show myself."

"No!" The green knight shook his head, "I was chasing the mosha all the while, you didn't even chase. And the way he teleported... placing the ring on the mountain range would have only taken an instant. Even when I teleported over, I didn't realize it, how did you? And how could you have caught up in time?"

The purple knight smiled mysteriously.

"Quickly tell me." He asked curiously.

"Very simple." She said proudly, "I left a small imprint on the black metal board. No matter where it goes, I can sense it. We all have our own markers, I can feel you constantly changing your location, however the black metal board stopped moving after a while. Hence, I immediately teleported to where it was hidden. I observed the other intruder take it away and followed, you know what happened next."

"You..." The green knight stared, "You actually left an imprint! You left one on the board!"

"Why not?"

She smiled, "I've been very curious, as to this entire plot set up by the sitting mountain guest. I wanted to see just who it was for, however I was worried that he would get away without us knowing. To prevent that, I did this. Haha...he never once said we couldn't do this. What's more, he wanted us to catch the thief and send him to ice hell anyway!"

The green knight shook his head, he felt sorry for Luo Feng.

He had actually gotten away, but because of the purple knight's curiosity...he got caught!

"Poor fellow, let's hope he doesn't die inside." He shook his head.

"Anyway, we cannot intervene. Whether he lives or dies, that'll depend on his luck. If he dies...he would have died under the sitting mountain guest's training, it has nothing to do with us." The purple knight shook her head.

"The sitting mountain guest ventures the universe in solitude. He is eccentric, even the super powers do not dare mess with him. It's indeed true...he's eccentric." The green knight shook his head.

****

Within the huge Ice Hell star which was the green knight's home, it had a majestic pillar that was about 800km thick and over 10,000 km tall.

Hu!

Four silhouettes rushed down. It was Da La Sha and the three powerful warriors that held Luo Feng captive. The space around them was completely locked down. It was obvious that one of them was maintaining the lockdown around them, preventing this crafty human from teleporting away.

They didn't know that without the mosha body's help, his earth body still had no way to teleport.

"That's Ice Hell?" Luo Feng gazed at the huge ice pillar. An unbelievable energy engulfed the area about, one that was no weaker than the sealed star.

"Right, that's Ice Hell!" Da La Sha held onto him and said coldly. "You seem relaxed, you are about to locked up, and you probably won't get out even after a trillion years from the never ending fear and horrors within, finally dying within. Yet you aren't nervous at all!"

"I'm already captured, what's the use?" Luo Feng smiled.

His main core was with the golden horned beast far from the black flower region, it was within a slave's god country. As long as he called for it...they could teleport via god country over and take him away.

Luo Feng gazed at the distant Ice Hell.

The legend of the ice hell was the most renowned one within this area! It was said that even though the knights would kill the captured intruders, if they captured some absolute warriors or some special undyings, they would lock them within.

Through the long periods of time and trillions of eras, nobody knows how many warriors were locked within! Their strengths within would naturally rise too.

Plus the two knights had forced the captured intruders to kill each other, training, killing, endless amounts of time within. With such pressure...it made the Ice Hell a madhouse.

"Unless I face a dire situation, I have no need to call my teacher. Also...on my way to becoming a true absolute warrior, I hope never to have to call him." Luo Feng had long had this thought. From his point of view, being forced to call his teacher was humiliating.

If he had the strength, he would do it alone!

Growing along the way, even standing on par with his teacher, even surpassing him. Along this path...he didn't wish to call him at all! This were his own standards.

A true warrior would never give himself excuses.

...

Da La Sha and the others grabbed onto Luo Feng and arrived before the Ice Hell.

"Human." The green knight said fiercely, "Even though you are

quite strong, the weakest captured within are at least emperors. Without that amount of strength...the leaders wouldn't even bother locking them up within. And being locked for unknown lengths, killing madly within, let me give you some advice...if you fear all these, it's better to self destruct. The darkness and madness within is not something you can take."

"Ah, I am definitely anticipating it." Luo Feng smiled

"This is your tag." Da La Sha tossed it casually. A purple and green ice tag was thrown to him, and on it were demon race numbers.

Luo Feng received it.

"This is my identity?" Luo Feng was curious. Thinking within, this almost feels like the number given to earth prisoners.

"Go on." Da La Sha pushed him strongly.

Hu!

Luo Feng was pushed straight to the edge, within hundred km of the Ice Hell.

In an instant...

Rumble...a terrifying swallowing force engulfed him, almost like an endless whirlpool.

Luo Feng immediately opened his wings within trying to resist it.

"Don't resist, if you do, you'll know the consequences." Da La Sha and the others looked coldly at him.

"Seems right." Luo Feng shook his head.

This was the territory of two knights, they could teleport here immediately.

"Then I'll go check this Ice Hell out." Luo Feng looked up at the source of the swallowing energy, a black cave had already split open from the Ice Hell, the many layers formed what seemed like a

fan of leaves.

Rumble!

He was sucked right in.

Rumble...layers and layers of fan like leaves opened and closed, the huge ice pillar once again returned to its original form, and not a single trace of the slits was visible again.

From then on...

Luo Feng was locked in the Ice Hell.

"Enjoy yourself human!" Da La Sha looked coldly at the ice pillar.

"Let's go Da La Sha."

"Let's go."

They became beams of light and swiftly rushed into the sky.

Chapter 920: Danger

It was a vast ice world.

Hua! After being swallowed, Luo Feng felt a terrifying force act on his body. It was almost like a majestic mountain had pinned him down. With a flap of his wings, he withstood the force and floated in the air, gazing at the vast ice world.

"This is Ice Hell?" He looked about.

The space about seemed like it had trillions of unseen blades, causing the space to shake occasionally.

"This is indeed a true treasure. It frequently shakes the space, making it impossible to teleport via god country." Luo Feng had expected this. Any true sealing treasure would definitely suppress god country teleportation. The requirements to teleport via god country were harsh, it had to be within a steady space.

During battle with the ripples of energy all around, one couldn't teleport via god country.

"And I cannot teleport here." Luo Feng sensed. The space ripples in here were completely cut off from those outside, "Even with the mosha body, I can at most teleport within Ice Hell, I cannot teleport out. This is pretty similar to the forbidden space within the Star tower."

Star tower had countless forbidden spaces, and the warriors could only teleport within each space, but not out or to another.

...

Unable to teleport via god country or normal teleportation, all the while feeling like the weight of a mountain was on him, this was what Luo Feng felt when he entered Ice Hell.

The only thing he could be happy about was that he could connect to the virtual universe!

"Impressive."

"I've been in the Star tower, Demon mountain, Primal universe, Blood river world...anyway, everywhere I've been to has allowed me to connect to the virtual universe." Luo Feng couldn't help but exclaim. This virtual universe truly was omnipotent, even within a true treasure, one could still connect.

"Master, the space around is too special, the large scanner cannot function properly. The mini scanner can still work properly." Babata's subsidiary AI reported the problem to him. Luo Feng nodded, the mini scanner was much more advanced than the large one, it could still be used in ice hell.

"For the green knight to lock me in here for an indefinite amount of time, it shouldn't be that simple right."

Luo Feng landed on the snowy ground.

He took several steps, each one over 1,000 km long, "I'll explore this area and see why he actually locked me in here."

******

As he walked within, the footsteps he left behind finally drew the attention of another warrior within.

"Claw marks?"

"What claws are these?" A blurry black silhouette landed on the snow. "None of the warriors in Ice Hell should have these, is there a new comer?"

"Hehehe...my chance has come."

...

"This Ice Hell sure is vast." Luo Feng suddenly stopped, looking around. "The binding is too strong, my spirit energy can only cover 10,000 km in area. Hence, I can only check a small portion of it at a time. I've already walked 100,000 km, yet I still can't see the end of the snow and mountains."

Just like a marble sized little sealed star has its own forbidden space within, or a world within a world ring.

This Ice Hell, as a true treasure of the green knight, had a space that far exceeded its outer appearance.

"Hu!" He took a deep breath, the chill entering his chest as he stride out again.

"It was said that there are many warriors within, I don't believe I cant even meet one." He continued forward.

...

He left many footprints in the snow, every one of them over 1,000 km apart. A normal human had no way to even track him. However to the strong, over 1,000 km was a simple step.

"Master, ambush!" The mini scan swiftly sent out a warning.

Rumble!

Luo Feng flapped his wings, causing the space around to shake as he flew up.

A black beam of light shot right past him and landed on the snow.

"Hm?" Luo Feng looked down from high above. There sat a crossed legged black life form, it had a body length of over 8m long, but its tail was even longer than its body. It had long fangs and eyes that were burning with black flames. It stared at Luo Feng, and its was body covered in black scales.

"Soul swallowing beast?" Luo Feng was stunned.

The soul swallowing beast was an incredibly rare creature of the universe, just like the golden horned beast and mosha which were rare as well, this was comparable to the mosha. Such a rare beast... had its own natural abilities, and it had two.

"Human, you actually recognized me." A hoarse voice resounded from the beast.

"To actually meet a soul swallowing beast here in Ice Hell, haha, we have some fate." Luo Feng smiled and descended. Landing on the snow, he smiled at the beast which was filled with killing intent, "Beast, I just entered Ice Hell. I wonder if you can explain to me the situation here in Ice Hell?"

"Arrogant human!" The beast howled and sprung forward.

Fast as lightning!

Within Ice Hell which had the powerful pressure, it was already much slower than before, however its current speed was still shocking.

"Hu." Luo Feng flapped his wings and easily dodged.

"I'm willing to chat with you, why fight it out?" Luo Feng laughed easily.

The beast however howled hoarsely and vanished.

"Teleportation?" Luo Feng squinted.

Behind him, the beast appeared once again and opened its huge mouth to bite him. However Luo Feng detected it and flapped his wings...stopping the bite.

"Ka!" The beast bit hard on the sha wu wings, feeling the force of the G grade metal.

"Soul blade!" Luo Feng turned to face the beast. His powerful willpower became a spirit energy blade, infusing it with the beast god presence, he slashed it straight at the beast's soul!

A simple soul attack!

Even though he wasn't exactly very proficient in soul attacks, his willpower and consciousness were indeed strong enough to control such moves with precision. Unleashing a powerful illusion may still be very difficult, but a simple soul attack wasn't that bad. Simply infusing the beast god presence in...even though his soul blade construction skills were considered crude, but his beast god

presence had reached an incredibly high level. His move wasn't weaker than a pinnacle emperor soul master's attack.

Weng! The beast was stunned immediately by the attack.

Luo Feng waved his left hand.

Six black balls shot out, hitting the stunned beast's body. Without any resistance, the first ball tore through its bones and muscles, the second one caused it to explode apart, while the others swirled within, dissipating the fragments that remained.

Hu!

The beast simply vanished.

"Vanished?" Luo Feng's expression changed. "He didn't regenerate or teleport, how did he just vanish? I didn't even use the Fei Mo poison." Teleporting required one to reform his body first. When a warrior was slashed into parts, the parts were unable to teleport on their own.

To vanish after being reduced to fragments usually meant one thing, the main body of the beast was far away. That way, even if it's god body was destroyed, the scattered undying energy had its imprint long ago, it would naturally return to its main body.

"Is this..."

"Doppelganger!" Luo Feng thought, "This is just one of its doppelgangers."

The soul swallowing beast had two natural abilities. The first was the terrifying attacking move soul swallow, the second one was its terrifying fleeing ability, doppelganger. The body formed from this ability...in terms of strength, was far from the main body. It was so weak it couldn't even use its first ability.

However, it at least knew the laws, as long as the main body did, so would the doppelganger!

...

After being ambushed once, Luo Feng continued forward. He didn't expect...that the soul swallowing beast would ambush him another two times.

The second time it had used a soul attack, with Luo Feng's terrifying willpower and the beast god howl, he easily withstood it. He didn't even need the tower pearl's help.

The third time, the beast used illusions, which was still ineffective.

Luo Feng used the same methods to deal with him, using the stars from star map, he easily killed the beast!

"Master, that beast is using his doppelgangers to attack you over and over, he's obviously testing your strength. If you aren't too much of a threat, his real body would probably show itself. If you are too strong...he would carefully avoid you, he sure is crafty." Ji Hong said within the world ring.

"Master didn't even show his strength or use the Fei Mo poison." Honed heart said.

Luo Feng brought two warriors within his world ring, the others all followed the golden horned beast's body.

Honed heart was a soul master.

Ji Hong carried the ancient clock. With the two combined...in dire times, they could easily change the outcome of the battle. When Luo Feng was planning how to steal the black metal board back then, he had considered what would happen if he was caught. Hence he left two warriors to protect his earth body. His earth body after all had no way to burn undying energy, this was the biggest difference between him and the other warriors.

Without burning undying energy, he could win against many.

The moment they burnt their undying energy, he would be disadvantaged.

"I'll patiently wait for him, let's see if he shows himself." Luo Feng continued to walk in the snow. He believed that there were other warriors around, "The green knight's words before and Da La Sha's warnings, they state that Ice Hell is terrifying, just which part of it is terrifying?"

Chapter 921: Path of Death

In the snow grounds over 100,000 km away from Luo Feng, a black silhouette lay hidden.

"Hehehe...this human can't seem to teleport, but he is still very strong. Even though my doppelgangers only have a portion of my strength, he killed them so easily. He's at least pinnacle emperor, it's better to let the other punks deal with this guy first." The silhouette vanished.

...

Luo Feng continued to walk unhurriedly, enjoying the scenery.

"That soul swallowing beast is not coming, I only showed a little of my strength and yet I scared him away. He sure is cautious." Luo Feng continued on. He had been walking in a straight line for close to ten million km, yet other than that beast, he hadn't discovered anyone else.

"Hm?" His eyes gleamed, in the distant ice mountain peak...there stood a silhouette.

The two of them stood 100,000 km away from each other. But with their vision, as long as there wasn't anything obstructing, they could easily see each other.

The silhouette turned to face him!

He had a huge god body covered in fur, and his vertical eyes stared straight at Luo Feng.

"Katu race." Luo Feng thought.

The Katu race were one of the subsidiary races under the demon race, they were renowned for their cold heartedness and ferocity. When Luo Feng confirmed the Katu warrior on the distant peak, he knew that a bloody fight was imminent.

Hua! The warriors instantly became a beam of light, leaving a

resplendent silhouette as he rushed straight at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng stood there and looked up at him rushing over, patiently waiting.

The two of them got closer and closer!

The Katu warrior's eyes were filled with madness and killing intent. This made Luo Feng display the same, "The warriors trapped in Ice Hell, why are all of them so direct in attacking their enemies immediately?"

Weng!

The Katu warrior unleashed space lockdown, making it impossible for both parties to teleport.

Luo Feng smiled within. This Katu warrior probably didn't know how to teleport, in truth, he himself couldn't either. Hence, there was no need for space lockdown at all.

"Human, die!" The warrior roared, "Either one of us will die today!"

Rumble!

A terrifying force rushed from the Katu warrior. Luo Feng who had been calm all this while was shocked, "Burning his undying body? He's mad. Even if he wanted to fight me to the death, he needn't have burnt his undying energy before even finding out my strength. Burning too much at once requires a long time to recover."

Xiu! Luo Feng flapped his wings and swiftly dodged the attack from the Katu warrior.

"Katu warrior, I haven't met you before, why have you burnt your undying energy without even knowing my strength? Even if you want to kill me, if I was weak, wouldn't you have wasted your energy?" Luo Feng communicated.

Hua!

A ferocious blood colored blade slashed through the air, Luo Feng dodged it easily.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Luo Feng used the sha wu wings to dodge over and over. This Katu warrior before him was about pinnacle emperor level, the moment he burnt his undying energy...Luo Feng had no way to match force with him. He could only dodge more and let him burn more of his energy.

"Even after burning my undying energy, my speed still cannot match yours?" The warrior seemed to be lost in his madness. "Human, if you are strong enough, fight me head on! Even if I die, let me die from a head on fight."

"Katu warrior, do you think I'm stupid?" Luo Feng easily dodged over and over.

The Katu warrior was incredibly powerful after burning his undying energy, but it was pointless. He couldn't even touch Luo Feng...if the warrior had heard of Blade River's name, he probably wouldn't have done something so stupid. But it was obvious the warriors locked in Ice Hell, probably didn't even know of Blade River.

"Haha..."

The Katu warrior suddenly looked up and laughed loudly, his laughter rippling in all directions like a shockwave.

He stood in mid air, not chasing anymore and laughed.

"Hahahahaha...hahaha..." He seemed mad. Even though he simply stood there and laughed, what shocked Luo Feng was that he continued burning his undying body, not stopping at all.

"Katu warrior." Luo Feng spoke.

"Hahaha...this is fate, it's fate." The Katu warrior looked up and laughed. "I've grown all this while. When I was young I was even a genius...until I became an emperor and got powerful enough. However I was trapped in Ice Hell after! The moment that

happened, I would never escape, spending the rest of eternity in here. My race has probably long forgotten about me, my loved ones are probably all dead, I guess only a few of my friends are alive."

"I cannot leave."

"Wasting so much time, and I still have to battle with all you punks, killing to survive. Haha, never relenting over a trillion eras. I cannot take it anymore. Old blind, Soul swallowing...you can all struggle, I'll be taking my leave first." His voice resounded in all directions.

The Katu warrior looked at the shocked Luo Feng, "Human, I wanted to die in a mad battle, I didn't expect to not even get that chance."

"Are you just giving up?" Luo Feng asked.

"What else can I do? Human...being in Ice Hell is the greatest torture." He shook his head. "Unless you have an absolute being in your race that favors you and will come take you away personally. Otherwise, there's no hope of ever getting out. My race has probably long forgotten about me."

"I'm leaving."

"Release."

He exploded his body and a huge sun was generated from the blast, as endless energies shot in all directions. He didn't even care about the human beside him, he was already lost in despair. As to whether the human survived the blast, he couldn't even be bothered. If he died, so be it, that would be a release for the human too.

...

Deep in the ice mountains.

The soul swallowing beast sat crossed legged, hearing the voice

that spread throughout Ice Hell, its fierce eyes shook with some hurt within.

"Old friend, are you just giving up?"

"If you wanted to die, why don't you die by my hands, that way I'd have a chance of leaving." The beast's hoarse voice resounded within the cave.

...

Over 1,000 km deep in a snow cave, a wriggling silhouette sat crossed legged. It had a human like head, his eyes were closed as he sighed, "He's free."

...

In a majestic palace deep in the oceans of Ice Hell.

"Another idiot has given up, good, good, good. The more the merrier, the more dead the better. That way my chances of leaving are higher. Go and die you idiots."

...

The many warriors locked for endless ages within Ice Hell all either felt hurt, laughed or were indifferent. They had different reactions, but no one was shocked, because this type of suicidal incidents had happened many times before.

The energies flowed madly about in mid air, Luo Feng gradually opened his wings that wrapped around him.

Floating in mid air, he looked at the world ring, weapons, armor etc that the Katu warrior left behind.

"Suicide?"

"Anyone able to reach emperor level should all have strong willpower? Which one doesn't have their own believes? To actually be forced to suicide." Luo Feng muttered. The words from the warrior before rang in his ears, he slowly began to understand why he did so.

"The Katu race, is a weak race. Even a strong demon warrior here cannot contact their race. Much less a subsidiary race like the Katu." Luo Feng said softly. "They don't have the virtual universe and have no way to make contact, they can only stay in here and suffer."

"Killing is the main thing in Ice Hell."

"After endless time, solitude, trapped and being unable to make contact. The endless killing and battles. One year, a hundred, 10,000 years...he finally crumbled within." Luo Feng thought. This was the battle against solitude and time. Against time, if one was forever in solitude, even an emperor would crumble.

"What's going on?"

Luo Feng was indeed shocked by the suicide of the Katu warrior, he no longer had the patience to walk about slowly, immediately becoming a beam of light and flying in the skies.

Xiu!

He shot across the skies.

He constantly recalled and pondered what happened before. The more he thought about it, the more shocked he was, "I was able to even withstand the life or death inheritance back then, but that was only over 6,000 years, yet every second and year became increasingly difficult. However, I stuck to my beliefs! If I was in the same situation as that Katu before, knowing my loved ones were long gone, would I be able to persevere for trillions of eras in Ice Hell?"

He asked himself.

Could he do it?

"Yes!"

"Definitely!" He nodded.

He would definitely leave and find a way to revive his loved ones.

If he couldn't, he would take revenge on the green knight, as it was the knight that took away his precious time with his family.

"Strength, the green knight is strong, who is able to lock so many powerful warriors in here for his game." Luo Feng thought. "If any of them managed to become a knight in here, the green knight would probably immediately eliminate him."

...

Luo Feng flew in the skies, below him was an endless snowy plain, with ice mountains all around. He finally saw a transparent huge ice tablet.

The tablet was majestic, and on it carved were demon language words.

"No wonder..." He read the words and muttered. "What a vicious green knight!"

Chapter 922: Cang Jiang Clan

The characters etched on the ice tablet were divulging the only living chance within all of Ice Hell.

Since the last massacre, Ice Hell has detained 12,000 undying of the barbarian race, each of whom has an identification tag. Anyone who can gather 10,000 tags will be able to leave Ice Hell safely, whereas those who can't will be killed. This is what it means by 'massacre'. There was a massacre before, and there was one powerful man of the human race left the Ice Hell in one piece.

"Barbarian races!" uttered Luo Feng.

This is your only chance to survive. Fight and take others' tags if you want to get out! And only one of you will be able to make it!

Each character contained an incredible and terrific godly power, and that stress struck the surroundings continuously like a billow. Even knights couldn't subdue Luo Feng, let alone the characters left by them.

"How cruel this green knight is," Luo Feng whispered, "by giving a glimpse of hope to the detainees while depriving them of all the other chances. Only one out of the 12 undying can get out, whereas all others will be killed! The strong are unreconciled to surrender to the fate, and they'll fight. That's how it came to be one slaughter after another, full of maliciousness. And that's why there were breakdowns after constant failures, which led to suicides."

The purple knight and the green knight had detained those undying who adventured among Ice Hell stars in eternity or souls with some special skills. It was likely that all the powerful who had some solid background or were valued by their clans had been taken away by the superior races, whereas those who were detained here had no connections.

"The clans forgot about them. The only thing they could do was

to struggle. Only one will win." Luo Feng sighed in his heart. "And I can't even know for sure that the one who got out actually survived or was killed by the purple knight the moment he stepped outside."

Ice Hell couldn't detain the real geniuses—geniuses like Ke Di, Luo Feng, Seven Blade Emperor, and Life Fall Emperor, who were especially valued by their own clans and had emergency help. The supreme creatures of the clans, like the masters of the universe, would come pick them up. The purple knight and the green knight didn't have the guts to disobey the masters of the universe.

"Master Mountain Sitting Guest," Luo Feng murmured, "it's not typical of you to give me such a dangerous but useless task to steal the black metal from here. Ice hell is what you want me to experience. You want to let me feel the struggles of the powerful? You want to make clear to me the fundamental rule of the universe—the law of the jungle?" Luo Feng continued muttering to himself.

*****

Luo Feng stood in front of the ice tablet silently.

On the snowfield 70,000 kilometers away from Luo Feng, following a noise that sounded like "Chi, Chi, Chi," a transparent leaf gradually appeared from within the snow, facing the direction of Luo Feng.

"Human. It's human. The only human in Ice Hell. He must have the machine to connect to the virtual universe, possibly an anonymous connector."

The powerful one deep in the snow was thrilled because the previous soul-swallowing beast was reluctant to fight Luo Feng, while the dead powerful one of the Ka Tu Clan wanted nothing but death.

"Anonymous account. The virtual universe. The virtual universe that belongs to a human!"

The powerful one deep in the snow couldn't suppress his desire. It was too lonely for him to stay in Ice Hell while the anonymous connector used by humans could be used by them as well. To the powerful ones in Ice Hell, it was definitely a treasure worth fighting for, as it could placate their "loneliness."

"Kill. Kill him. I want to connect to the virtual universe."

A blurry, transparent figure 80 meters tall suddenly jumped out of the snow. Following his teleportation, it vanished in the air.

*****

Luo Feng was still standing in front of the enormous ice tablet when a strange, 80-meter tall creature resembling a 30-story skyscraper suddenly appeared behind him. It was covered with leaves, which were transparent like glass. Its thick vines held a long, black chain. With a call that sounded like "Hua La La," the black chain came winding toward Luo Feng like a fiercely dancing snake.

Lou Feng opened his wings, leaving a locus with twists, and flew behind the creature. The chain fell to the snowfield instead of winding around Luo Feng. The land trembled with chasms, but the ice tablet remained intact.

"Human!" The transparent creature roared. "It's useless to run! No matter how fast you are! Hu! Hu! Hu!"

The black chain reached its speed limit with a halo around it. At the time, Luo Feng saw nothing but countless illusions of the chain. At this point, Luo Feng could but admit that when the opposite side was giving its best, his flight and arm speeds were, indeed, relatively slower.

Heng!

Six black balls with fuzzy purple halos appeared around Luo Feng's palms. He threw them out randomly.

Howl!

The law engravings on the six black balls became a plethora of golden threads, triggering the universe origin law all at once.

Suddenly, a phantom of a several-hundred-meter-long beast god appeared in the sky, storming toward the transparent creature with its attacking claw. The creature wasn't careless, and it controlled its chain to defend against the beast.

Ping!

The claw of the beast god whacked the black chain away. The chain fell onto the snowfield afar, cracking the whole field, and the chain slipped into the depths of the field.

Howl!

The beast god was bellowing, beating the creature's body with its claw directly.

Shua!

The transparent creature vanished and dodged the attack. It reappeared behind Luo Feng and tried to grab him with its thick arm under the leaves.

"Space Lock!" Luo Feng turned on "the arm of locking sky" on his armor, after which the fluctuations in the space stopped suddenly. The characters of the aboriginals living on Yan Ji land were looming in the air, and at the same time, Luo Feng vibrated his wings and pulled a move from Moon Policy. His wings cut like blades.

The transparent creature felt its arm being slashed by a bizarre strength.

Hua!

A transparent arm fell onto the snow from the sky.

"Die!" Luo Feng looked at the creature from afar, and the beast god was marching toward it, roaring.

The living being brayed and tried to escape by going

underground. Meanwhile, it waved its chain to stop the beast god. However, Luo Feng's power, with his spiritual force, could match that of the top of emperor-level undying, and together with the star map, even the best emperor-level monsters were not his match —not to mention this transparent creature which just entered the apex of emperor level.

Ping!

The beast god whacked the black chain again and grabbed it with its claw.

Slice!

The claw thrust into its body, with the six balls covered with Fei Mo venom injected inside.

"No!" the creature screamed with great despair.

It was one of the least powerful ones among the survivors in Ice Hell, but it was still extremely resistant to harm. For one, it had the power of teleportation, and it had a gigantic body. Even with his body burning rapidly, he could persist much longer than other creatures. However, half of its godly body was destroyed the moment the six black balls went through it.

Shuh! Shuh! Shuh!

The six black balls turned into six traces of light and flew back to Luo Feng's hands, after which, they disappeared.

"Human," the creature said as it looked to Luo Feng.

"You should know that half of your body is gone," said Luo Feng, and although he said it this way, he was awed by the creature's vitality. After all, the six poisonous pearls could only destroy 30 percent of the limit emperors, where it damaged barely 50 percent of this more fragile peak emperor.

Luo Feng looked at the transparent creature. "You can only use one-tenth of your strength now," he said. "And you're not even my

match."

It gazed at Luo Feng in the snow. "Human, say whatever you want to say. I admit that I'm not your equal and you're faster than me, so there's no chance for me to escape. I'm all yours, now. But you have to understand, hardly anyone is afraid of death in Ice Hell. I'll self-destruct if I'm rendered with no choice."

"I just saw one that exploded," Luo Feng said, smiling faintly, "so don't try to blow yourself up, as it won't pose any danger to me. However, I do have something to ask you now, and if you answer honestly, I can spare your life."

"Spare my life?" The creature found it impossible to believe.

"I always keep my promises." Luo Feng landed on the ground and said, "I've already given you a chance. Don't you waste it."

"Ask, human," it responded.

"What kind of creatures are you?" Luo Feng asked him pointedly. "I know almost every creature in the universe." He wondered how there was another species he didn't know of. If it were a "special life," it would make sense. However, it didn't fight like one.

"I'm from the Cang Jing Clan," the creature answered, "and it's one of the botanic creatures. But I met with a mishap when adventuring in the secret area of the universe, and I turned into this, after mutation."

"Mutation?" Luo Feng was dazed.

Actually, black warriors who used blood river crystals and therefore had their genes and body shapes changed went through a process similar to mutation. Nine-dome tome, for example, could help genes experience one great leap after another. But comparatively, it was more refined, so it didn't leave any visible change on the outside.

"I'll ask you again," Luo Feng said. "Why did you come and try to kill me without knowing you'd succeed?"

"Human," the creature of the Cang Jiang Clan answered with a deep voice, "you should know that although most of the creatures trapped in Ice Hell have a strong desire for survival, they've lost their prudence after being here for such a long time. To some extent, they might lust for death. That's why they'll fight the strangers without knowing their power. Because there's no downside to it. Don't compare the circumstances of the outside world to those of Ice Hell. There are extremely powerful creatures in Ice Hell, and some of them are special. All of them are able to survive the infinite time. Peak emperors like me don't even stand a chance, and we're struggling because we don't want to give in."

The creature looked at Luo Feng. "As for me," it continued, "I came to kill you because I want that anonymous Scanner. I want to sense the virtual universe. I want to feel the world outside."

"Scanner?" Luo Feng was bewildered.

"Loneliness!" the creature said, staring at Luo Feng. "Grappling between life and death for countless eras with no end in sight. Can you even imagine how luxurious it is to enter the virtual universe?"

Chapter 923: Ten Emperors

Luo Feng nodded after hearing what it said. He could understand how much those powerful ones who were detained for countless eras wanted to enter the "virtual universe," as he saw and reunited with his family when he was adventuring in the universe. The virtual universe made Luo Feng feel as if it were reality, and he believed that those detained here had the same desire.

"Do you have an anonymous Scanner?" the creature of Cang Jiang Clan suddenly asked.

Luo Feng was stupefied.

"I'll do anything for you if you let me enter the virtual universe and get in touch with the outside," the creature continued.

"I don't have one," Luo Feng said, shaking his head.

The creature was left in despair.

Luo Feng didn't show any empathy because he knew that nobody could ever know that he had the Scanner. If they did, he would become the common enemy to everyone in Ice Hell. And those powerful ones would conspire to attack him. Luo Feng was not that stupid.

"Let me ask you one more thing." Luo Feng looked at the giant creature in front of him. "Do you all believe that you can make your way out if you get 10,000 tags?"

"I do! Of course, I do!" The creature looked more vital. "The green knight said it long before, in public, that he would not play us. And anyway, we have no choice but to trust him."

Luo Feng frowned. "How was Ice Hell in the past eras? How many have survived? How powerful are they?"

"Killing. Backstabbing. Intrigue. One can do anything for that slight trace of hope." The creature gave an ear-piercing laugh.

"Humans. The powerful ones in Ice Hell were much more ruthless than those outside. Some are even willing to perish together."

Luo Feng recalled the powerful one of the Ka Tu Clan and how it had blown itself up. It did have the intention of fighting Luo Feng and had wanted to perish with him. However, it couldn't even touch him and didn't even care whether or not Luo Feng was beside it when it committed suicide.

"As for powers," the creature went on. "the potential of the powerful ones could be stimulated under extreme pressure. Since the infinite era, 860 powerful ones have survived."

"860?" Luo Feng sighed because it meant that 11,000 undying were dead.

"Everyone was pushed to the edge," the creature said. "And that's why those who come from a strong bloodline have an advantage. Among the 860 survivors, peak emperors and high-level emperors were the least powerful, and high-level emperors can do nothing but hide. As for peak emperors, they have the guts to fight, but they're in the bottom 800. Also, there are 50 limit emperors. On top of that, there are ten who are almost as powerful as invincible emperors and five who are, indeed, invincible emperors. Let me show you something."

It waved its enormous arm, after which, a huge ice tablet fell from the sky. Luo Feng took a look. It was ten-meter tall ice tablet, on which were thickly dotted demon-race characters

"This is the ranking—the ranking of the powerful ones in Ice Hell." The Cang Jiang creature groaned. "It was too lonely and dull to stay in Ice Hell, and it was impossible to practice at ease because you can be attacked at any time. During the infinite amount of time spent here, the ranking is one of the few things that pique our interest. One of the invincible emperors, Sky Wolf, ranked everyone according to their strengths."

"How is it possible to rank everyone?" Luo Feng said, scowling.

"When two are equal, it's difficult to tell which one will prevail in a fight."

"Of course, we know," said the creature. "However, the ranking by Sky Wolf is credible, and it's based on all the combat that has taken place in Ice Hell. Although they're hopeless, getting into the top 100 or top 50 is an improvement for them."

"Don't you think it's pathetic?"

"We're so lonesome that we're fixated on the ranking." The creature laughed with its body trembling.

Luo Feng looked at the ranking on the tablet.

"It is good of you to defeat me," the creature continued. "However, those terrifically powerful ones are very strong. Neither the five invincible emperors nor the ten that come close are easy to deal with. And you, as a newcomer, will surely be subjected to one sneak attack after another. Unless you can defeat the limit emperors and prove yourself, you will endure it forever."

Luo Feng nodded. "Go," he said.

"You're really letting me go?" The creature couldn't help asking.

Luo Feng looked at him. "I'll change my mind if you don't."

"I'll give you a suggestion, human," said the creature. "Don't have any form of kindness here, or you'll only end up with misery."

The creature's voice echoed in the sky while he escaped using teleportation. Luo Feng had already undone the "space."

Luo Feng looked at the tablet on the ground and remembered everything on it with a glance. He then put it into the world ring. As for the advice from the creature, he didn't take it to heart. The powerful didn't change their personalities just because of a line from others.

"Creature of Ka Tu Clan, ranked 732," Luo Feng mumbled. "Creature of Cang Jiang Clan, ranked 611. Soul-Swallowing Beast,

ranked 102."

He realized that the creatures of the Ka Tu Clan and the Cang Jiang Clan, whom he had defeated, were ranked at the bottom, whereas the soul-swallowing beast was ranked high because of its gift.

*****

Luo Feng had a clear picture of Ice Hell by reading the passage on the tablet. In the center of Ice Hell was Ice Sea. There were five districts in Ice Hell: Ice Sea, Eastern Ice Hell, Western Ice Hell, Northern Ice Hell, and Southern Ice Hell. The five invincible emperors had their own "manors" and would fight each other only under uncommon circumstances.

"Three of the invincible emperors are special creatures, Luo Feng muttered to himself. "One of the remaining two is from the Ci An Clan, the other is this Sky Wolf from the royal demon race."

The golden-horned beasts were ten times stronger than humans. The bodies of human peak emperors were 100,000 times more forceful than those of sector lords, whereas the bodies of the beast were 1 million times more forceful.

Nevertheless, the weakest special creatures could match the level of golden-horned beasts, not to mention the ones in Ice Hell. The weakest special species was 60 times as forceful than human beings, and the strongest was 200 times as forceful. Putting aside other amplitude scrolls, the strongest one out of the three peak emperors was 20 million times more forceful than sector lords. How unbelievable!

The Ci An Clan was a scarce race in the universe and was comparable to the Mo Sha Clan. They were ten times more forceful than humans. Sky Wolf, on the other hand, was the least gifted one and was six times more forceful than humans. In short, the five invincible emperors were highly gifted, per se, and after an infinite amount of time of torture, every one of them had

tremendous powers.

"Three special creatures survived Ice Hell, and all of them became invincible." Luo Feng sighed. "Special creatures are indeed almighty. The constitution of human bodies is comparatively weaker, and it was more difficult for them to reach the invincible level."

Luo Feng gradually realized the disadvantages facing the human races in the universe. Humans were barely mediocre when it came to body constitution. However, a few of the supreme beings that could shake the whole universe came from the human race.

*****

Luo Feng built an underground residence in the snow beside the Ice Sea. He was practicing there temporarily.

"According to the ranking on the tablet, each of the invincible emperors is as powerful as my teacher, True Yan Emperor," Luo Feng whispered. "I'm not capable enough to get 10,000 tags, but it's a good thing. I'll treat it as a chance to steel myself, after which I'll defeat them one by one. Only then will I walk out of Ice Hell. As for purple knight, it doesn't matter whether it means to let me go or not. If it wants to toy with me, I'll summon my teacher, Burgrave of Chaos City. I'll make it lose everything."

Luo Feng closed his eyes and cleared his mind. While everyone else was busy trying to get out of here, Luo Feng would treat it as a practice field.

*****

A three-meter-high red creature covered with bony spurs marched through the snow. It wore a scarlet mask, and the 10,000-square-kilometer area was engulfed in fire under the hefty law. Everywhere it touched evaporated.

However, when it walked by, the water in the boiling lakes coagulated into snow under the effects of Ice Hell, as if nothing had

happened.

It stopped and looked down.

"Footprints," it said. "A stranger's footsteps."

The voice had echoes in its chest.

"There is a stranger in Ice Hell," it said. "How reckless was he that he dared not to erase his footsteps? Is it confidence?"

It strode. The snow it passed by turned into boiling lakes, and the entire law field was under its detection.

Eventually, it reached the shoreline of Ice Sea.

"Hong!"

A silver shadow jumped up into the sky. He opened his wings and floated in the air, overlooking everything beneath.

The barbarian looked up at Luo Feng and smirked. That giant eye was filled with madness.

"Human!" it bellowed.

"Bone Emperor, ten of the limit emperors," Luo Feng said, looking down upon it with this information in his mind. "Ranked 11."

Five invincible emperors and the ten top limit emperors were the 15 most powerful creatures in Ice Hell. Other than those five invincible emperors, the ten limit emperors weren't scared of anything.

"Human! Human!" it growled, growing madder by the second.

"Bone Emperor!" Luo Feng's voice passed over from the above.

The sense of war and killing intent permeated the air.

Chapter 924: Secret Techniques

The fights during the infinite time in Ice Hell stripped away the hopes of the lowly ones like "Creature of Cang Jiang Clan" and "Creature of Ka Tu Clan," leading some to even want to commit suicide. However, creatures like "Soul-Swallowing Beast" didn't have any death wishes. As for the ten rampant emperors who basically ruled Ice Hell, each of them was fraught with ambition.

Although they were still at a disadvantage compared to the five invincible emperors, it was possible for them to catch up and get out.

Fight! They fought excessively to improve themselves.

Bone Emperor was filled with hostility and gazing at Luo Feng. "You didn't run away. Good for you."

"The ten emperors' fame is widespread," Luo Feng said. "If other creatures in Ice Hell run into you, they would indeed run away. As for me, I won't run if I'm not defeated by you." Luo Feng was floating in the air. "I'll run like hell if you defeat me."

"You won't have a chance, by then," Bone Emperor said in a deep voice echoing in his chest. The space around it was frozen, thus neither of them could teleport.

Hong!

Bone Emperor vanished and rushed at Luo Feng like a beam of light.

"Hua!" Luo Feng cried, vibrating his wings, leaving a locus with twists. At the same time, eight black balls appeared around his hands. He threw them randomly with the law engravings on the balls triggered. Innumerable golden threads bustled, and a beast god came into being.

Bone Emperor didn't scratch anything. It turned around and looked at Luo Feng and the beast god from afar, smiling as it said,

"Fast enough. And he's a controller. Good."

"How!" The beast god marched toward it, roaring.

Bone Emperor laughed furiously.

Peng!

A blurry reflection of the whip clashed with Bone Emperor's claw, creating a shockwave that tore the surroundings apart. Bone Emperor was blown away by the force, and the beast god became indistinct for a while before solidifying again.

Seeing the snow turn back to its original shape, Bone Emperor looked up at Luo Feng and said, "Human, now I admit that you're qualified to see my real fight form."

His voice was like thunder reverberating in the air. At the same time, Bone Emperor suddenly even more unbelievable. His bone spurs contracted into his body, and his entire body was heightened. The color of its body changed from red to white. The moment it stopped transforming, it became silvery white, covered with armor made of twisted bones.

"This is your fighting form, Bone Emperor? Great." Luo Feng shot him a sharp look. "Take this!"

It was the limit of will. The strong will was guiding his conscience, and the beast god became more distinct under spiritual force, marching toward Bone Emperor. However, Bone Emperor stood with confidence and only waved its right claw when the beast god's tail slashed toward it.

Slice!

The right claw tore the space apart, whereas the tail of the beast god retreated before whipping incessantly.

"Sneaky guy." Bone Emperor said as it rushed toward Luo Feng.

Its claws became phantoms. There was a pair of gloves on its claws, and that pair was the only treasure it had. If there was

anything different between the powerful ones from inside Ice Hell and those from the outside, the number of their treasures was a clear indicator.

Like Bone Emperor, it could get several treasures given its status. However, it only got one here. Nevertheless, after the struggle between life and death and the countless pressures, Bone Emperor was able to make the best use of the gloves. Although it had only one treasure, it could wield the power that resembled that of the several treasures combined owned by the powerful ones outside.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

Bone Emperor faced the beast god, and its claws became countless phantoms, making attacks continuously.

Peng!

The tail of the beast god was finally cracked, and the eight black balls were destroyed.

"How mighty!" Luo Feng muttered. He was stupefied by how Bone Emperor had dashed and destroyed the beast god in its fight form. The power of Bone Emperor was at "Hei Ti emperor" level, and this form of madness was even more terrifying.

"Die, human!" Bone Emperor flew directly at Luo Feng the moment it defeated the beast god.

Heng!

Luo Feng shook his wings and escaped.

"Bone Emperor, I admire your power," said Luo Feng. "I'm not your match, and therefore, I'll take off now. I'll fight you next time."

Luo Feng had already flown away by the time his voice reached Bone Emperor. It stopped halfway and growled, seeing how fast Luo Feng was. It looked at Luo Feng's silhouette from afar.

"This human being is indeed extremely fast," it said. "Faster than

the five invincible emperors. It seems there will be another superpower in Ice Hell."

Even though Bone Emperor had barely fought with Luo Feng, it could immediately tell Luo Feng's power. He was a little stronger than average emperors, while he had the fastest teleportation speed in Ice Hell. Such a human being could certainly post a threat to the ten most powerful limit emperors.

"There's going to be more fun," said Bone Emperor. "More fun in Ice Hell."

Bone Emperor was pleased. It didn't care for the dull times spent in Ice Hell, and it wanted some creatures with special power here to spice things up.

*****

After fleeing from the space range, Ji Hong Emperor appeared deep in the snow and teleported Luo Feng to eastern Ice Hell. It built an underground residence deep in the snow.

"I underestimated the creatures in Ice Hell." Luo Feng recalled the battle with wine in his hand. "I thought those creatures weren't that powerful when detained in a place where they had only gradually grown stronger. I thought they didn't have treasures, and even if they did, that only the most powerful ones would have one or two. But I was wrong."

The power of one treasure can match that of ten if it's properly used, Luo Feng thought.

The powerful could only concentrate on one of the treasures they had in a combat.

"Also, the powerful ones in Ice Hell are different from those outside. They had more pressure and were pressed more harshly, which forced them to improve themselves no matter what. If they could acquire a single treasure, they would study it thoroughly and make the best use of it." Luo Feng kept contemplating. "Although

the powerful outside will also study their treasures, they won't put up so much effort."

"Bone Emperor... Its body constitution barely enters the threshold of average emperor. However, it has a treasure that is the perfect match for its claws. The movement of its claws and body perfectly coordinate with each other."

Luo Feng believed it was the secret technique invented by Bone Emperor because it was impossible to reach such a level by studying others.

Luo Feng nodded his head while contemplating. The powerful in Ice Hell concentrated more on themselves and were more capable of wielding the power of treasures. The powerful outside had more treasures and moves. This was the key difference between them

"I was wrong," said Luo Feng. "Ever since I created the first move of Moon Policy and left Chaos City, I haven't studied any secret techniques." Luo Feng sighed. "Not until today do I realize how important it is to have a series of secret techniques that correspond to the treasure. My treasure, the star map, is mighty, and I need to come up with a series of secret techniques to better utilize it."

Moon Policy was the law of blade, which was the combat method of Sha Wu Wing. After all, the golden-horned beast that Luo Feng owned did close combat, and Sha Wu Wing couldn't be wasted. Hence, he must keep up designing Moon Policy. However, Luo Feng needed another set of secret techniques that were fit for a spirit reader.

"Let's begin," Luo Feng muttered. "Treasures, genes, amplitude, and secret techniques. Some of them focus on the outer body and some on the inner. I don't need to train the outer body now because I can't gain any process in a short time, so I'll train my inner capabilities. The star map can only be better utilized if I can come up with secret techniques."

The star map was the most suitable treasure for Luo Feng!

Although the tower pearl, the star map, and Sha Wu Wing were all invaluable treasures, they had different uses. Sha Wu Wing was used to escape, where the tower pearl was for soul stabilization. As for the star map, it was used for attack. Sha Wu Wing couldn't help much if Luo Feng wanted to increase his combat capabilities. However, the star map could wield tremendous power if it was fully utilized. Precious few of the invincible emperors had treasures for attack.

*****

Luo Feng began his practice deep in the snow and connected to the virtual universe. He experimented in the virtual universe with his new moves over and over again. He didn't need to simulate the star map; all he needed to do was get a weapon with spiritual force that was in the same class.

"He paid attention to spiritual-force weapons now." The master of Chaos City had doubts, even while providing one competitor after another for Luo Feng.

Luo Feng had been using blades before. However, the master of Chaos City didn't criticize Luo Feng because he knew that Luo Feng would only learn a lesson after suffering losses. What he didn't know was that Luo Feng was most suitable for spiritual-force weapons—and would be even more so when he became an undying.

Chapter 925: Searching for Humans

News spread in Ice Hell that Luo Feng was trying to create a series of secret moves for the star map using the virtual universe.

"How can I be lying about it?" gossiped one. "The combat between the human and Bone Emperor was incredible, and the energy wave made me watch it from afar. I saw it with my own eyes, and everything I have told you is true."

"It's too outrageous," replied another. "You're saying that the human is able to teleport himself ten times faster than Bone Emperor and is the fastest one in Ice Hell? The five invincible emperors in Ice Hell all possess extraordinary skills, and three of them are special creatures. How can they be slower than this human?"

"This is the truth!" The one who shared the news was irritated.

"I'm not saying that I don't believe you. We've been taking care of each other like siblings, and that's how we have survived until now in Ice Hell. But I just can't believe he can be that fast. It's just preposterous and too terrific to be convincing."

"I could feel the wave from the combat," said another. "I flew out of the sea and watched it stealthily. This is what I saw."

"Come on. At least make yourself sound more reasonable, even if you're making stuff up."

Ice Hell was not an excessively enormous place, and lots of creatures hiding in the icebergs, beneath the snow, or deep within the Ice Sea had been watching furtively when then sensed the wave, which was how the news began. However, only the stories told by the top beings were believed.

Nevertheless, everything changed after Bone Emperor complimented the human and said he was the fastest in Ice Hell. The story became much more convincing when it came from Bone

Emperor's mouth. Besides, Bone Emperor wouldn't lie, considering how full of itself it was.

*****

Ten years later...

One of the five invincible emperors, Sky Wolf, posted an updated version of the rankings in Ice Hell, and the human newcomer was ranked 18! Apparently, Sky Wolf thought highly of the human, which was why he had ranked him at 18 after the mere three fights Luo Feng had. In the profile for Luo Feng, it said, "Speedy."

If the rumors were favorable to the human newcomer initially, the rumors that followed were not so much.

"That human must possess an anonymous account to connect to the virtual universe."

"He's the only human in Ice Hell, and he is definitely able to connect to the virtual universe by himself. He must also have a high social status, given his powers, not to mention that he's a spirit reader who can control some slaves, and he needs to use an anonymous account in the virtual universe to accomplish that."

These rumors were logical and convincing. The virtual universe? An anonymous account? These things were already fairly attractive to the creatures in Ice Hell. They were patient, however, thanks to the time they had spent here, and they did not act on their intentions at first.

After a while, some creatures started to look for Luo Feng in private, but only a considerably small portion of them actually had the guts to challenge him, since they knew how strong he was.

Only a few of them could actually find Luo Feng.

"Why can't I find him?"

"Where is he hiding at?"

"Why can't we find him? Ice Hell is not that big of a place, and

we've searched every inch of it."

The several powerful creatures looking for Luo Feng were a little irritated. Theoretically, it should have been easy for them to use godly power to find him. What they didn't know was that Luo Feng owned a highly developed "micro-detector" that could completely hide his information. There were a couple of other creatures that owned the micro-detectors, but those were more primitive than that of Luo Feng. They just could not find him.

*****

A strong creature in Northern Ice Hell known as Silver Eye lived at the peak of an iceberg, where a splendid palace was built.

Silver Eye ranked second in all of Ice Hell and was one of the five invincible emperors. His eyes were closed most of the time. However, if he opened his eyes and someone was spotted, that creature was doomed.

"Virtual universe?" On the throne of the palace sat a 30-meter tall god in white battle armor. He had a giant pair of slanted eyes, and his entire body was vibrating, which emanated invisible waves that affected time.

Two emperors, manipulated mentally by Silver Eye, groveled on the ground before the throne. Nobody wanted to be a slave due to despair in Ice Hell, so the only way was mind control.

"Master, according to the information, nobody saw that human possessing an anonymous account," said the first slave. "However, he is a spirit reader, which mean it's highly likely that he has a device to connect to the virtual universe."

"I think so too, master," the second slave spoke up.

"I want to see this human," Silver Eye declared.

"Master, nobody has been able to find him."

"He excels at hiding himself."

"Oh?" The enormous silhouette marched down from the throne and said, "Then I'll go look for him myself. It's been a long time since I last left Northern Ice Hell, but it's well worth it to acquire the anonymous account and placate my loneliness."

He then walked out of the palace and started to search for Luo Feng.

Although Silver Eye was ranked the second in Ice Hell, it was difficult to tell which one of the five invincible emperors was the strongest because, for a significant amount of time, each of them had focused on occupying a single district. As for Silver Eye, he was good at time law and was a special creature. Therefore Luo Feng's speed was nothing to him. Speed was useless in front of time stop. He left his palace only because he was sure that Luo Feng wouldn't get away.

Silver Eye began to look for Luo Feng without concealing the news. Incredible to all the creatures in Ice Hell was that even Silver Eye could not find the human.

*****

Inside his cave in Eastern Ice Hell, Luo Feng's micro-detector had been on stealth zone the whole time. He had changed his own detector to the micro-detector worth tens of billions of mixed elements with the huge amount of fortunes he had earned in the outer-sector battlefield. Luo Feng intended it to be his life-saving straw, so naturally, he was willing to purchase the top-tier one.

Luo Feng sat in the hall with his legs crossed and his mind connected to the virtual universe. Inside the practice field of the virtual universe, he did battle.

Howl!

The giant beast was entrenched in the sky with its mouth breathing fire toward Luo Feng.

"Tail of beast god, concentration!"

There were 160 golden pearls with intricate engravings floating around Luo Feng. They flew out under Luo Feng's control like traces of light and became tens of thousands of golden threads. Suddenly, a 1,000-meter-long beast god appeared in the sky.

This beast god was nothing like the one under Beast God Soldier. Beast God Soldier had six moves, which were all invented by Xi Luo Duo. Once they were exercised, the phantom of the beast god became real and started to evolve. When the sixth move was exercised, the phantom became almost indistinguishable from the real beast god.

The phantom created by Luo Feng, however, was completely different. The phantom looked pretty vague and blurry except for the tail, which was made of hard, bony scales. It looked exactly like the tail of the real beast god.

"Xi Luo Duo had never seen the real beast god sculpture," Luo Feng murmured, "whereas I own it and am able to see each engraving on the scale. My golden-horned beast avatar has been studying the engravings on the tail for 100 years, and my secret move focuses on the tail. All the other parts of the body were illusory but the tail. Xi Luo Duo wasn't wrong. He never owned a beast god sculpture, so he needed to improve the phantom as a whole gradually. I, however, actually have it, and thus I'm able to concentrate the spiritual force in one place.

Howl!

The scorpion beast engulfed in fire trembled and marched towards the beast god. The beast god marched toward it roaring.

Hong!

They clashed in the sky, and the beast god's head and claws became vapor. After the attack of the scorpion, it condensed into the head phantom again, with its scale-covered tail authentic and ready to move.

Ping!

It was rapid as lightning. It hit the scorpion beast right on its head, which burst open. Its whole godly body trembled before turning into dust.

"Done!" Luo Feng was pleased.

A person in a golden cape appeared in the sky. Luo Feng turned to him and greeted him politely, "Teacher."

He was somehow confused because he had gone to the palace in thunder island to greet his teacher after he created Moon Policy. But this time, the castellan of Chaos City came to the practice field himself.

"Your secret move to control your spirit weapon is as good as your blade move, now," The castellan complimented.

Luo Feng listened quietly.

"However, real battles are different from battles in the virtual universe," the castellan continued. "Fight ten creatures and come see me again."

"Yes, teacher," Luo Feng answered with great respect. He also wanted to try his new moves.

"Go," the castellan said.

Luo Feng saluted to the castellan before leaving the virtual universe.

The castellan shook his head. "Warriors and spirit readers are different. Even though he studied the beast god, he did not concentrate on a single move, as every other powerful one does. Every powerful one does this, no matter how powerful they are. He shouldn't have tried both schools. Only after he's defeated will he learn."

The castellan then disappeared.

Chapter 926: Hit the Light-Racing Star

In Eastern Ice Hell, deep inside the snow, Luo Feng stood up with joy and laughed.

"I finally came up with the first move after 100 years."

"Congratulations, master," Honed Heart Emperor replied with respect.

"Master has improved quite a bit," Ji Hong Emperor said. "And now, master can kill more creatures and take more tags in Ice Hell. You are more likely to collect 10,000 tags now."

"I don't let you two out just to flatter me," Luo Feng laughed. "I want you two to give me some advice."

"Advice?" Honed Heart Emperor and Ji Hong Emperor looked at each other.

"I created the top move 'Moon Policy,' which is for close combat. Now that I've created one more series for a spiritual-force weapon, what name do you think I should use?" Luo Feng asked.

He had vetoed lots of other names before settling on Moon Policy. It was difficult to come up with an appropriate name.

"Since it is a series for a spiritual-force weapon," Honed Heart Emperor said, "and master is using stars, and you created it in Ice Hell, why doesn't master call it 'Star Hell'?"

"No, that's no good," Ji Hong Emperor said. "Ice Hell is only a temporary habitat for master, but these secret techniques will follow master, and their fame will be spread when master achieves success and wins recognition. Ice Hell can't even come close. From my perspective, I reckon 'Beast God' is more appropriate, as master is following the path of the beast god and able to form a beast god by wielding the spiritual-force weapon. Although Beast God sounds a bit reckless, it shows master's aim to achieve the beast god level. Sometimes, it's okay to be overbearing. The name Beast God is a

given."

Luo Feng kept shaking his head.

******

While Ji Hong Emperor and Honed Heart Emperor were giving advice, Luo Feng was also contemplating. One name came up after another. Some were mighty while some were conservative. However, it was almost impossible to satisfy Luo Feng.

Eventually, Luo Feng settled on a name that was simple and ordinary but fit his criteria.

"I'll call it '10,000-Star Sermon Map'!" There was a trace of expectation in Luo Feng's eyes. His secret techniques were revealing his Dao, and there were only 10,000 stars in Star Tower. According to Mountain Sitting Guest, Luo Feng could only exercise ten of them. The name 10,000-Star Sermon Map represented Luo Feng's ambition: to exercise all the stars. It was not necessary to explain the inclusion of the word 'Sermon.'

"The first move is speedy," he said. "I'll call it 'Hit the Light-Racing Star.'"

Luo Feng came up with this name pretty quickly. The first move of 10,000-Star Sermon Map: Hit the Light-racing Star.

It had only taken Luo Feng 100 years to create this move. In contrast, Luo Feng had spent 1,000 years coming up with Galaxy on the Sky. There were two reasons why he had spent such a shorter length of time on the new move. Firstly, Luo Feng was on a higher level now. Secondly, the move 10,000-Star Sermon Map was derived from the first chapter of Nan Shen Seven Moves, together with the conception of the beast god. Also, Luo Feng had more experience when inventing 10,000-Star Sermon Map.

It was not that Luo Feng didn't want to create it according to the second chapter, Muscle. That one was more difficult. The second move was easier when there was a first one.

******

Luo Feng brought Ji Hong Emperor and Honed Heart Emperor back to his ring and decided to walk out of the cave.

"I've created the move suitable for Sky Map and significantly increased my power," he said. "I'm going to try it now and see teacher after ten combats. Hmm..." Luo Feng stopped at the exit of the cave the frowned. "Why did Chaos City teacher only ask me to go find him after ten battles, without saying another word? Instead of complimenting me, he only asked me to come find him after ten battles. Does that mean he's not satisfied with the moves I created for my weapon?"

Luo Feng thought of all the possible reasons. He was actually very perceptive. He didn't dig into the implication of the castellan's words because he was overjoyed after successfully creating his first move after 100 years.

"Not satisfied. Is it because I didn't concentrate?"

Luo Feng figured out the reason instantly. It was so obvious—it was common sense! The powerful ones needed to focus on one move, and they needed to concentrate on one move no matter how talented they were. Dividing their focus into two was a stupid strategy. For instance, Bolan had previously studied space law and time law at the same time, but only after he had gone through severe adversaries had he recognized the correct path.

"He's not happy that I'm creating a move for spiritual-force weapons," said Luo Feng. "That means he wants me to take the warrior path!"

I have a powerful spiritual force and a high amplitude thereof, thought Luo Feng. I'm fit for the path of a spiritual leader. Castellan teacher knows this. Why does he want me to follow the warrior school?

Luo Feng was talented enough to follow both the warrior path

and the spiritual-leader path. Which path to choose? Castellan wanted Luo Feng to follow the warrior path.

"Teacher knows some secrets," Luo Feng contemplated. "However, Mountain Sitting Guest suggested that I should follow the spiritual-force-leader path, and that's why he left me the Force armor and Star Tower. The Star Tower, in particular, which is a spiritual-force weapon, is one of the most powerful weapons in the universe. It will be a total waste if I don't study into the spirit reader path."

Besides, he didn't have a treasure for close combat like Flaming God Halberd, owned by his second brother, Flaming Emperor.

Doesn't matter, Luo Feng thought. Mountain Sitting Guest is one of the most powerful creatures in the universe, and he should know more than Castellan. Moreover, earthlings were taught and guided by teacher Mountain Sitting Guest, and he should now my potential is more for the spiritual-force-leader path. Also, it will only take me a little more time to study Moon Policy and 10,000-Star Sermon Map at the same time. I'll study them at the same time and will choose between one of them if there are some secrets I don't know.

Luo Feng made up his mind. He stepped out of the cave.

Hong!

He soared, and the snow was like air, unable to create any friction. Luo Feng flew to the ground in an instant.

******

It was white and freezing in the vast snowfield. Luo Feng flew in the sky and overlooked the surroundings.

"I need to find someone to fight with," Luo Feng said, looking around. "How can I find someone to fight with if everyone is hiding? I'll try my luck first."

Xiu!

Luo Feng flew like a beam of light.

******

Inside a palace in Northern Ice Hell, on the peak of the iceberg, one of the five invincible emperors, Silver Eye, sat on the throne like a sculpture. He was much more nonchalant than he had once been, after an infinite amount of time spent in Ice Hell. Sometimes, he wouldn't even move for tens of thousands of years.

Outside the palace, an emperor in black armor guarded the door. Suddenly, a silhouette belonging to one of the two slaves of Silver Eye appeared.

"Have you found the human?"

"We haven't," said the slave. "Nobody has been able to do that since his battle with Bone Emperor. He has completely vanished."

The two slaves talked to each other. They would go out and search for Luo Feng and would immediately report to their master Silver Eye if they found him.

"Protect master," the black-armored slave said." I'll go out and search." And then he teleported himself.

******

Luo Feng had hidden himself for 100 years, and those who wanted to fight him in the first place had temporarily given up.

"I can't find any of them," Luo Feng murmured as he flew through the entire area of Eastern Ice Hell and stopped above Ice Sea. "It seems these powerful creatures usually hide themselves. I'll need some special methods to get them out."

Luo Feng overlooked Ice Sea and suddenly became sharp.

"Break!"

Hong!

A spiritual force dove toward the ice. When Luo Feng's spiritual

force awakened on the earth the first time, his force could twist concrete iron. Now, Luo Feng could destroy a neutron star without even trying. One could extrapolate what the ice would be like when hit by his force

All the ice within the tens of thousands of squared meters vanished, and the tremble made the faraway ice crack as if crushed beneath the weight of a great beast.

The wave spread.

Some powerful creatures will notice it in no time, Luo Feng thought. The real powerful creatures in Ice Hell will come out.

******

A powerful creature living tens of millions of kilometers away felt it.

"Energy wave... Who's fighting?" The creature inclined his head out of the ice and saw the shadow. "Human!"

The creature was shocked, and it snuck back to the sea.

"The human showed up," it said. "The top ten limit emperors and the five invincible emperors are all looking for him. And he dared to show up."

The creature was surprised inside but didn't have the guts to test him. He knew he wasn't his match, since the human could flee from one of the top ten limit emperors and was ranked fastest according to Bone Emperor.

As for telling the secret? There was no upside to telling Silver Eye. He might be killed for doing that.

******

The wave spread everywhere. More and more powerful barbarian creatures noticed it, but none of them dared to show up, knowing it was the notoriously high-ranked human.

The energy wave gradually wore off and disappeared.

"No one?" Luo Feng stood in the sky for a long time and couldn't find anyone. "I can't believe no one showed up."

Luo Feng looked afar and bombarded the ice with his spiritual force.

Hong! Hong! Hong!

It wasn't until after the third time he hit the ice that a creature finally accepted the challenge.

Chapter 927: First Combat

The fragments of the ice were all over the sky because of the spiritual force. A silhouette marched toward Luo Feng among the bits. Luo Feng stood above Ice Hell and saw the shadow.

"You dare to show up, human!" The vigorous and forceful voice pierced through the void while a mighty, godly power spread everywhere. The fragments turned into nothing instantly, and the entire area became clear and bright.

Luo Feng could finally see the powerful creature clearly. He had a lion-shaped lower body with four claws, whereas he possessed a human upper body with four muscular arms. His body was dark blue, as if it were made of metal.

Luo Feng identified this creature. Lightning-Racing Emperor, ranked 12 and proficient in time law.

"It's him," Luo Feng said. He was dazed. "Although he is only ranked slightly lower than Bone Emperor, there's almost no gap between the top ten limit emperors. Besides, this one is proficient in time law, while my edge is teleportation. Things won't end well for me if he stops the time."

However, the anxiety could also heighten his aggressiveness.

"Why wouldn't I have the guts to show up!" Luo Feng's voice resounded across the entire ice sea. "You think I'm scared of you? Even Bone Emperor couldn't defeat me, not to mention you."

"Human, don't you know that two of the five invincible emperors are looking for you?" Lightning-Racing Emperor roared.

Luo Feng suddenly had goosebumps. Five invincible emperors?

They were the strongest in Ice Hell, and three of them were special creatures. Luo Feng couldn't underestimate them.

"Both Silver Eye and Blood Dog looked for you before,"

Lightning-Racing Emperor continued.

"Both are special creatures," Luo Feng muttered. Then he shouted aloud, "So what? Does that mean I should hide forever?" He grimaced.

"Yes," said Lightning-Racing Emperor. "There's no point for them to look for you. Because I will kill you today." Lightning-Racing Emperor's voice struck like thunder. He had told Luo Feng that both Silver Eye and Blood Dog were looking for him just to make him anxious. "Die, human!"

******

Combat began instantly.

More than 30 barbarian creatures were watching it from all around.

"The human's fighting Lightning-Racing Emperor."

"The human might be defeated."

"The human is speedy."

******

The combat between them went wild.

"Thunder-God Roaming!" Lightning-Racing Emperor growled, bearing down on Luo Feng like an immortal ox.

He roamed the void, which cracked under his force, and the electric snake fluttered. What irritated Luo Feng the most was how variable the speed of Lightning-Racing Emperor was. Before Luo Feng was well-prepared, Lightning-Racing Emperor arrived right in front of him.

Ta! Ta! Ta! Ta! Ta! Ta!

Lightning-Racing Emperor's claws stepped toward Luo Feng, and the fluttering electric snake could turn a planet into dust.

Peng!

He stepped right on Luo Feng's back while his Sha Wu Wing shielded him from hundreds of constant attacks. Lou Feng crashed into Ice Sea and caused tremendous waves. All of a sudden, a silver lining flew out—it was Lou Feng, unharmed.

"Take this, Lightning-Racing Emperor!" Luo Feng threw eight black balls out of the wave and secretly started to exercise the spiritual attack, Soul-Blade.

Lightning-Racing Emperor started to roam with the void again. Four ancient chains appeared around his arms, and each of his hands held one chain. The electric snakes were rotating around the chains, and just when he was about to fight against Luo Feng's spirit weapon, Soul-Blade hit him. Lightning-Racing Emperor felt pain.

"Human!" Lightning-Racing Emperor roared while flinging the four chains. Space and time were changing rapidly under the effect of the four chains. "Scar of Thunder!"

One of the chains of Lightning-Racing Emperor burst out like a hunting snake and pierced the sky with a light. The chain rushed to the barely formed phantom of beast god, whose tail slashed the chain.

Peng!

Eight black balls hit the chain but bounced back.

"Human, what else can you do except run?" Lightning-Racing Emperor laughed recklessly and flew toward Luo Feng. He was holding the four chains, each of which was terrifying and turned the realm into the territory of the lightning chains.

Luo Feng took back the eight stars and looked at Lightning-Racing Emperor. He thought to himself, I couldn't exercise a Splash of Whip Shadow as well as Lightning-Racing Emperor, Bone Emperor, and Hei Ti Emperor.

Hu!

He opened his wings and tried to get away from Lightning-Racing Emperor.

"Don't you dare run!" he roared. That was when he realized what "the fastest in Ice Hell" truly meant.

Luo Feng didn't even glance at him. Instead, he stared at his left palm.

"Now it's time to see how good my spirit weapon works after 100 years of practice."

A shred of expectation flashed in Luo Feng's eyes. Instantly, engravings appeared on the Star Map on his hand. 16 stars were needed to carry such complex engravings. Eight of the stars had purple halos around them while the other eight didn't.

"Go! Show him the power of Lightning-Racing Star!"

16 stars flew up, connected by tens of thousands of threads, which set off the universe origin law. A huge beast god that was over 1,000 meters long appeared above Ice Sea.

The beast god looked unstable, as if it could crumble at any moment. However, each scale on the tail of the beast god was as distinct as possible. The scales laminated each other and formed the tail, which emanated an almighty force. Other parts of the tail were like air.

Lightning-Racing Emperor guffawed while staring at the tail. "This phantom's inferior to the previous one! I can destroy it with one blow." He reckoned that the tail would be a threat. "Go!"

The four chains charged the beast god like four bolts of lightning.

Howl!

The tail covered with scales moved when the four chains raced toward him.

Hong!

The move was terrifically swift, and the tail slashed one of the

chains. The other three chains tried to attack the beast god, but they were all twisted and fell back.

"Good!" Luo Feng smiled. "It can actually ward off Lightning-Racing Emperor's attack. As expected, Star Map will not let me down if I study the law of spirit weapon thoroughly."

******

All the barbarian creatures watching the battle were shocked to their very core. They had lived in Ice Hell for such a long time that 100 years was merely a blink of an eye to them. They couldn't imagine that the human who could only flee when battling Bone Emperor could defeat Lightning-Racing Emperor in hand-to-hand combat.

"He is the equal of the top ten limit emperors?"

"How could he improve so quickly?"

"This is incredible!"

******

To Luo Feng, this was all totally conceivable. Each of the stars in the Star Map was invaluable, and 16 stars, perfectly connected, made each other them much more powerful under Luo Feng's secret technique. That's why Star Map was invaluable. Because if it were not for the panorama, owning even 1 billion stars would be pointless.

"Creating my own secret technique is the only way to utilize the treasure," Luo Feng said, feeling joyful inside. "However, according to the description on the ranking, the chains of Bone Emperor can merge into one, and that's when its power reaches its peak. And he hasn't exercised time stop. I should be more careful."

******

One of the servants of Silver Eye flew slowly above eastern Ice Hell. He wore black armor and was looking for the human.

"I'm actually giving myself a day off in the name of searching for the human," the servant said, looking relaxed. "It's so difficult to find the human, and nobody will attack me because they all know I'm the servant of Silver Eye. It's such a relief."

"Eh?" The black-armored servant looked in the direction of Ice Sea. "Energy wave? I'll go and take a look."

The servant teleported himself.

Sou!

He arrived tens of millions of kilometers away from the battlefield and saw two shadows. The bigger one was the phantom of beast god, and the smaller one was of Lightning-Racing Emperor.

"Lightning-Racing Emperor is fighting a beast," said the servant. "Wait... Where did the beast come from?"

The servant opened his eyes wider and saw the figure of a human.

"It's the human. The human's here! That's right. The phantom comes from his spirit weapon attack. The information on him confirms this." The servant was ecstatic. "I found the human! This is a huge contribution! Master will be overjoyed. I'll go tell my master now."

The servant teleported himself and vanished into the sky of Eastern Ice Hell. He teleported himself to the entry of Silver Eye's palace.

Chapter 928: Silver Eye Shows Himself

Lightning-Racing Emperor pulled his chains back in shock.

"Defeat?"

Lightning-Racing Emperor couldn't believe it. He thought this was the human who ran from Bone Emperor. His chain was a treasure he had obtained after countless battles in Ice Hell, and it was mighty. It could be divided into several chains, and the separate ones could be combined into one.

"Combine!" The chains around the arms of Lightning-Racing Emperor instantly touched and shrank, becoming one ordinary, rusty chain.

Howl!

The phantom of beast god charged him roaring, and the tail that was longer than the original body made the beast god anxious.

"Whip of Thunder!"

Lightning-Racing Emperor waved the chain in his hand, growling. The chain gradually pierced space, and the speed of time in different areas was changing—created by the exterminating power formed by the disorderly time attached to the chain.

The seemingly slow chain actually moved faster than the phantom. The void was cracking. The tail quickly slashed the phantom-like lightning and forcefully hit the chain. One was the exterminating power of thunder and time, and the chain was more fit for thunder and space.

The other was the might power of gold and space. Each of the 16 stars was worth as much as the chain, and the 16 stars were combined into one after merging into the map.

Hong!

The chain was hit away while the tail was quick as lightning,

sweeping through Lightning-Racing Emperor. The emperor could not outpace the phantom, and his godly body was cracked by the tail. The 16 stars were dimming around the tail, and his godly body eroded when it touched those stars.

"Damn!" The body of Lightning-Racing Emperor gathered, and he pulled back the chain, glaring at Luo Feng. "I'll never forget this, human!" Lightning-Racing Emperor turned into a beam of light and wanted to flee. "I won't let you flee that easy."

Luo Feng couldn't keep up with him from such distance. However, he exercised his spiritual force, and the beast god surpassed Lightning-Racing Emperor and blocked him. The terrific tail slashed toward Lightning-Racing Emperor.

"Goddamn human. You made me do it." Lightning-Racing Emperor roared, and the power became hundreds of times stronger. It crushed the beast god and the 16 stars were blast away.

******

The creatures watching the battle stealthily were dazed.

"Lightning-Racing Emperor is burning his body."

"Lightning-Racing Emperor is forced to burn his own body!"

Luo Feng, who could barely flee from Bone Emperor 100 years ago, left Lightning-Racing Emperor no choice but to run away. This was outrageous!

"Interesting! Now the human has to burn his godly body."

"Lightning-Racing Emperor's power surged, and the human is only as powerful as, if not more powerful than Lightning-Racing God. He needs to burn his own body to match Lightning-Racing Emperor."

"That human is as stupid as one can be. Just let the emperor run away if he wants to. He's forcing each other to engage in a deadly fight by stopping him."

******

Luo Feng was shocked. Lightning-Racing Emperor was burning his body, whereas he wasn't able to do the same.

"You can go now, Lightning-Racing Emperor." Luo Feng shook his wings and fled like a beam of tortuous light. At the same time, the 16 stars flew back to Luo Feng's palm.

"Goddamn human." Lightning-Racing Emperor held the chain and smashed everything with his claws. The void kept cracking, charging Luo Feng incredibly quickly.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Tortuous loci appeared in the sky. Once Luo Feng reached his speed limit and began changing his directions instantly, he was extraordinarily fast. One could see that the distance between Lightning-Racing Emperor and Luo Feng was getting larger. No matter how Lightning-Racing Emperor burned his body, he still failed to catch up with Luo Feng in terms of explosivity.

"It's impossible."

"How is this possible?"

"The first in Ice Hell. The first in Ice Hell!"

It was an eye-opener to all the creatures.

******

"It's too late for you to flee now!" Lightning-Racing Emperor was furious and kept chasing Luo Feng. He wanted to exercise the move time stop. However, Luo Feng was running farther and farther away, and he wasn't sure whether it would work or not.

time stop was almighty. However, there were severe limitations to it. For space, it couldn't be affected, no matter how fierce the combat was.

As for time stop, it was different. Once time stop was imposed on a certain district, all the lives would be affected, except the soul

and the conscious. Everything else would be fettered, and it would take a long time to break away, which gave the imposer adequate time to kill the opponent.

Exercising time stop first and killing the opponent who was not able to move. How incredible was that? However, firstly, it would cause severe backslash from the opponents' bodies and weapons, and he must be able to narrow the time stop district. The smaller the district was, the stronger the effect would be imposed on the human. Secondly, he must impose it in the enemy's region.

Nevertheless, Luo Feng was a spirit reader, and he was always releasing his spiritual force. Once Luo Feng detected Lightning-Racing Emperor's godly power, he would be alerted. And Lightning-Racing Emperor was not able to exercise time stop in time to make sure Luo Feng stayed in the ideal region.

He was burning his godly body, and his power was surging. As a result, Lightning-Racing Emperor was able to impose time stop on the larger region. However, Luo Feng was sharp-witted enough to run as far away as possible. It was more difficult to impose time stop from such a long distance, especially under the great pressure in Ice Hell.

"Wicked human!" Lightning-Racing Emperor was furious. He didn't intend to kill the human. Instead, he was only meant to force the human to burn his body without expecting that he wouldn't even do that. "Damn!"

Lightning-Racing Emperor turned into a beam of light and vanished.

******

In Northern Ice Hell, inside the palace on the peak of the iceberg, the one in the throne stood up.

"Are you serious?" said Silver Eye.

"I'm not lying, master," said his servant. "The human is fighting

Lightning-Racing Emperor right now. We need to go immediately; the fight will be over if we arrive late." The servant was urging Silver Eye to hurry. He didn't even want to waste another second in talking because he knew how fast the battle could be.

Silver Eye grabbed the servant. "Lead me there."

"Yes, master." The servant teleported them to the battlefield.

******

Above ice sea, all the powerful creatures had already gone back to their homes. The battle left them with nothing but shock.

"He was able to defeat Lightning-Racing Emperor and forced him to burn his body," said one onlooker. "The most unbelievable thing was that he ran away successfully without even burning his own body. Lightning-Racing Emperor must be deranged. The ten top limit emperors, each of them being equally powerful, had never run into any defeats. This time, it was a major defeat for this emperor."

"The human is so fast."

"Lightning-Racing Emperor can't reach him even by burning his body."

While the creatures were returning to their homes, they felt a dreadful energy wave, which made them looked up to the ice. A snow-white figure was floating in the sky, sending out a power that overwhelmed those creatures.

"Silver Eye!"

"It's Silver Eye!"

"Master of northern Ice Hell. Silver Eye!"

Those powerful creatures who had lived in Ice Hell for an infinite amount of time had forgotten a lot about the world outside. The only thing they knew was the five invincible emperors—Silver Eye being one of most ghastly. According to a rumor, any creature

except the other four invincible emperors would meet certain death if they saw his "silver eye."

Fortunately, Silver Eye knew that he couldn't gather enough tags, even if he killed all those weaker than him, because most of the tags were distributed among the five invincible emperors. Besides, he didn't want Ice Hell to be boring. That's why he ignored the weak.

******

Luo Feng was sighing. "The distinction between the powerful ones inside and outside Ice Hell is manifested in Lightning-Racing Emperor. Powerful creatures like him must own several treasures, at least one of them being a shield. His body wouldn't be broken by my stars that easily if he had a shielding treasure. However, there are significantly fewer treasures in Ice Hell, and they were all brought by the powerful ones."

Luo Feng was prepared to fly away, thinking to himself.

However, a mighty force spread. Luo Feng looked up. A 30-meter-tall god dressed in white armor was standing in the void afar. There was a giant scar on his forehead, but his eyes were missing. His utter desolateness was emanating, and Luo Feng could feel gloominess from him merely standing there.

Weng!

Space froze.

"Silver Eye..." Luo Feng said, terrified. "One of the five invincible emperors... Silver Eye! Special life Silver Eye!"

He had already known how petrifying Silver Eye was. However, the moment Luo Feng actually saw him... Out of nowhere, a great sense of danger rose.

Silver Eye stood afar and said in a tranquil voice, "Human! Give me the anonymous account to the virtual universe or die." His black-armored servant was standing behind him in awe.

Chapter 929: Death God's Point

White-armored Silver Eye stood in the sky, waiting for Luo Feng's answer.

Luo Feng felt like he was in danger, but he looked up at Silver Eye keenly and said, "I don't have an anonymous account. Will you let me go?"

"I'll kill you and check your world ring," Silver Eye overlooked Luo Feng and said nonchalantly.

"You don't trust me?" Luo Feng said.

"I don't trust anyone but my servants in Ice Hell," Silver Eye said slowly.

The black-armored servant glared at Luo Feng and yelled, "Hand over the anonymous Scanner now, human! Or master will kill you. Don't tell us you don't have the Scanner. We don't believe you."

Luo Feng nodded. "Yes, I have the Scanner."

Silver Eye looked more aggressive.

"But I don't want to give it to you." Luo Feng smirked and showed his teeth.

"You want to die?" the servant roared.

"It seems you're craving for death," Silver Eye said in a deep voice.

"I'll die just because you said so?" Luo Feng glared at Silver Eye, and he could feel his blood boiling. He was filled with belligerence.

He wasn't a chicken when he had faced the golden-horned beast before. And he dared to steal the black metal knowing that both the green knight and the purple knight were there.

Right now, he had three invaluable treasures, together with armor and general-soul auxiliary. What was more, the beast god

had reached level 20, and he had created his own secret technique. How was it possible that he would run away without a fight just because Silver Eye was only an invincible emperor? How was it possible that he would hand over the anonymous Scanner just because he was asked to do so? Silver Eye was being delusional!

Fight! Fight! Fight!

Luo Feng kept glaring at Silver Eye and smirked, "Silver Eye, I came to Ice Hell to fight each of the powerful creatures. Now that the top ten peak emperors are no longer a threat, you five invincible ones are my major target! I'll fight all five of you, and you're the first one!"

"You're not afraid of death?" Silver Eye's eyes were closed the whole time. He acted as if each inch of his skin were examining the surroundings.

"You can't kill me!" Luo Feng yelled.

Luo Feng wasn't anxious at all. Instead, he was excited and proud. He remembered how he became an apprentice to True Yan Emperor when he first stepped into Chaos City. After 10,000 years, he was now fighting Silver Eye, who was True Yan Emperor's equal. This was the first time he would fight someone so powerful.

Come! Show me how powerful the legendary invincible emperor is! Luo Feng was shouting inside.

"Show me how strong this so-called special creature is," he said.

Luo Feng's mental faculties were strengthening and concentrating. Only this sort of fight could harden him.

"As you wish," Silver Eye said mildly.

He waved his transparent palm while his slave was looking at Luo Feng with pity. His hands looked light diamonds, and the moment he waved his hands, Luo Feng felt the shape change in the area.

Shua!

Luo Feng shook his wings and tried to escape while summoning the 16 black balls. Tens of thousands of threads started to connect the balls and formed the phantom of the beast god.

"There's no way you can escape," Silver Eye's voice was still echoing.

An enormous palm was formed. The ice-crystal palm turned around and tried to slap Luo Feng.

"What is this? Attack of space law?" Luo Feng manipulated the phantom to strike the palm while dodging it with Sha Wu Wing.

The scene dazed Luo Feng. He recalled the ancient panorama he had seen in Blood River world, and one of the depicted how the palm was cracked by the tail of the beast god. Apparently, the two on the panorama were much more powerful than Luo Feng and Silver Eye, as one of them was the real beast god and the other was the great creature that defeated the beast god. However, there were lots of similarities between the two fights.

The phantom fiercely Bolandished its scale-covered tail to defend against the diamond palm.

Hong!

The tail whipped the diamond palm like a thunder. Both of them were more than 1,000 meters long, and the clash caused a blast. The phantom and the palm trembled at the same time. The phantom broke apart, and the 16 black balls swiftly flew toward Luo Feng. As for the palm, it cracked like ice.

"Silver Eye, proficient at time law and having learned law of space," Luo Feng marveled. "He is much better at the time law than law of space, but he can still wield such power utilizing the law of space. Incredible!"

Luo Feng could feel how forceful Silver Eye was. His body constitution was tens of millions of times more powerful than that

of sector lords, and his move was exquisite. A simple strike could suppress the most powerful attack from Luo Feng's treasure, which stemmed from his intense training.

"Huh?"

Silver Eye exhaled, "Good of you to take the first strike. Now I see why you're so arrogant."

"Not arrogant but confident," said Luo Feng. "Stop bragging and show me your best move, Silver Eye." Luo Feng opened his wings and stood afar.

"Okay."

Silver Eye faced Luo Feng. He felt like he was being stared at by countless eyes even though Silver Eye still hadn't opened his eyes.

Chi!

A crystal finger showed up right in front of Luo Feng out of nowhere. The whole space had been solidified; thus, Luo Feng couldn't teleport himself. Obviously, Silver Eye excelled in the flow of time.

Just when Luo Feng was trying to close his wings, an invisible wave spread across the entire area. Luo Feng couldn't move a muscle. It was time stop.

"It's time stop," said Luo Feng. "I was hit!"

"Pathetic," Silver Eye sighed and tried to pierce Luo Feng with the diamond finger.

Break! Break! Break!

Luo Feng's mental faculties went wild and emboldened his entire body. Sha Wu Wing, the Star Map, and Tower Pearl were all trembling. Under Luo Feng's spiritual force, which was stronger than most of the universe knights, the treasures broke loose from the constraint.

Break! Luo Feng roared in his mind.

Sha Wu Wing warded off the finger. Luo Feng bounced off like a meteor under the terrific shockwave.

Luo Feng was relieved. "Lucky that I can break away from time stop. Silver Eye is cunning. The giant palm and crystal finger were both formed by the godly power from afar, which made me less careful about the force around me. That's how the move worked."

Thoughts flooded Luo Feng's mind. Of course, the main reason time stop worked on me was his power. Although his force was permeating, his main force still remained around his finger, which was far away from me. He was actually able to exercise time stop, and it went into effect, which means he is much stronger than Lightning-Racing Emperor. I've never met any stronger barbarian creature in practice.

Just as Luo Feng was shocked, Silver Eye and his slave were equally amazed.

"He dodged it!" The servant couldn't believe it. "I can't even remember how many powerful creatures have died because of master's Death-God's Point, yet he managed to dodge it. He's even able to break from master's time stop. How is this possible?"

******

In the distance, all the creatures watching in various places were shocked to their very cores. They weren't all that surprised when Luo Feng withstood the slap. After all, he was powerful enough to suppress Lightning-Racing Emperor. However, when Luo Feng held out against his point...

"Death God's Point!"

"The Death God's Point of Silver Eye!"

"Though Silver Eye knew of law of space, he's actually proficient in time law. His Death God's Point is a move mixed with both time attack and soul attack. It starts with time stop, and the finger contains a soul-eroding attack that corrodes the enemy's soul in

secret, after which the enemy won't be able to fight back."

"The human is powerful enough to resist Death God's Point."

"The two moves Silver Eye uses to roam Ice Hell—one of them being Death God's Point, the other being Silver Stare—pose a threat even to the other four invincible emperors."

"Maybe we can see that move today."

"Pathetic human. If Silver Eye opens his eyes, the human will be doomed."

******

Silver Eye was also amazed. That ordinary point was one of his secret techniques. He had aced the move time stop, and that soul-eroding move was insidious. However, the human was capable of breaking loose of time stop in such a short time. And that crystal finger was not having an effect on the human, even though it touched him and began eroding his soul.

Luo Feng floated in the sky with his wings open. "Cunning move, indeed. Unfortunately, it's of no use. Silver Eye, show me your other moves."

Although attacking skills were his shortcoming, he had extraordinary defending abilities. He had robust body defense power, and his soul defense was even stronger.

Luo Feng thought, Although I was not able to charge him as he does, I can protect myself with no problem.

"Human, you're indeed strong," Silver Eye said slowly. "I'll leave if you can survive this. All the other creatures hit by this move have died except the other four invincible emperors. This... is Silver Stare."

Hua!

The crack on his forehead slowly opened, changing the speed of time and trembling space.

Chapter 930: Luo Feng's Message

His mighty body affected the flow of time around him. And the energy wave he created trembled space when he exercised his top move. His silvery-white eyes had no pupils. He was staring at Luo Feng.

Pu! Pu! Pu!

The space continued to crack because of the eyes' godly power. An eye appeared on Silver Eye's transparent body inch by inch, and his entire body not inside the armor was covered with eyes. The most powerful of all the eyes was the one on his face, with a silvery halo around it.

Hong!

The invisible, godly power rammed into Luo Feng's body. The second the eye was opened.

No wonder I felt I was being stared at by Silver Eye. What kind of special creature is he? This thought struck Luo Feng the second he saw the silvery eye, and the power hit his body after piercing through Sha Wu Wing and his General Armor. Silver Eye's gaze was still terrifically powerful.

The beast god roared, but it couldn't stand against this attack in the slightest.

Hong!

It pierced through Luo Feng's soul. Luo Feng suddenly fell into a state of illusion.

Does he want to deceive me with this illusion? How ridiculous. Break!

Luo Feng had an incredibly strong will, which helped him break out of the illusion without even trying. The scene around him vanished, and he entered nature.

An illusion again? Break!

Still an illusion? Break!

Luo Feng was strong-minded and broke through one illusion after another. However, the illusion formed as fast as he could escape it, and it just kept forming. Luo Feng felt like he had fallen into an infinite loop of illusions—as if he had spent millions of years inside.

This is not just any illusion. I've never heard of any illusion like this, and that move was so unusual. I reckon it's his top-secret technique.

Luo Feng had fallen into the illusion for a significant amount of time, but he still remained tranquil. His will was sharpened, and it was firm.

His top-secret technique is supposed to be intricate. It's impossible for creatures to train themselves to be able to exercise moves like Split and Strengthen of the golden-horned beast. His top-secret technique is something I've never seen before.

Although Luo Feng was trapped in the infinite illusions, he was not in a rush, as he knew only a second had passed outside the illusion by connecting to the golden-horned beast body. Of course, he wouldn't have been able to do that without his firm will; he would have been confused, otherwise.

After exercising the move, all the eyes on Silver Eye's diamond skin disappeared, and the crack on his forehead closed.

This was the secret technique, and there were only two ways to break out of it. The first required mighty, godly power or soul-protecting treasure. In Luo Feng's case, he could certainly use Tower Pearl to break it. The second required one to break all the illusions one by one without falling. That made for an extremely long time within the illusion, whereas in reality, it was only a blink of an eye.

"Infinite loop," said Silver Eye "If he indulges himself, his will is going to crumble, and his soul will collapse. One has to go through desolateness to break each of these illusions and can't give himself a break. Hundreds of thousands of years is enough to bend even the strongest will."

Silver Eye was pretty proud of his move.

This was, indeed, an extraordinary move. It was much more terrifying than being detained in Ice Hell, because in Ice Hell, one could still hide in his comfort zone, whereas one couldn't rest at all in the illusion. Actually, this move resembled the move Inheritance of Life and Death that Luo Feng had endured before, which was more difficult, as he couldn't even think during such an impasse.

Just when Silver Eye closed his eyes, Luo Feng opened his.

"You, you..." The eyes were dimming on Silver Eye's skin. "How is this possible?"

The servant screamed, "This is impossible! Nobody other than the other four invincible emperors survived this! And the other two burned their godly bodies to withstand it. How did you hold out against it as a human?"

"How long did you spend in the infinite loop?" Silver Eye asked.

"The infinite loop of illusions?" Luo Feng answered. "10,000 eras."

"10,000 eras? You survived 10,000 eras of loneliness and struggles?" Silver Eye was a bit amazed. "I must say that I'm impressed."

"Not that much of a struggle, though," said Luo Feng, smiling.

When Luo Feng had been under Inheritance of Life and Death, he had suffered much more terribly for 6,000 years, and he had walked between life and death countless times. In fact, Luo Feng chose to survive this without Tower Pearl for a reason, which was

to sharpen his will. After an infinite amount of time in the illusion, he didn't feel lost at all. In contrast, he was sober.

Those old creatures were as ancient as the universe, and living that long granted each of them an unbending will. Luo Feng wouldn't give up an opportunity like this.

"I'm indeed impressed," Silver Eye nodded. "Now that you've survived three of my moves, I promise that I won't kill you."

"I took three of your moves." Luo Feng grinned. "Now, it's your time to take my move."

Peng!

One of the world rings carried by Luo Feng suddenly cracked, and an aggressive vibe emanated from it. An ancient, purple clock floated beside Luo Feng, and Ji Hong emperor inside was already burning his godly body. The forceful energy was injected into the purple clock.

Dang!

The visible wave charged Silver Eye at the speed of light. At the same time, Luo Feng threw out eight stars covered with Fei Mo Venom. The demon sound was so fast that Silver Eye couldn't manage to dodge it.

Peng!

His body cracked, then instantly started to heal. However, eight traces of light pierced through the body and started to corrode it, after which it flew back to Luo Feng.

"Let's go."

Luo Feng grabbed Ji Hong emperor the second after he threw out the eight black balls, shook his wings, and escaped as fast as possible. The eight black balls flew towards Luo Feng quickly and went back to Luo Feng's palms in a moment.

"Master, he just played you," The black-armored servant said

furiously. "We can't let him go."

Silver Eye's godly body healed completely while Luo Feng fled. He smiled. "I said that I wouldn't hunt him again if he could survive my move," said Silver Eye. "Besides, how am I supposed to chase him? He has run far, and I can't stop him by pausing time."

The servant was dazed.

That's right. The human was the fastest in Ice Hell! Even the five invincible emperors couldn't match him.

"Then we're supposed to let it go?" The servant found this hard to believe, as he had never seen his master taken advantage of.

"I attacked him three times, whereas he attacked me once," replied Silver Eye. "I wasn't taken advantage of. However, that was a fierce move."

Silver Eye could feel the injury in his body, but he didn't care about it. It was only a slight piece. Suddenly, Silver Eye heard a voice.

"You want the anonymous account to the virtual universe, Silver Eye?" Luo Feng's voice echoed. "I'll give you a chance to get it, and my condition is pretty simple. I'll trade one Scanner for one treasure, and I'll send my servant to do the deal three days later. Whether we have a deal or not is up to you."

Silver Eye was dazed, and he looked at the human who had teleported himself and escaped the space-clotted zone.

"Sneaky human... greedy human," Silver Eye couldn't help saying.

Although he did have a strong desire for the Scanner, he needed to contemplate whether it was worth a treasure or not. Treasures were scarce in Ice Hell, and he owned the treasures because the undying captured before had not been ordinary.

"Let's go."

Silver Eye reversed the space clot and left with his servant.

******

Both Luo Feng and Silver Eye took off. The powerful creatures who had witnessed the battle were awed, as the human had survived the move Silver Look. That was something that couldn't be accomplished even by the top ten limit emperors, who would resort to burning bodies to flee if they ran into the five invincible emperors.

"This is just incredible."

"The human will soon be ranked sixth after this battle."

"The strongest one under the five."

All the creatures couldn't help sharing and discussing this with their friends, since it was a major incident in the tedious Ice Hell.

******

Luo Feng and Ji Hong emperor teleported them back to the cave deep in the snow.

"No wonder he's an invincible emperor," said Ji Hong emperor. "The purple clock could only crack his body instead of smashing him. And I strengthened its power by burning my body." Ji Hong emperor couldn't help sighing. "That was horrendous."

"His body constitution is more than 100 times stronger than yours, so even if you burn your body, you can only reach his level," said Luo Feng. He shook his head. "I grabbed the chance to erode him using the stars covered with Fei Mo venom, which was only a mosquito bite to him. I couldn't even feel that he was weakened. But that makes sense, given how powerful and enormous his body is. He's way taller than a human and wields vigorous godly power. I reckon he won't die even if he has one kilogram of Fei Mo venom."

One kilogram of Fei Mo venom could possibly kill a human

invincible emperor. However, Silver Eye was a special creature, which was not easily corroded.

I don't know whether he will say yes to my offer or not, thought Luo Feng. It will be more than lucky for me if I can get a treasure with a cheap account. That deal might actually happen.

Chapter 931: Easily Obtained

The desire the powerful creatures had to connect to the outside world was understandable.

"I'll know in three days." Luo Feng stopped guessing and started to reflect on the battle. "The treasure is indeed powerful. I created the most suitable secret technique to make the best use of it, and it gave me the power to defeat Lightning-Racing Emperor," Mused Luo Feng. "It's such a pity. If he were not here, he would've had at least one treasure to defend himself."

There weren't enough treasures in Ice Hell.

The 12,000 creatures detained in Ice Hell did carry some treasures. However, after an extensive amount of time, almost all the treasures had been claimed by the top emperors. Even so, the treasures these top emperors owned were significantly fewer than those owned by the emperors outside. For instance, Seven Blade Emperor had a set of seven-blade weapons, together with treasures of defense and escape. In addition to the golden ponds, he had a tremendous number of treasures.

It was possible that Lightning-Racing Emperor and Bone Emperor were as strong as Seven Blade Emperor and Hei Ti Emperor. However, if they were engaged in a real fight, talents like Seven Blade Emperor and Live Falling Emperor—who were specially trained by their clans—could have crushed the detainees in Ice Hell.

"Treasures aren't less important than powers," Luo Feng postulated. "It's the same for the masters of the universe. Teacher Mountain Sitting Guest has already provided me with enough treasures. And I need to strengthen my power."

******

Three days later, on the peak of the iceberg in Northern Ice Hell,

Ji Hong Emperor stood at the foot of the mountain, addressing the metal person with respect.

"Master," said Ji Hong Emperor.

"Stay here," ordered the metal person. "Run if something goes wrong."

"Yes, master," Ji Hong emperor answered.

After giving the order, the metal person started to hike leisurely. The metal person was Luo Feng, who was using the method of the demon race. The powerful creatures of the demon race would use their body to handle things like these while hiding their real bodies in the world ring, as those powerful creatures of the demon race had enormous bodies. It would have been inappropriate to use their real bodies when adventuring the universe in spaceships.

Luo Feng gave a bit of his consciousness in that body so that nothing would happen his physical self, even if that body was destroyed.

It's been a long time since I last hiked, thought Luo Feng. It's tiring to hike under the pressure of Ice Hell.

Luo Feng hiked slowly. Suddenly, the shadow of the black-armored servant appeared.

"You come," the metal person said in Luo Feng's voice. Luo Feng had adjusted the pronunciation of the body.

"It's you?" The servant was furious. "I can't believe that you come here yourself. I thought you would send your servant here."

"Wouldn't it be better to come here myself?" Luo Feng said. "Let's go."

Luo Feng vanished with his body. They were inside the spectacular palace when they appeared again. Luo Feng looked up and saw the god, Silver Eye, through the body's optical system. Luo Feng felt had equal the first time he'd seen him, but now the scene

was blurry, as the body was being inhibited.

"Silver Eye, take back your force," Luo Feng shouted. "My body can't take this. There will be no deal if the body is crushed."

"Human!" called Silver Eye.

Luo Feng withdrew his force. He could easily blow up an entire star with a breath. He was trying not to affect the fragile body. "I reckon you're going to take the deal," Luo Feng said.

"You're not afraid that I'll snatch the Scanner?" Silver Eye said.

"Snatch it?" said Luo Feng. "Have you never known what technology is, or have you just forgotten how the outer world works? This anonymous account is permanent, and it's strictly monitored. I only brought a few accounts here, but I can apply for many more. I can take away your access authority even if you're offered one now."

"What if you take away my access authority after I make the deal with you?" Silver Eye asked.

"Relax. I won't do something so clearly disadvantageous," Luo Feng said. "You have to have faith in my reputation and know that I'm somebody in the human race. I won't damage my reputation merely for a Scanner."

"Good to hear," Silver Eye replied. "However, it's completely unfair to trade a treasure for a single Scanner. I want three of them."

"I only have two in total and need to do business in the future," Luo Feng answered. "I'll only give you one, and that's the final offer. Why do you need three? You're the only one who needs it, anyway. You can lend it to your friends if they need it."

Luo Feng had been born solemn. He wasn't good at negotiations as the human, and he wouldn't bargain if he didn't value the treasure and the Scanner equally.

"Two," Silver Eye said.

"One, and that's the final offer," Luo Feng said. "There's no use for you to have two, either. Maybe you want to resell one of them? I'll tell you now that I can totally take away the access authority of one of the Scanners, as you're the one I'm making the deal with and you're the only one who can get the access authority."

"Okay, one Scanner it is," Silver Eye gave in. Indeed, he was weak at negotiating.

"Greedy," said Luo Feng.

"Cunning," Silver Eye couldn't help saying from his throne.

"Cunning," agreed Luo Feng.

"This goddamn human is cunning as one can be," the servants swore to one another in a low voice. That was a treasure, which was difficult to obtain. Although the top ten limit emperors had some of them, they were shrewd enough to avoid the five invincible emperors at all costs. Hence, it would be tricky to catch them.

"This is the Scanner." Luo Feng threw the arm-protecting quantum computer to Silver Eye, and it fell once it left Luo Feng's hand.

Silver Eye caught the quantum computer in shock. "Be careful," he complained.

"It's too repressive, here," Luo Feng said with a smirk. "Besides, my body is too weak. Now that you have the Scanner, where is the treasure?"

"I shall try it first." Silver Eye started to test it and connected to the quantum computer, which led him into the virtual universe.

Luo Feng said, "I've created 80,000 virtual mock accounts for you in case you don't know how to use it. Besides, the scanning function has been turned off—and don't you try to turn it on. If

you do, your real figure will be shown in the virtual universe. A human dummy will be shown otherwise. You can totally change the size of the body and turn into human shape before turning on the scanning function."

Silver Eye smiled. "Interesting. These virtual games you humans are playing are quite interesting." Silver Eye looked down at Luo Feng and grimaced. "The fear wears off the second I step into the virtual universe."

Luo Feng burst into laughter.

"This is the treasure." Silver Eye threw out a treasure. It was a three-meter-long viridescent axe.

"You're just greedy," Luo Feng repeated the point. "Glad to trade with you." He smiled. "You should be happy, Silver Eye, as I'm going to seclude and cultivate myself. You should know that it's almost impossible to find me, and when I come out next time, which may happen hundreds of years from now, the other four invincible emperors will need to satisfy me if they want a deal with me."

"Go. And stop being smug here," Silver Eye said. "Escort Luo Feng out."

"Yes, master."

The black-armored servant teleported Luo Feng.

Silver Eye looked afar and smiled. He had obtained two treasures in total in Ice Hell, but he had only used one without touching the other. Besides, the treasure he actually valued wasn't ideal because he could wield much more vigorous power by his own move.

"The virtual universe and virtual games," said Silver Eye. "There are so many lives here, and it is filled with hustle and bustle. Wow! More than a trillion creatures playing one game!"

Silver Eye spared a slice of his consciousness and played the game. He needed to relax after being desolate for so long. This

anonymous account was, indeed, more valuable than a treasure to Silver Eye.

******

Inside the cave in Eastern Ice Hell, Luo Feng held the viridescent axe. It was thin and looked like a jade.

"Ha! I didn't even know whether it would work when the idea hit me," he said. "But now, I actually have one treasure, which is more than valuable! I only got an 'ice net' when I slaughtered all the creatures in star tower, and all the other fortunes I got combined were as valuable as one treasure."

Luo Feng could feel its power merely by looking at it.

He laughed, put it away, and connected to the virtual universe.

******

Inside the practice field exclusive to Luo Feng, Luo Feng said between the stars, "There's still room for me to improve. I only came up with the first move for both Moon Policy and 1,000-Star Sermon Map. As for Nan Shen Seven Moves, I'm already proficient in the second chapter, and I can totally create the second move based on that chapter and conception of beast god."

On one hand, it would be much more difficult to create the second move; on the other, he was at a higher level.

"Let's begin."

Luo Feng started to create the secret technique. However, just when he decided to fight an opponent, the castellan of Chaos City appeared in golden rope.

"Teacher," Luo Feng greeted him with respect.

Chapter 932: Anxiety

Luo Feng was confused. Castellan teacher had asked him to come to see him after ten battles, but here he was after only two. And the castellan was patient enough to wait for him to finish.

"You're going to create the second move?" the castellan asked, looking at Luo Feng.

"Yes," Luo Feng said with respect. "I don't think the first move of Moon Policy or 10,000-Star Sermon Map is enough, which is why I need to create the second one."

"You're studying both of them?" the castellan continued.

"Yes." Luo Feng didn't hesitate a bit.

The castellan frowned and said in a throaty voice, "Did you engage in any fighting?"

"Two," Luo Feng answered. "I barely won the first one but lost the second one."

"What's your takeaway from that?" the castellan asked.

"I realized that both strengths and treasures are important," Luo Feng said. "For one thing, treasures can't be fully utilized if the owner is not powerful enough. Plus, one will be put at a disadvantage in a battle against enemies at the same level if he doesn't have treasures. For me, I have adequate treasures, whereas I need to increase my power."

Both Luo Feng and the castellan stood among the stars in the practice field and engaged in questions and answers.

"Didn't these battles make you realize that you're wasting your time trying to follow the spirit reader path?" the castellan scolded Luo Feng in a raucous voice.

The voice directly hit Luo Feng's mind, yet Luo Feng remained extraordinarily firm.

"Waste of time?" Luo Feng shook his head. "No. I feel like I'm strengthened and that it's the right path for me."

Luo Feng thought the castellan was kidding because he owned the Star Map, which was designed for spirit reader to attack. He wouldn't be able to defeat limit emperors with his own power and moves, whereas he could out-power Lightning-Racing Emperor with the Star Map!

The castellan shook his head. "Give up. Give up on the spirit reader path and focus on the warrior path." The castellan sighed.

Luo Feng was dazed and stared at the castellan who had been guiding him all along. "Why?" he asked. "I have an unrelenting will, and I inherited from Demon-Sound General, which gave me a high frequency of amplitude. I can make great accomplishments following the spirit reader path."

"But you can accomplish greater things if you follow the warrior path!" the castellan said.

"Could you please clarify?" Luo Feng said and bowed.

The castellan looked at his student, knowing that it was impossible for him to give up because of one sentence alone.

"I'll elaborate on it," the castellan said with earnestness. "First of all, you're a black warrior. Second, you're following the path of beast god!"

Luo Feng listened carefully.

"The black warrior has become a legend in Blood River Land," the castellan said. "Being a black warrior means your genes tally with those of the beast god, and you can significantly improve your genes using Blood of Beast God in the future. Genes are foundational. If you're fundamentally 1,000 times stronger, how is your enemy going to fight you? Besides, the fallen beast god in Blood River land concentrated on close combat. Remember, spirit reader can never reach the top by following the path of beast god."

The castellan looked at Luo Feng. Luo Feng was bewildered.

Can never reach the top?

"You have to follow the path of the warrior to match beast god's level!" the castellan said. "You're a black warrior, so you have an extremely rare constitution. The fact that you could improve so quickly on the path of beast god shows your great talent. How can you squander it? You're likely to become a Universe master if you follow the path of the warrior. It's indeed difficult, but success is guaranteed. If you just follow your own whims, it will be almost impossible for you to become a Universe master."

Luo Feng fell into silence.

"Some small clans don't even know about this secret," said the castellan. "Some have tried both paths like you, which is ridiculous because they will never be able to reach the top. Just take Xi Luo Duo as an example. He was stuck at the last challenge and never managed to cross it." The castellan looked at Luo Feng. "Think deeply. And give me the answer when you're done."

The castellan turned around. Luo Feng remained silent.

I can only follow the path of the warrior if I want to match the beast god? Luo Feng mused. Being a black warrior means my genes tally with the beast god? That's right. I learned Nine Volumes Manual, after which my genes sharply improved, exceeding those of humans, and that's how I managed to merge the ten Black River Crystals. One path is given by castellan teacher. I need to follow the path of the warrior and the beast god, and I'm likely to become as powerful as the beast god, which means I will become a Universe master!

The spirit reader is offered by teacher Mountain Sitting Guest. I'll concentrate on Nine Volumes Manual, and there's no need to create any form of secret techniques, because I'll take charge of the Star Tower when I become more powerful in the future. Both students of teacher Mountain Sitting Guest are masters of the

universe, which means it is more likely that I'll become a Universe master following this path—not to mention one of the most forceful treasures, Star Tower.

"Which one should I choose?" Different scenarios struck Luo Feng's mind.

He laughed. Why should I even bother? I'll follow two paths since each of them offers a chance for me to become a Universe master. Luo Feng perked up. I'm not like Bolan, who divided his focus between two laws. Although it seems like I am following both the path of the warrior and the path of the spirit reader, I'm following the path of the beast god, essentially. And I can study how to combine them together if I follow both paths.

Among the stars, the castellan stood in the void for quite a while.

"Teacher," Luo Feng finally said with veneration.

"You've made your decision?" The castellan sounded tranquil.

"Yes," Luo Feng said, looking as if there were lights in his eyes. "I've decided to follow both paths, and I'll give one of them up if I realize I have made the wrong decision in the future."

The castellan turned to Luo Feng. "I will say no more on this, as you've made up your mind," said the castellan. "I'll see how far you can go by following both paths."

Luo Feng looked at the teacher.

"Great." The castellan nodded. "It's okay to make mistakes. What really matters is whether you can persevere and put your heart into it."

Luo Feng kneeled. "Thank you, teacher."

He kneeled because he was sincerely thankful. He realized that the castellan would still support him even if he went against his suggestions, and that the castellan arranged one opponent after another for him to practice his secret techniques, which was time-

consuming. Even if the castellan valued Luo Feng because of his race, he owed so much to him. He needed to remember his kindness and repay it when he had the chance.

"Let's begin!"

Luo Feng disappeared, and the golden-horned beast appeared. Luo Feng followed the usual schedule and started with Moon Policy, followed by 10,000-Star Sermon Map.

******

In the rural area of the universe, Black Flower Secret Region, inside Ice Hell, the news was spreading that Luo Feng had managed to survive both Death God's Point and Silver Look and escape. However, there weren't advanced communications in Ice Hell and the detector Luo Feng carried was interrupted. It was not realistic to establish an internal virtual world inside Ice Hell.

Poor communication!

Besides, there were feuds between the powerful creatures, and they were so hostile toward each other that they would fight each other anytime they met. Only some friends or equals would gather once in a while. As a result, only one-third of the creatures knew about what Luo Feng had done after more than half a year had passed.

******

In the snows of Southern Ice Hell stood a spectacular palace with blocks of ice littered all around. Demon-race characters were crafted on them, which were clearly the rankings of Ice Hell. Without a doubt, inside the palace lived a very special creature—Sky Wolf! One of the five invincible emperors!

Additionally, he was the editor of the rankings and also happened to be best-tempered. It was said that sky wolves were ruthless and fierce creatures, whereas the Sky Wolf living here was arguably one of the most peaceful. However, he would also kill if he was

irritated. After all, he was one of the top five creatures in all of Ice Hell, a title earned by majestic battles.

In the tremendous icy throne sat a mountain-like demon around fifteen kilometers long. It was covered with snowy hair tipped with gold, giving the appearance of a halo around him. There were three strange, scar-shaped engravings on his forehead.

He was Sky Wolf!

"Master, it seems the ranking needs to be updated."

"There have been new battles?"

"Yes. It was the human who fought with Lightning-Racing Emperor and Silver Eye."

Five servants covered with scales stood in the palace, and they were at the level of officials. Sky Wolf had brought them here when it was detained.

"Human!" Sky Wolf suddenly raised his head and glared down at them. "Where is the human? Find the human right now!"

The servants were dazed. "Master, the fight was more than half a year ago."

"More than half a year?"

Sky Wolf growled. When the human showed up in Ice Hell, Silver Eye had publicly looked for him. Sky Wolf, on the other hand, had sent his servants to search for him in secret but had eventually given up the search. He hadn't expected the news to come more than half a year late.

"This can't go on," said Sky Wolf.

Sky Wolf stood up with his four claws on the throne. His servants kneeled down under the fear of his might.

Chapter 933: 2,000 Years of Hibernation

The five servants stayed silent, kneeling.

Sky Wolf looked bellicose. "Even if the human shows himself sometime in the future, he will disappear again when I get the news." Sky Wolf realized that and quickly made a decision. "Prepare the ice tablets." He said in a deep voice.

"Yes, master," the servants answered.

One of them turned around his hands and put a giant, bar-shaped ice tablet on the ground. Sky Wolf walked down from the throne and toward the tablet.

"Tell me about the two battles," Sky Wolf said.

"Yes, master. The human fought Lightning-Racing Emperor first, and the emperor was suppressed by the human. Besides, the human was so rapid that Lightning-Racing Emperor couldn't run away, and he resorted to burning his own body. However, he was still slower than the human with his body being burned."

The five servants told the stories one by one. Although some details were left out, they mentioned all the key points.

Sky Wolf looked down at the ice tablet.

Chi, chi, chi.

Demon-race characters appeared on the tablet one by one, and the new ranking was determined.

First: Blood Dog

Second: Silver Eye

Third: Sky Wolf

Fourth: Black Wind

Fifth: Ci An

Sixth: Human

These creatures were named according to their races; for instance, "Ci An," "Human," and "Sky Wolf." As for Blood Dog, Silver Eye, and Black Wind, they had been given these names due to their appearances. This was a usual way to name someone because there was only one from the Ci An clan and one from the human race.

The ranking was soon determined, and each name came with a description. The names and the descriptions almost filled the ice tablet, only to leave a huge blank on the top.

The servants were baffled and started to mutter, "Master always crafted the ranking from the top to the bottom. Why did it change?"

"Yes. I've never seen master do this."

As they were discussing this, demon-race characters started to appear on the blank:

Anyone who brings the human to me will be forever protected. And I swear I will not kill him if I see the human. I swear to all of Ice Hell, and this tablet is the evidence.

"Done." Sky Wolf raised his head. "Make 900 copies of this and send them to the peak of the mountain on the other side."

"Yes, master," the five servants answered with veneration.

They made 900 copies instantly, and one of them flew away carrying these tablets. He flew toward the mountain near Ice Sea where the ranking was usually distributed. That was a battle-free zone where no occupation was allowed, which had been agreed upon by everyone in Ice Hell.

******

The tablets were carried away by one creature after another, and Sky Wolf's bounty spread throughout Ice Hell.

"Sky Wolf's protection?"

"Unless Sky Wolf dies, nobody can kill me if I can get its protection."

"Will Sky Wolf break its promise?"

"How is that possible? Sky Wolf announced that through the ranking and made it known to everyone. He's not likely to break his promise because of us and humiliate himself publicly. Besides, Sky Wolf is always proud and doesn't deign to attack us. Also, everyone knows he's peaceful."

"Hurry up and find the human."

"That's right. Let's go find the human."

All the other creatures tiptoed except for the strongest ones. Even Bone Emperor and Lightning-Racing Emperor would avoid meeting the five invincible emperors, not to mention the others. Though they were weak, they made up 90 percent of the creatures in Ice Hell. They devoted themselves wholeheartedly to finding Luo Feng.

However—Luo Feng's habitation was hidden deep in the snow, and there was a micro-detector around. Even if some creatures actually arrived there, they couldn't detect Luo Feng with their eyes or godly force unless they destroyed the whole place and forced Luo Feng to come out.

The creatures vehemently searched for the human for hundreds of years, after which the enthusiasm gradually wore off. However, there were still some weak emperors continuing to search because once they succeeded, they could live a peaceful life.

******

On one of the islands of the sea, Luo Feng, dresses in black, sat on the beach watching the tides. As for the golden-horned beast, it was staying in Inner World and copying the sculpture of beast god.

"It's been 1,000 years," said Luo Feng. "I thought it would be almost impossible to improve because my conception of the beast

god reached level 20 of Heavenly Bridge 1,000 years ago. By contrast, it was slowly but constantly improving." Luo Feng was smiling. "However, there's a huge gap between level 20 and level 21, which takes ten times longer than improving from level 19 to 20.

The conception of beast god was achieved by copying different sizes of beast god sculptures. Luo Feng's perception of the merging law of Dao of Beast God was important as well, as it was difficult to achieve without it.

Perception of law was the root and the trunk. Conception was the Bolanches. Only if the root was deep enough and the trunk thick enough that the tree could bloom.

They were functioning upon each other. With the perception of law, one could grasp a higher level of conception. Meanwhile, a higher level of conception boosted the perception of law.

******

Time flew.

The golden-horned beast concentrated on Nan Shen Seven move and tried to apprehend the conception of beast god by copying. The human form was studying Moon Policy and 10,000-Star Sermon Map.

The castellan provided different opponents based on the weaknesses of Luo Feng's moves, under which Luo Feng refined his moves and improved sharply. He was already able to create new moves based on the second chapter, Muscle, and apply the law in a magnificently comprehensive way.

It took Luo Feng 1,600 years to create the second move for Moon Policy. Both the move of blade and Sha Wu Wing could be utilized. One move of blade could destroy any obstacle! It was almighty.

However, Luo Feng ran into some difficulties when studying 10,000-Star Sermon Map. Luo Feng originally thought that he

could create the second move of the map ten times faster than creating the move for Moon Policy. After all, he was already experienced. However, it was much more difficult than Luo Fen thought.

The first move is based on the first chapter, and it's simpler. Yet the second one stems from the second chapter, which is far more complicated. It becomes so difficult that I can't extrapolate from Moon Policy.

Luo Feng identified the key distinction between the law of close combat and that of spirit weapon. The two weapons would only become more different when the secret technique became more intricate, and the experience would become increasingly useless.

******

Inside the palace of Thunder Island in the virtual universe, Luo Feng stepped into the palace, stopped halfway, and greeted, "Master, I've created the second move for both. Please give me some advice."

"You realized, didn't you?" came a voice from the infinite airflow.

"I realized," Luo Feng said with respect, "that I was wrong to think it would be easier to create the move for spirit weapon if I knew how to create the move for close combat. However, it wasn't as easy as I thought."

"You're creating the top-secret technique instead of the mediocre one. There are fundamental differences between the arcane codes of close combat and spirit weapons. Of course, the more you study them, the more obvious the differences will be. You can still refer to each other when creating the first or second move, but there will be no point when you start the third and fourth move. What's more, it will only slow you down if you do that when you're creating the fifth move, let alone the sixth one. And it will be an impossible venture to create the seventh move, which represents the power of a Universe master."

"Ah..." Luo Feng was startled.

"Diluting your concentration can indeed help you at first by supplementing one arcane code to another," the castellan said. "However, they will only negatively affect each other when you reach a higher level, making it strenuous to create one more move. You think the powerful creatures are afraid of squandering time? No. They have eternal lives and couldn't care less about time. What they're really afraid of is losing the chance of the peak forever. Are you still sticking to your own way?"

"I am!" Luo Feng said, nodding.

"Fine. You're still qualified to make mistakes. Let's just hope you will change your mind when you start to create the fourth move."

Luo Feng bowed without saying a word.

"Keep on. Show that you're right with your achievements." The sound was vague.

"Yes, teacher." Luo Feng bowed, thinking that he would definitely prove it with his accomplishments.

Sou!

Luo Feng vanished, and his consciousness went back to reality.

Inside the cave of eastern Ice Hell, Luo Feng finally opened his eyes. He had been sitting in the living room with his legs crossed.

"Just wait for it, castellan teacher," Luo Feng said. He had lost the joy he should have had after creating a new move. Rather, all he had was the intention to battle. "I need the reality to tell me I was wrong!"

Chapter 934: Meet Sky Wolf

Luo Feng left the cave and arrived at the surface of the snow. He walked slowly on the snow.

"Masters of the universe are the peak of the universe," Luo Feng said under his breath. "However, not all the masters are equally powerful. The castellan is top-tier, Second Brother Flaming Emperor is mid-tier, and Big Brother Pu Ti is low-tier. Regardless, they were all awed by billions of clans in the universe. Nevertheless, Flaming Emperor doesn't possess a treasure like Star Tower, even though he has two treasures, while the treasures Pu Ti has might be inferior to those of Flaming Emperor. Star power triggered the war between the top four clans. It's able to stand solid between stars in the battlefield outside the domain, consuming energies constantly, which led to nine whirlpool nebulas, and the whirlpool could easily tear a universe knight apart. The most powerful treasure."

Luo Feng nodded in silence. According to Mountain Sitting Guest, when Luo Feng became a universe knight and collected the last piece of metal for Nine Volumes Manual, he would almost be able to operate the entire Star Tower, and if he managed to do that, he could have the authority to talk with masters of the universe equally.

That means I will be the equal of the masters of the universe when I become universe knight, as long as I can operate the Star tower, Luo Feng thought. In this case, I must not waste this treasure, which is coveted by even the most powerful in the universe. The core of each element of the Star Map is a soul-controlling valuable.

Tower Pearls and Sealing Stars were nothing compared to the Star Tower. It was incredibly powerful.

The more Luo Feng thought about it, the more convinced he was

that he had been right to follow the spirit reader path.

Teacher said following both paths spelled failure to create the seventh move. Luo Feng shook his head. However, the castellan also said before that no human could become a Universe master following the path of beast god. Maybe some individuals of the barbarian races managed to.

"Of course, they are but exceptions," mused Luo Feng. "Exceptions can't represent anything. Maybe the teacher exaggerated a bit to convince me."

Luo Feng walked step by step on the snow. Thoughts kept flooding his mind, which was affected by what the castellan had said. Although Luo Feng stayed firm both in front of his teacher and himself, the castellan was one of the three most powerful humans in the universe, and what he said could exert a huge impact on Luo Feng. That was why he needed to keep reminding himself of his motive in the first place.

He was firm not only because he had faith in himself but also because Mountain Sitting Guest was more powerful than the castellan.

Luo Feng wasn't blind. Without Mountain Sitting Guest, he would ponder for quite a while because of what the castellan said.

******

A creature hid behind the ice tablets at the peak of an iceberg, staring at the void afar.

"That is?"

The blurry figure trembled and flew out, landing on the snowfield tens of millions of kilometers away. It was a metal creature with a metallic luster all over his body. His eyes were like rubies, and the body was stooping—like a cheetah trying to stand on two feet.

He was staring at the footsteps on the snow.

"I've never seen footsteps like this." He examined them with his back bent, after which, he brightened. "Is it the human's? If so, it's my lucky day."

Sou!

He took off along the overlook, noticing another footstep thousands of kilometers away. He teleported himself over and over again toward the footsteps, and after dozens of times of doing so, he spotted a shadow wandering on the snow. Each step he took was more than 1,000 kilometers long.

"Haha! It is the human!" The metal creature was exhilarated. "I'm the first one to find him, which means I don't need to live in fear anymore!"

Hu!

He dove toward Luo Feng.

******

Luo Feng made an abrupt turn and saw a creature flying toward him. Luo Feng saw the two-meter-tall body covered with dimming gold and the ruby-like eyes.

"It's metal Ka Tuo. Ranked 626."

The powerful ones were killing each other in Ice Hell. Nobody would approach each other if they weren't close, just as the weaker ones wouldn't approach the top ten limit emperors. If they did so, they brought death upon themselves.

"A guy ranked 626 dares to challenge me," Luo Feng said. He stretched his left arm and 52 black balls appeared. "I'll test my second move on you."

The second move was extraordinarily complicated. However, it was so powerful that the engravings needed 52 stars to carry.

Hong, long, long!

Countless golden threads connected the stars and 1,000-meter

long beast god appeared. The beast god was dense, the scales on it were distinct. The scale-covered tail was the sturdiest. The scales on other parts of the beast god seemed to be covered with dust, whereas those on the tail were spick and span. There was a mystical vibe of law inside.

The sense of its aggressiveness emanated. Millions of square kilometers of space were trembling because of the beast god. The combination of 52 stars, the powerful secret techniques, and the stronger conception of beast god after 2,000 years resulted in outrageously magnificent power.

"No!" Metal Ka Tuo, who was originally overjoyed, was almost scared to death and teleported himself hundreds of thousands of kilometers afar, saying, "I mean you no harm, human. I come here in the name of Sky Wolf."

Luo Feng stood on the snow with the aggressive beast god floating above. Luo Feng looked at the beast god with satisfaction. He exercised this move because he wanted to try it in a real battle, and it seemed that it would wield significant power.

"Sky Wolf?" Luo Feng looked at the metal creature from afar, waved his hand, and the beast god disappeared. The 52 stars fell from the sky to his palms.

The metal creature flew toward Luo Feng carefully and smiled with respect. He took out the tablet of ranking. "Mr. Human, please see for yourself."

"Ranking?" Luo Feng skimmed the tablet and surveyed the ranking and the bounty Sky Wolf had offered to everyone in Ice Hell. "Why is Sky Wolf so keen to find me after he promised not to kill me to the public."

"I'll go check."

After thinking about it for a short while, Luo Feng decided to go. "Lead me there," Luo Feng said, looking at the metal creature.

Ka Tuo was thrilled and said, "Mr. Human, how lucky I am to be the first one to meet you. I'll lead you to the palace of the master of Southern Ice Hell now."

He teleported himself with Luo Feng to Southern Ice Hell.

******

Luo Feng looked at the palace from afar and the ice tablets with rankings around the palace.

"Mr. Human, I don't dare to teleport inside, so let's just fly there," Ka Tuo said.

"Let's go." Luo Feng nodded.

Sou!

Two beams of light traveled toward the palace, and two of the servants were alerted.

There were seven servants around Sky Wolf's palace; five of them were brought by Sky Wolf from the outside. They dealt with minor duties, while the other two were in charge of guarding the palace. These two had been mentally controlled by Sky Wolf ever since being severely damaged by him.

"Who? Who dares to trespass?" the servants of emperor level shouted after seeing the lights. "Um, isn't that...?" They looked at them carefully. "Human!"

"It's the human!"

They exchanged an eye contact after identifying the human whom their master had been dying to meet.

"It's me who brought the human here," Ka Tuo said with a smile.

"Lucky for you, Ka Tuo, you'll get the eternal protection of the master," one of the servants said. "Human, master has been waiting for you for more than 200 years. Come with me, both of you."

The servant brought both of them into the palace. Luo Feng observed the surroundings and was able to see the giant beast sitting on the throne. It was Sky Wolf of the royal demon race.

Sky Wolf looked enormous with its more-than-ten-kilometer-body, whereas it was to the golden-horned beast like an ant to an elephant.

"Human!" Its eyes opened and overlooked him.

"Sky Wolf." Luo Feng looked at Sky Wolf from afar and smiled. "Why are you looking for me so eagerly that you made such a promise to everyone in Ice Hell? Is there anything you want from me?"

"Of course, there is."

Sky Wolf looked to Ka Tuo, who was bowing with reverence. Sky Wolf said slowly, "You brought him here, Ka Tuo?"

"Yes," Ka Tuo answered.

"Okay," Sky Wolf said. "From now on, nobody will dare to touch you around your palace."

"Yes! Thank you, Mr. Sky Wolf." Ka Tuo was so thrilled that his body was trembling. As someone ranked lower than 600, he was one of the weaker in Ice Hell and had to live in fear all the time, which was why he often went out to look for Luo Feng, knowing he could get Sky Wolf's protection.

"Go." Sky Wolf didn't want to talk much with Ka Tuo.

Ka Tuo greeted Sky Wolf with veneration and bowed to Luo Feng with gratefulness before leaving the palace. Luo Feng couldn't help feeling for the weaker creatures in Ice Hell.

Hong, long, long. The door was closed.

"The door is closed, and only your servants are here." Lou Feng looked at Sky Wolf on the throne. "You can say what you want now."

Chapter 935: Sky Wolf's Treasure

Sky Wolf overlooked Luo Feng from the throne while a trace of amusement flashed in its eyes. His voice was echoing in the entire palace.

"Human, you should've figured out that I ask you here because I want to buy the anonymous account Scanner from you. And you should know how much I want to connect to the outer world after being detained here for such a long time."

"You're from the demon race, and I'm from the human race!" Luo Feng said as he looked up at Sky Wolf. "You should know that our races were hostile against each other and that the virtual universe will reject your consciousness. You can't enter the virtual universe even if you had the Scanner."

Souls and elements of consciousness were fundamentally different between races. The virtual universe belonged to humans. Lots of creatures from the demon race, the bug race, and the automation race wanted to use the virtual universe to convey their messages. However, the races deemed as enemies to humans couldn't connect to the virtual universe. Even the other barbarian races who were not hostile against humans would be restricted and monitored while using the virtual universe. Silver Eye, for example, was a special creature and was still be able to use the virtual universe, although he had limited access authority.

"I understand that," Sky Wolf said. He looked at Luo Feng. "However, you should also know that my servants are able to do that. Two of my servants are from the sister races of humans, and they're able to enter it."

"Where's your previous Scanner?" Luo Feng asked.

These sneaky enemies of the barbarian races would try everything to utilize the humans' virtual universe, which was quite handy. Thus, they could usually acquire the Scanner.

"Something went wrong, thus the access authority was taken away," Sky Wolf said.

"No wonder." Luo Feng grinned.

The monitor was especially sensitive and determined, and no matter how they tried to conceal the fact that they were using human slaves or barbarian slaves from the Hong Alliance to connect to the virtual universe, their access authorities would be stripped right away once a clue was found. Meanwhile, the access authority of the Scanner would be taken away. What was worse, it would use the coordinates to capture the phony!

As a result, countless numbers of individuals belonging to the barbarian races had been captured and killed. However, the five peak races were still trying to establish intelligence networks through the virtual universe.

"I don't have the Scanner," Luo Feng said, shaking his head.

"This lie may work on others, but my race has been fighting yours forever. Do you really think I'll buy that?" Sky Wolf was gazing at Luo Feng. "You can certainly make a Scanner using the artificial intelligence you're carrying. The most important thing is the access authority! And you're more than qualified to apply for an anonymous account."

Sky Wolf kept overlooking Luo Feng.

"Relax," he continued. "I don't want to give you a hard time. You know that there is a plethora of intelligence systems for espionage built by the barbarian races. Although it's difficult to be detected, the destruction of an intelligence system spells huge losses. Regardless, there are still so many barbarian races trying to build one intelligence system after another." Sky Wolf stared at Luo Feng. "It doesn't matter if I'm added, as there are so many of them, right?"

Sky Wolf gazed down at Luo Feng. "There's no point hiding my

intention because you can easily guess it," Sky Wolf said. "Yes, I want out. Although I'm not sure whether the intelligence system is still there or not, I still want to take my chances. I want out!"

"And you think I'll help a barbarian?" Luo Feng said.

"Not help, but a deal," Sky Wolf said. "The anonymous Scanner is easy to get, so selling one to me is not a crime. Besides, you're not helping me send the message. Rather, the only thing you will do is to sell an account. Innumerable accounts are being sold throughout the human race every day, and some of them are purchased secretly by the barbarian race."

Luo Feng stared right back at him. Sky Wolf was correct. It was commonplace to resell the accounts.

"I won't take it for granted," Sky Wolf said. "I'm willing to trade it for one treasure."

"Treasure?" Luo Feng lifted his eyebrow. "How generous you are."

Sky Wolf lifted its hoof, beside which appeared a black-stoned stick. On the two sides of it were beautiful sculptures, which made it look more like a piece of art than a weapon. However, the force it emanated filled the entire palace.

"One treasure for one anonymous Scanner," said Sky Wolf.

Sky Wolf watched Luo Feng. Yet Luo Feng was silent.

"You can have as many Scanners as you want in the human world," Sky Wolf said. "And you're only selling one Scanner. Both of us are trapped in Ice Hell, and all I want is to leave. Besides, I am only at the emperor level of undying. Me leaving is not a threat to you humans whatsoever."

Emperor undying? Even universe knights weren't influential in the human race and the demon race.

"No!" Luo Feng said, shaking his head.

"You're not selling the Scanner, even for a treasure?" Sky Wolf said.

He stood up abruptly and sharply became aggressive. The five servants were glaring at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng looked at Sky Wolf and kept shaking his head. "No deal!"

It was not because Luo Feng was inflexible; selling one Scanner was nothing. Besides, adventuring in the universe could sometimes prompt different races to cooperate under some special circumstances. Luo Feng didn't care about one Scanner. What he really cared about was the price.

One treasure? Not enough!

"Two! I'll give you the treasure I'm currently using!" Sky Wolf growled and glared at Luo Feng. "Two treasures for one Scanner that is cheap on the outside! This is the greatest price I'll pay. Take it, human! Even if you're adventuring in a secret area of the universe, it's not easy to get two treasures."

Luo Feng looked up at Sky Wolf and said mildly, "No deal."

"No deal?" Sky Wolf was startled. "Don't you know these are both treasures? Do you even know how many treasures there are in Ice Hell? Even invincible emperors like me, or Silver Eye, have no more than three! I'm keeping only the most important and most suitable one while giving the other two to you. How dare you?" Sky Wolf roared. "Don't you be so outrageous. I can use these two treasures to hire a universe knight to kill the most powerful of the human race. I'm not asking you to betray the human race; all I'm asking for is a Scanner. I'll ask you one more time, will you sell the Scanner?"

Luo Feng shook his head. "No."

Sky Wolf was infuriated.

Hong!

The entire palace was filled with belligerence.

Sky Wolf vanished from its throne while Luo Feng opened his wings with 52 black balls around his hand.

Howl!

Sky Wolf appeared right at where Luo Feng had been with its claws bent. He stared at Luo Feng bellicosely.

Luo Feng stood afar with 522 black balls floating around his hand and said, "I thought you made a promise to all of Ice Hell that you wouldn't attempt to kill me."

"It depends," Sky Wolf said hoarsely with its teeth exposed. The three strange scars on his forehead were squirming. "Goddamn human blocking my hope of getting out. Tell me now, I shouldn't kill you?"

"That sounds about right," said Luo Feng. "But you should know that if you do kill me, you'll never get the access authority to the Scanner. Without the access authority, the Scanner is useless to you." Luo Feng looked at the 52 black balls in his palms. "Besides. You can't kill me. Even Silver Eye, who's proficient in time law, couldn't do that." Luo Feng stared at Sky Wolf. "As for you, your edge is space law, but I'm faster than you. How are you going to kill me?"

Sky Wolf was as belligerent as one could be, but Luo Feng treated it with nonchalance. They looked at each other from afar.

"Okay," Sky Wolf said in a deep voice. "I bet your status is pretty high, given your power, and it's much easier to get treasures on the outside. No wonder these two treasures can't attract you. Well, I'll trade the Scanner for the most important treasure I have."

"Oh?" Luo Feng was bewildered. Sky Wolf possessed something more valuable?

"These two treasures will not belong to you, but I'll give you this one instead," Sky Wolf said as he glared at Luo Feng. "I acquired

this treasure by chance. This is something worth fighting for, even between universe knights. I killed a weak barbarian and got this in Ice Hell."

"What is this mysterious treasure?" asked Luo Feng. "Is it true treasures?" He grinned. "I won't believe that."

"Of course not," said Sky Wolf. "That would set the universe knights crazy. However, this one is much more precious than a treasure, though it can't compare with true treasures."

Sky Wolf slightly lifted its hoof, and a hexagonal stone tablet the size of a human palm came into sight. There was a beast roaring on the tablet.

The sculpture of the beast on the tablet made Luo Feng's heart tremble. He had seen several kinds of peculiar beasts, like the one on the Nine Universe Primal Chaos Tablet and the beast god. However, the beast on this tablet stirred some special feelings inside Luo Feng.

"What is this?" Luo Feng said, grinning. "This is merely an ordinary stone tablet. The only thing special about it is the shape and the sculpture. You call this treasure?"

"Just penetrate your will into it," said Sky Wolf, staring at Luo Feng. "Then you'll understand. This is the token of beast god inheritance from the most powerful Ancestral God School. Of course, it is much more valuable."

Chapter 936: Reckoning

"The most powerful Ancestral God School?" Luo Feng was a bit confused. Even though he knew nothing about this school, Token of Beast God Inheritance appealed to him. He reached out. "Let me see."

"Use your godly power penetration," Sky Wolf said, watching Luo Feng. "As for the token, I'll keep it until there's a deal, and you may use your power to probe it."

"You're too careful." Luo Feng glanced at Sky Wolf.

"Humans are cunning," Sky Wolf urged him. "Just go check if you want it."

Luo Feng looked at the hexagonal stone and injected an invisible spiritual force into it. The moment the force hit the stone, Luo Feng felt like he was entering an ancient world.

"When I'm going to the land of inheritance with the token, I can receive inheritance from beast god if I'm qualified. The coordinates are..."

Luo Feng collected the information, which described the stone as the token of soil and space merging law. Luo Feng was a little disappointed, as he was practicing the merging law of gold and space.

"Have you seen it?" Sky Wolf asked Luo Feng. "Make your decision."

"Let me think about it," Luo Feng answered.

"No need to rush. I've waited long enough to be patient."

Sky Wolf stared at Luo Feng. Luo Feng stood there, frowning, whilst connecting to the virtual universe.

******

The virtual universe, inside the room of Luo Feng's manor.

Luo Feng started to look up the necessary information on the laptop. He started by searching for the information of the school mentioned by Sky Wolf.

"Ancestral God School..."

Luo Feng's access authority was updated after he successfully got out of sector-level Primal Sky Mountain.

"Hmm," Luo Feng said, his spirits brightened a bit as he started to read the information on the screen. "Token of Beast God's Inheritance."

Ancestral God School was the most powerful organization in the universe. It was as old as the universe, and the highest level belonged to the legendary three Ancestral Gods. Three Ancestral Gods, Eight Beast God, 72 Holy Deified Generals, and 3,000 Prophets. There was a fixed number for each position. Although there could be candidates, each beast god position could only be filled by one. Unless the original beast god fell, there wouldn't be a new beast god, and the same rule applied to deified generals and prophets.

There were three forms of inheritance in Ancestral God School. The first was inheritance of prophets, the second was inheritance of deified generals, and the third was inheritance of beast god. Inheritance of beast god was the highest level of inheritance, with each of the eight beast gods being a universe master. Hundreds of millions of races had followed the path of the beast god, and some of them had even received its inheritance and successfully trained themselves to reach the beast god's level.

However, they still couldn't become a beast god unless the beast god they were following fell. Once one became the real beast god, its power would surge. That was why there was a fixed number for each position.

Ancestral God School was open, and it neither participated in the battle for power nor needed a large territory, as there were only

some 3,000 members in it. It was open to all the powerful creatures in the universe, and the inheritances they had were distributed across the universe to make sure they would be received by the right one. However, neither those who received the inheritances nor those who excelled at following the inheritances belonged to Ancestral God School—only the one who inherited the position.

Ancestral God School didn't meddle in any wars. Other than the holy ancestral gods, only the beast gods, the deified generals, and the prophets were among all the races in the universe. Beast gods were the strongest, followed by deified generals and prophets.

The inheritance crystals of prophets floated randomly in the universe and collected by one powerful one after another. However, the lands of deified-general inheritance were fixed in a particular area. As for the lands of beast-god inheritance, they were under Ancestral God School's control, and one must show the token to enter the land.

There were eight tokens, golden and space, wood and space, soil and space, light and time, wind and time, and thunder and time. Eight merging laws represented the eight paths of beast gods.

There was a rule for humans that if powerful humans managed to find the token, they could keep it for themselves. If they found it to be useless, they could hand it in, and they would be rewarded treasures as valuable as the token. Sometimes, they might get another token.

Luo Feng was amazed after reading all this information. He realized how supreme Ancestral God School was and how small the number of members was.

"Three ancestral gods and eight beast gods," Luo Feng said. "How powerful are ancestral gods? I reckon they're as powerful as teacher Mountain Sitting Gues. Only because of that could the Ancestral God School be the most powerful organization in the universe."

Elite strategy... Ancestral God School followed the elite strategy. It didn't have an abundant number of members, but it surpassed the six peaks.

"I can trade this token for the token that suits me," Luo Feng realized aloud. He was expecting something more. "Sky Wolf, today is your unlucky day!"

******

Ice Hell, inside the palace of Sky Wolf.

Sky Wolf stared at Luo Feng.

"You've made up your mind?" Sky Wolf said.

Luo Feng nodded. "Yes."

"Good. Now, do we have a deal or not?"

Sky Wolf said it more aggressively because it had a strong desire to go back to his clan. It was now an invincible emperor, where it was still lagging behind others at the same level, which stemmed from the lack of treasures! He was powerful enough, and all he needed were a couple of suitable treasures suitable, after which he could sharply improve his fighting and defending abilities.

Luo Feng looked at Sky Wolf. "Deal," he said.

"Smart choice." Sky Wolf laughed and said, "Human, give me the anonymous-account scanner first. I need to check it."

Luo Feng frowned. "Let's exchange our goods at the same time."

"Haha! Are you kidding me?" Sky Wolf said. "If I give the token to you directly, you can run out in no time and take away the access authority. Then how am I supposed to know whether or not you're telling the truth?"

Luo Feng glanced at it and started to contemplate. Sky Wolf was really sneaky, and he didn't know whether he would be tricked or not.

"Makes sense."

Luo Feng threw out a quantum computer. A godly force caught the quantum computer. Filled with excitement, Sky Wolf stared at the quantum computer. While he was detained in Ice Hell, he was only mediocre, but now he was an invincible emperor, which would make his clan value him significantly more. Once he managed to get back, he would be specially trained by his clan, and he might become a universe knight. And based on his power, he wouldn't be an average knight.

"Do as I said," Sky Wolf growled.

A figure came into view. It was a prepossessed, nine-meter tall female with a great body and six wings.

"Yes, master," the female servant answered with respect and took the quantum computer.

The female servant connected to the virtual universe. Sky Wolf looked at her with a thrill while glimpsing at Luo Feng a couple of times. He was watching the scene in silence and monitoring everything in his virtual universe. He had high access authority and was one of the highest levels in the human race. He had reached this level by being the student of the castellan and one of the top talents.

In reality, Luo Feng had constructed a local area network for that anonymous account, which meant he was the only one who used the account all along. For instance, there were lots of players of virtual games, and there were quite a few people drinking in the bar. However, these were all simulated; even Luo Feng couldn't tell that it was fake.

"Do whatever you want to do, including sending the message," Luo Feng muttered under his breath. "Unfortunately, you're currently in private virtual network, and it's been cut off from the entire virtual universe."

The female servant entered the game.

Luo Feng was monitoring everything. It was the number-three game, which dated back to 30,000 years ago. It was completely normal for a well-functioning game to be operated for more than 100 million years, given that human history had started zillions of years ago and some games were extremely popular. The game could be maintained as long as there were profits.

The female servant publicized the bounty mission.

Luo Feng noticed that the servant started by transferring a small amount of money from an anonymous account of the First Bank of the Universe to herself, after which she released a bounty mission to the entire game. She logged off after staying there for a while.

Inside the palace, Sky Wolf watched his servant. Finally, she said, "Master, there was no response."

"Human!" Sky Wolf roared, becoming furious. "You're playing me!"

Chapter 937: Luo Feng's Original Plan

Luo Feng looked up at the enormous Sky Wolf and grumbled, "Yes, I was playing you! But you were playing me as well!"

"How did I play you?" Sky Wolf roared. "I was exactly following the deal, which says I can test whether it's authentic or not! And you say I am playing you?"

"Do you really think I'm so stupid that I would allow you to connect to the virtual universe without the token? I still have a brain." Luo Feng smirked. "I bet you were trying to send the message to the demon race as a means of testing."

Sky Wolf was dazed.

"Publicizing a bounty mission in a virtual game with countless players is indeed a smart move," Luo Feng said coyly. "There might be some spies among the players, and there's no way for the system of the virtual universe to know who the spies are. Humph! You can send your message by this easily." Luo Feng looked at Sky Wolf with a baffling look. "If you had succeeded, my Scanner would have meant nothing to you, and you would have achieved your goal. However, you would still have the inheritance token. Do you think you would really give it to me at that point?"

"I always keep my promises," Sky Wolf answered in a hoarse voice.

"Nonsense," Luo Feng sniggered. "I would be a joke if I believed the promise of an enemy race."

Sky Wolf was stupefied and hesitant.

"Tell me, Sky Wolf, how can I trust you?" Luo Feng said, studying him.

Sky Wolf kept staring at the human in front of it. Sky Wolf, as a member of the royal demon race, was ruthless and cunning, and was the one in Ice Hell that perfectly manifested such

characteristics. What was more, he was proficient in disguising himself. Still, even though he always acted kindly during the time he had been detained in Ice Hell, he did occasionally reveal his true self.

He was, indeed, luring the human with his token and trying to send the message in the name of testing. Once he got a response, it would mean the message was received, and it wouldn't matter even if the human took away the access authority. By then, he wouldn't have to give the human the inheritance token.

"What do you have in mind?" Sky Wolf said in a low voice.

"Since we've played all our cards, let's be honest with each other from now on," Luo Feng said, carefully watching Sky Wolf. "There's only one rule. You give me the token first—before I give you the Scanner!"

"No!" Sky Wolf roared. "What if you take the token and run away?"

"Haha! You, as the master of Southern Ice Hell, fear that I'll run away?" Luo Feng gazed at it.

"Who in Ice Hell doesn't know you're good at escaping?" Sky Wolf stared at Luo Feng with its blue eyes.

Luo Feng shook his head. "I'm indeed good at escaping, but you're an invincible emperor. I don't have any other ideas if you're not on board with this one—unless you can offer me one!"

Sky Wolf sat there, pondering for a long time. He couldn't think of anything else. He couldn't come up with anything that could gain the trust of this cunning but cautious human.

"I'll leave if you can't make a decision," Luo Feng said, shaking his head and smiling. "What's the point of having the token if you can never get out of Ice Hell?"

"Wait..." Sky Wolf gazed at Luo Feng with hesitation, then shouted, "Fine! I'll give you the token! But you must give me the

access, and if it's still fake, I swear I'll have all the creatures in Ice Hell hunt you down!"

"Rest assured," Luo Feng said with a smile. "Have some faith in human's reputation."

"It's foolish to trust one's enemies," Sky Wolf growled and threw Luo Feng the token.

"So, you do know it's a foolish thing to do," said Luo Feng.

Luo Feng caught the token with his hands. The hexagonal tablet was heavy, and he could feel its extraordinary nature just by holding it. He was excited and thought to himself, I can trade it for another token, perhaps the one of special inheritance. This token is far superior to the inheritance of demon-note deified general, and maybe I can get an incredible reward.

"The access is granted," Luo Feng said to Sky Wolf.

"Yes, master," the female servant said with respect and connected to the virtual universe with her mind.

Luo Feng looked at her in silence, then connected to the virtual universe.

******

Virtual universe, the peak of Thunder Island, inside the palace of the Primal Chaos City Leader.

Luo Feng went to see the Primal Chaos City Leader right after he read the information of the ancestral god school and the token online. The interior of the palace permeated an air of chaos.

"Teacher," Luo Feng greeted with veneration.

The airflow conveyed the voice of the Primal Chaos City Leader. "What happened?"

"It's about the beast god token," Luo Feng said.

A figure covered with a golden cape walked out. The Primal

Chaos City Leader looked serene, though there was a trace of surprise in his eyes. He was a bit irritated by how Luo Feng diverted his attention, but he had to admit that Luo Feng was indeed lucky.

Luo Feng once fought Hei Ti Emperor as Blade River Emperor in the outer-domain battlefield, which was a piece of widely spread news, and the Primal Chaos City Leader had known about it all along. Although Luo Feng turned off the synchronized transmittal of the virtual universe, lots of powerful ones among the human race had videotaped the battle.

The Primal Chaos City Leader was surprised that Luo Feng had fought Hei Ti Emperor as a sector lord in the first place, and then he noticed that the black balls were a series of treasures. Like true treasures, there were different levels of treasures. Treasures could be rated by different functions; offensive treasures were not as precious as defensive ones, which were inferior to sealing ones. And different treasures came with different powers. Series of treasures were definitely top-tier. The seven blades owned by Seven Blade Emperor were a series of treasures.

"How did my student obtain the token right after he got the series?" the Primal Chaos City Leader asked, startled. The token was certainly as valuable as a series of treasures. The token stood for the chance to be in the Ancestral God School.

"Allow me to elaborate," Luo Feng answered.

"Please do," the Primal Chaos City Leader said.

"I went to Black Flower Secret Region this time," Luo Feng started to tell his stories without revealing his real intention, which was to find the black metal. "I didn't panic after being captured in Ice Hell, as my core is outside. I treat it as the practice field. Although the five invincible emperors are all mighty, I have some chances. The invincible emperors only have a few treasures, and defending treasures are scarce. I plan to train myself in Ice

Hell, and once I've completed the third chapter of Nan Shen Seven move, I can exercise the second form of Sha Wu Wing, which can disturb space. By then, even universe knights won't be able to seal me, not to mention the invincible emperors in Ice Hell."

"Being the fastest one makes me undefeatable," Luo Feng went on. "I'm almost as powerful as them now. When I complete the third chapter and become stronger, I'll have no problem suppressing and severely injuring them. I bought a considerable number of treasures before, and I'll give the purple clock to one of the invincible emperors I might defeat and control in the future. As long as I have the defending treasure and an invincible emperor servant, I'm confident that I can defeat them one by one. This was my original plan, which was to train myself and defeat them one by one."

The Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. Luo Fen was, indeed, filled with aspirations, daring to fight invincible emperors as a sector lord. However, the invincible emperors could barely reach the threshold, as they had too few treasures and were rather inferior to the real ones like True Yan Emperor.

"However, I found this beast god token," Luo Feng said, and he briefly summarized the story of Sky Wolf. "If Sky Wolf buys my story, I can get the token without having to put up a fight. However, even if it knows more about my intentions, I'll try to get the token in the first place. I can't stand staying in Ice Hell for 10,000 years after seeing the token. I want to get out and go to the land of inheritance. I want to be stronger!"

Luo Feng added with reverence, "I can't get out unless I stay here for another 10,000 years. I need your help, teacher. Teacher... I'll have to give the Scanner to Sky Wolf if I want to get the token. My first plan is to escape after getting the token. Sky Wolf can't do anything, as I'm proficient in defending myself. The second plan is to let it connect to the virtual universe and send the message, after which the demon race will appear, and so will teacher. Would

teacher give some advice? If teacher prefers neither of those options, I can wait here for another 10,000 years."

The Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng and beamed. "I can see that your mind is fixated on the land of inheritance, and it will be tortuous for you to stay here," he said. "Let Sky Wolf send the message. Although it's an invincible emperor now, it was weak before, and the demon race won't believe everything it says. It's impossible for the demon race to send a Universe master."

"Even if it is a Universe master, I can overpower that," said Luo Feng.

"Get the token first, in case the demon race sends a Universe master to protect Sky Wolf," the Primal Chaos City Leader said. "The token is indeed valuable. My body is wandering in the universe these days and would slaughter for one of true treasures. It's worth the effort to get a token."

"Yes," Luo Feng said. "Okay."

The Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng expectantly. He felt that he was indeed lucky, and it would be a waste for him to spend 10,000 years in Ice Hell. If he went to the land of inheritance, he might encounter some other rewards. After all, Luo Feng kept pleasantly surprising him after becoming his student. The only thing that slightly bothered him was Luo Feng's choice to follow both the path of a spirit reader and that of a warrior.

Chapter 938: Master of Sky Wolf

Ice Hell, inside Sky Wolf's palace.

Sky Wolf stared at its female servant anxiously, brimming with hope, as the servant tested the virtual universe.

"I've been detained here for an infinite amount of time," roared Sky Wolf. "This will decide whether I can get out or now!" Sky Wolf was suddenly aggressive—a rare glimpse of his true nature. "It has to connect. It has to!"

Time was passing by while Sky Wolf felt like he had been through centuries. The servant opened her eyes.

"Is it done?" Sky Wolf grumbled.

"Yes, master," the servant answered respectfully. "Someone just responded."

"Someone responded?"

Sky Wolf trembled and felt its blood heating up. He had never been so thrilled after being detained here.

"Awesome! Awesome!" Sky Wolf howled. The sound spread out from the palace.

"Sky Wolf," Luo Feng said.

"Haha! Human, you are a man of your word." Sky Wolf said, looking down at Luo Feng.

The "response" was the confirmation of receipt of the message, which would be forwarded to Sky Wolf's teacher. How could he not be exhilarated to know he was about to get out? Sky Wolf had been as steady as an iceberg before, whereas now, he was as aroused as a volcano about to burst.

"Then I'll walk myself out," Luo Feng said, smiling.

"Haha!" Sky Wolf burst into laughter. "Be my guest."

The door opened, rumbling. Luo Feng glanced at the door, open his wings and flew away.

"Congratulations, master!" the servants said as they started to celebrate.

Sky Wolf, however, said, "No need to elaborate. Although the purple knight can't keep an eye on everything that happens in Ice Hell, we'll be in trouble if he finds out. Be constantly on alert until we actually get out. We'll just wait here and will get out in a day or two."

Sky Wolf looked up at the boundless ice world outside, "Human, I'll let you keep the token for a while to avoid any trouble. I'll get it back and dedicate it to my race after the supreme being arrives."

Thinking of this, Sky Wolf couldn't help but laugh. Under his delicate manipulation, the sound only echoed inside the palace.

******

After Luo Feng left the palace, Ji Hong Emperor appeared beside him and teleported himself.

Deep in the snow of Eastern Ice Hell, inside Luo Feng's habitation, Luo Feng was overjoyed.

"I've acquired the beast god inheritance token," Luo Feng said. "I didn't expect Ancestral God School to be so powerful and to own all the eight beast gods. Oh, right—there were different sculptures of beast gods on the golden pool of Seven Blade Emperor."

Suddenly, the scene entered his mind of the birth of the sealed star and how Life Falling Emperor had launched a sneak attack against Seven Blade Emperor. It had been during the attack that Seven Blade Emperor had pulled out a special golden pool.

That might have something to do with Ancestral God School, thought Luo Feng.

"It seems that Seven Blade Emperor also got the special

inheritance." Luo Feng was filled with suspense. "I'll go to the land of inheritance and see how it is. Sky Wolf... I'll need to thank you, this time." Luo Feng looked up and smiled. "I'm waiting for the supreme being of your race. Let's see whether it will be my teacher Primal Chaos City Leader's rival."

******

The demon race did set up lots of intelligence networks in the virtual universe of the humans. However, ordinary undying were not allowed to access it, and even emperor-level undying were not allowed unless under special circumstances, as using the network was extremely dangerous.

Although there was a plethora of delicate methods to conceal their identities, supervision was everything in the virtual universe. Thus, even a tiny shred of a clue might expose the entire network, which was costly.

"Si Bo Wa is still alive!"

Inside the territory of the demon race was a prosperous planet where lots of young demon races were living. However, on the planet lived a powerful universe knight.

"Si Bo Wa became my third student when I had just been made a universe knight," he said. "I haven't heard from him for God knows how long. I can't believe he's still alive." A merely two-meter-long Sky Wolf with blue feathers was joyful inside a peaceful palace. "And there's more. It became an invincible emperor without any resources or help in Ice Hell. Haha! I expected Si Bo Wa to become a universe knight before, and I was right all the time. If it could have stayed in the clan and had been provided with the proper resources, he could've become a universe knight long ago."

The seemingly ordinary Sky Wolf was walking around.

"Teacher, did you decide to come out?" A ten-kilometer-long Sky Wolf appeared and shrunk to two meters. The emperor-level Sky

Wolf was another student of the universe knight, and it was the owner of the planet.

"I still have some things to deal with." The blue Sky Wolf howled and vanished. "I'll come back in a few days."

"Yes, teacher."

******

Deep inside the territory of the demon race floated a palace among the stars. It was surrounded by blazing fires of rainbow color. Each ball of flame was as large as a star.

The scene could not be seen unless one was within close proximity of the palace's location. Apparently, the space and time around the palace were both twisted and independent of the outside universe. The palace had the shape of a ball of flame, and it was silent inside. On the enormous square in front of the palace appeared a blurry figure, which condensed into a ten-kilometer-long blue Sky Wolf.

"Leader," the universe knight groveled on the ground and greeted.

The eye-shaped sculpture on the palace blinked and a rumbling voice came out, "What's the matter?"

"Leader," the Sky Wolf said with veneration. "I just received news of my student, one who became my student when I was first made a universe knight. I valued it the most until it disappeared a short while after becoming my student. His name is Si Bo Wa."

"I," the rumbling voice continued. "I know of him. His name was on the list of 'Turning-Back-Time Rescue.' I tried to do that and save it, but I failed. I thought it was mentally controlled by some other powerful ones."

Although Si Bo Wa had not been as powerful when it went missing as it was now, it had been qualified to be resurrected due to its potential. Unfortunately, it couldn't be successfully revived

and was thus forgotten.

"I received its message," the Sky Wolf said. "It was in Ice Hell of the Black Flower Secret Region, and it has been detained there for an eternity."

"Ice Hell of the purple knight and blue knight?"

"Yes, leader." The Sky Wolf continued, "It became an invincible emperor without any resources or instructions."

"An invincible emperor?" The sound was mixed with surprise.

"I wouldn't dare lie," the Sky Wolf answered. "Leader, I want to go and rescue my student. However, I'm not sure whether I'm powerful enough to do that with the purple knight and the blue knight guarding Ice Hell—especially with the purple knight present, who was one of the deified generals of Ancestral God School. That's why I want to ask Sky Flower Knight to help. But I'm afraid that he won't be willing to do so. Hence, I came here to notify you first."

Sky Flower Knight was the second most powerful creature of the Sky Wolf clan. Although he was only a limit universe knight, he was as powerful as an ordinary Universe master. He was definitely an overlord of the universe. And the most powerful one was the master of Sky Wolf, who was the owner of this palace.

"If Sky Flower is willing to show up, together with the deterrence of our race, the two knights in Ice Hell won't dare reject us," the Sky Wolf said.

"Sky Flower is in a dangerous place, and I can't reach him," spoke the rumbling sound. "Even I have no idea when he will come back to the original universe. Now that it is an invincible emperor, I'll go myself."

"Leader, you'll go by yourself?" the Sky Wolf said with gratefulness. "Si Bo Wa will be filled with honor and gratitude if it knows."

"I haven't seen the purple knight for a long time."

All of a sudden, the balls of flames flew toward the palace, shrinking to small tongues of flames that merged into sculptures of flames within the palace, making the aura in the palace all the more vigorous.

"This is one of true treasures," the Sky Wolf said as he admired what he had just seen.

This palace was one of true treasures possessed by the Sky Wolf clan. The Master of Sky Wolf had obtained it when the universe first came into being.

"I'll go now."

The entire palace vanished.

Only the blue Sky Wolf was still floating among the stars, and he couldn't have been more joyful.

"Si Bo Wa," he said, "will be safely brought back!"

Chapter 939: Arrival of the Primal Chaos City Leader

Inside the Ice Hell star band of the Black Flower Secret Region.

A towering palace surrounded by flames appeared out of nowhere, and the second it appeared, it became the core of the entirety Ice Hell, exerting an aggressive and mighty force on it. All the undying playing in the Ice Hell star band instantly began shivering out of fright.

"What's the point of scaring them as Master of Sky Wolf?"

A trace of purple light and then blue light flew to the floating palace.

"They ought to grovel upon my arrival," the rumbling sound came out of the palace, and a figure covered with fire walked out.

The figure looked like the manifestation of law of the universe. Tongues of flames surrounded him, and the dark Sky Wolf was walking at a slow pace. The space and time around him were in his control completely, and he was the owner of the entire Ice Hell star band! Even the blue knight and the purple knight had to revere him.

He was the greatest being of the Sky Wolf clan: Master of Sky Wolf!

"There is a sky wolf detained in Ice Hell." His voice was rumbling, trembling the entire domain. "Let it out."

The purple knight and the blue knight gave each other a look. There was an immense number of demon-race creatures, and they hadn't expected that Master of Sky Wolf would show up for merely an undying.

"Please wait a minute, Master of Sky Wolf," the blue knight said and waved his hand.

A cylindrical icicle appeared on his palm. Since Master of Sky Wolf arrived, he needed to carry his treasure to greet him. Ice Hell was one of the sealing treasures, which was scarce and precious; together with the blue knight's talents, its tremendous power could be fully utilized.

The blue knight's mind entered the Ice Hell and locked onto the Sky Wolf, kicking it out easily.

"Get out!"

The white Sky Wolf didn't stand straight until rolling among the stars. After looking around, exhilaration filled its eyes. When it saw the purple and blue figures, and the palace engulfed in fire where stood the forceful black Sky Wolf, it recalled the legend of the Sky Wolf clan. It couldn't believe its eyes.

"Leader!" Si Bo Wa groveled with a thrill.

The legendary leader of Sky Wolf clan! The eternal leader!

"Purple knight, how powerful is this Sky Wolf?" The black Sky Wolf looked at the purple knight from afar.

Although the purple knight and Master of Sky Wolf bore some grudges against each other, the knight had to suppress his hostility. Master of Sky Wolf wasn't just any Universe master with invaluable treasures.

"Master of Sky Wolf," said the purple knight, "this one is particularly talented, and it is ranked among the top five in Ice Hell. If it were equipped with some suitable treasures, it would rival other invincible emperors."

"Then why did you detain it, knowing its potential?" Master of Sky Wolf kept grumbling.

"It's my Ice Hell that detained it," the blue knight said, clearly irritated.

Master of Sky Wolf looked to the blue knight.

Rumble!

An invisible force assailed the blue knight, whose body bounced away and cracked, after which the pieces were assembled.

"Who allowed you to speak?" the voice was muddled with anger. Coldness flashed through his eyes, which terrified the purple knight.

"Master of Sky Wolf!" the purple knight screamed.

"Relax. Because of you, I won't actually hurt him." Master of Sky Wolf calmed himself down. "It was just a small punishment."

The blue knight flew back to the purple knight. He was filled with exasperation, but all he could do was to suppress it. The purple knight smiled and said, "Master of Sky Wolf, I've already let your people go. If you want to catch up with me, you can come with me to the Ice Hell star band, and I can invite some friends."

"I'll pass."

Master of Sky Wolf glimpsed at the purple knight and looked down to Si Bo Wa.

Si Bo Wa said, "Leader, there's a human in Ice Hell, and he has the beast god token."

It didn't dare to tell him that it was the one who had given the human the token, as it was afraid to enrage this supreme being that it had only heard of before.

"Beast god token?" Master of Sky Wolf looked to the purple knight. "Let the human out, and I'll take him with me," Master of Sky Wolf said.

It was an excellent deal to get the token with a word, as the tokens were limited resources to a race.

"Human?" The purple knight and the blue knight exchanged eye contact and realized they were in trouble. The purple knight shook his head. "There was no human."

"Don't you dare tell me there's not!" the voice blasted, trembling its surroundings. The space was twisted like waves. "Of course, you know that there's a human inside!"

"No, there's not," the purple knight said and kept shaking his head.

The two knights didn't have the guts to hand in the human. They had already contacted Mountain Sitting Guest and confirmed that the human was a student highly valued by him. Everyone knew how mighty Mountain Sitting Guest was. Even Master of Sky Wolf was nothing compared to him. They might manage to survive if they wronged Master of Sky Wolf. However, even the Ancestral God School couldn't protect them if they wronged Mountain Sitting Guest!

"There's no human," agreed the blue knight, shaking his head, too. "The little one must have misremembered it. There was a human before, but he died a long time ago."

Master of Sky Wolf looked at the purple knight and the blue knight in shock. He could not believe they were unwilling to give him the human. Si Bo Wa, standing to the side, was also looking at its leader and waiting for his hint. If he was to give up, it would say the similar thing as the two knights. Otherwise, it would tell a different story.

"Interesting," Master of Sky Wolf said. "Who is this human? He doesn't sound like a nobody." Master of Sky Wolf stood in front of the towering palace and overlooked the knights. "Did a supreme being of the human race make a pact with you both so that you two would rather defy me? If it's something good to humans, I'll surely sabotage it! Give me the human!" Master of Sky Wolf glared at them. "Or I'll get him myself!"

"Leader! They were lying! I just saw the human!" Si Bo Wa shouted.

"Did you hear me?" Master of Sky Wolf looked down at the

knights.

"Master of Sky Wolf!" The purple knight said with fury. "Are you going to fight us because of a human?"

"I'll suggest you back off!" the blue knight said.

They were already secretly notifying Mountain Sitting Guest, who had unbelievable skills, to share the news. However, Mountain Sitting Guest only responded, "Give him the human and meddle. Don't tell him my relationship with this human.

"Give me the human!" demanded Master of Sky Wolf. "No matter who's behind him, I won't be afraid. Even if he's the founder of Gigantic Axe!"

The purple knight and the blue knight gave each other a look. They were pondering why Mountain Sitting Guest would tell them to stand aside and not expose the relationship. Master of Sky Wolf would certainly go away if he heard the name "Mountain Sitting Guest." But what was the point of this if Mountain Sitting Guest said so?

"Okay." The purple knight nodded. "We'll let him go."

******

Deep in the snow of Eastern Ice Hell.

Luo Feng sat in the living room and waiting for the Primal Chaos City Leader.

Rumble!

He suddenly felt the entire sealing force squeezing him. Space cracked at the front. He was squeezed out without even putting up a fight.

Luo Feng opened his wings and floated among the stars.

It must be my teacher, Luo Feng thought.

But he was startled by what he saw. The purple knight and the

blue knight were standing afar, and on the other side floated a gigantic palace surrounded by flames. The power that emanated from it was colossal and surpassed that of the Sky-Swallowing Palace which Luo Feng had seen before. The owner, a black Sky Wolf, petrified Luo Feng, and next to him stood a subservient white Sky Wolf.

It's the Sky Wolf of Ice Hell, Luo Feng thought to himself.

"Human," Si Bo Wa said, looking down at Luo Feng smugly. "The token was only kept by you temporarily. And now, the token and your life will both be gone."

Master of Sky Wolf looked down at Luo Feng. "You seem to have a strong background," the master said. "Unfortunately, you're dying today and will not be resurrected."

Where is my teacher? He should've arrived a long time ago.

"Die!" Master of Sky Wolf said nonchalantly.

All forms of sound went off and spread to all the creatures detained in Ice Hell. Luo Feng and Si Bo Wa heard it, too, and so did the two knights and Master of Sky Wolf.

Among the Ice Hell star band, a blurry river of sky that was several light years long appeared and covered the entire star band. It looked infinitely long, as if it were opening an entrance to another universe.

On the river floated various kinds of treasures, each of whose force permeated the space.

"It's thousand-treasure river!" cried the purple knight, dazed.

"Thousand-treasure river!" the blue knight said and looked to Master of Sky Wolf, gloating.

Master of Sky Wolf was bewildered. He roared, standing in front of the palace with his claws. "Primal Chaos City Leader! Why don't you show yourself, since you're here?"

The fire around him soared with spread everywhere, but it was extinguished by the force from the river. The palace started to oscillate as if it would topple at any minute.

Chapter 940: Seeing Through

The weak undying, together with Luo Feng and Si Bo Wa, were stunned after seeing this. The thousand-treasure river was only a reflection of a river that cast a shadow on the stars, which was why it looked blurry. However, Sky Wolf Palace could only barely resist its mighty power.

"That is the first time I have ever seen thousand-treasure river!" the blue knight sighed. "It is indeed forceful and unstoppable. According to the legend, thousand-treasure river is made up of 1,000 invaluable treasures, and if it was dismantled, it would become 1,000 individual invaluable treasures!"

"Dismantle? Who could do that?" said the purple knight. "The birth of this river is for the treasures to strengthen each other. Each of the treasure has its flaws and is only as powerful as an ordinary top-tier treasure. Only assembling them into the thousand-treasure river can make the invulnerable treasure that roams the universe. You have never seen how the Primal Chaos City Leader slaughters other creatures. This is only an body of him. His original body is more powerful than this."

"I've heard of it before," the blue knight said as he nodded. "Primal Chaos City Leader. One of the bodies sits in the primal universe and the other in the original one, taking charge of the virtual universe company. And the strongest original is meant for killing."

Luo Feng couldn't hear the conversation between the blue knight and the purple knight.

"How powerful my teacher is!" muttered Luo Feng. "And this is only one of his bodys."

Luo Feng looked at the boundless projection of the river and Master of Sky Wolf, who was struggling to control Sky Wolf Palace inside the project. Luo Feng admired his teacher even more.

Teacher Mountain Sitting Guest thinks that I can become a Universe master and utilize star tower in the future—even surpass the Primal Chaos City Leader in the future? thought Luo Feng, filled with aspiration.

The Primal Chaos City Leader could annihilate everything within several square light years with a snap of his fingers!

A gigantic figure that was 10,000 kilometers tall walked on the waves of the river toward him with a huge stone stick. "Master of Sky Wolf," said the figure. "It is outrageous for you to kill my human student."

"What is that?" gasped Luo Feng.

He was thrilled. This was the first time he had seen the other body of his teacher. It was 6,000 miles tall and silvery white. There were 1,000 antennas on its head, and the eyes looked tranquil. He walked on the waves barefoot and held a rugged stick. Only a seemingly ordinary shirt was covering the body, whereas the sound of the treasures on the shirt echoed. Each thread of the shirt looked like a running river.

"Is... is this a special life?" Luo Feng knew that it was a special life, as there were no clans in the human race that looked like this. What's more, it was 6,000 miles tall. If it wasn't originally this tall, enlarging one's size would only make it weaker.

"This is the Primal Chaos City Leader!" Si Bo Wa was dazed and had to reluctantly admit that the Primal Chaos City Leader was indeed more forceful than the leader of its clan. Si Bo Wa glanced at Luo Feng. "He is able to bring the Primal Chaos City Leader here?"

When the Primal Chaos City Leader walked toward everyone with the rugged stick in his hand and thousand-treasure shirt on his body, Master of Sky Wolf did look comparatively inferior.

"Primal Chaos City Leader, you think so highly of this human

that you come here by yourself," Master of Sky Wolf said.

"Didn't you come for this little one here?" the Primal Chaos City Leader asked, looking at the tiny white Sky Wolf.

There was no comparison between their sizes, but they were at least equally forceful. As for the blue knight and the purple knight, they became the insignificant parts of the conversation and were overlooked by both the Primal Chaos City Leader and the master. As for Luo Feng and Si Bo Wa, they were less than negligible.

"I didn't come here with a purpose." Master of Sky Wolf suddenly looked to Luo Feng. "You, on the other hand, gave this human an invaluable treasure."

Luo Feng was startled.

"An invaluable treasure? He possesses an invaluable treasure?" Si Bo Wa was stupefied and looked to Luo Feng.

"What?" the purple knight and the blue knight said, also looking toward Luo Feng in shock. This was new information for them.

"Let me check," Master of Sky Wolf said in a hoarse voice. "Blade River Emperor? Interesting. I can't believe a sector lord is able to disguise himself as an undying with true treasures treasure and garner such a reputation. This student you have is nothing like the fallen Ke Di. Let's see which invaluable treasure he possesses. According to the information, Blade River Emperor is incredibly rapid, so I assume this wing is his invaluable treasure? Am I right, Primal Chaos City Leader?"

The purple knight, the blue knight, and Si Bo Wa were all dumbfounded.

Sector lord? He was only a sector lord?

"He can escape from Silver Eye as merely a sector lord?" Si Bo Wa was bewildered. "It must be true treasures treasure which makes him so powerful."

"Impressive, indeed," said the purple knight.

"He can be this mighty as only a sector lord and earn such fame," said the blue knight. "No wonder Mountain Sitting Guest values him this much."

The purple knight and the blue knight sighed. They would also definitely aspire to get true treasures treasure if they had known Luo Feng had one, but they wouldn't have actually had the guts to take it by force.

Luo Feng was in shock. He looked at Master of Sky Wolf and thought, Teacher Mountain Sitting Guest is right. I do have three invaluable treasures, the tower pearl, star map, and Sha Wu Wing, respectively. However, I've never shown them in front of the master, and the powerful creatures shouldn't be able to recognize them unless I wield their powers. Does he suspect it simply because I'm so fast?

This Master of Sky Wolf is perceptive, indeed. true treasures treasure can only trick the knights.

Luo Feng recalled how Pu Ti and teacher Mountain Sitting Guest were able to see his real identity as a sector lord. true treasures treasure wasn't as effective at concealing the aura.

******

The Primal Chaos City Leader said, "An ordinary invaluable treasure is nothing, and of course I'll give it to the juniors of my race who have great potential. This is how the supreme beings are made. Do you know why we of the human race have less undying than the demon race, yet we have more supreme undying? It is because we're willing to give while you are not. Will you, as Master of Sky Wolf, be willing to give this little one an invaluable treasure?"

Si Bo Wa was thrilled. An invaluable treasure? Could it really get an invaluable treasure? It couldn't help glancing at the master, but

then it looked down instantly. true treasures treasure could only be rewarded by the master, and Si Bo Wa could never ask for it directly.

"Everyone knows you humans prospered because of the virtual universe," Master of Sky Wolf roared. "And it's not your business to tell me how to train my descendants. I'm done talking to you now." He finished and brought Si Bo Wa into the palace.

The Primal Chaos City Leader burst into laughter, which permeated the thousand-treasure river and made the Sky Wolf Palace tremble. Master of Sky Wolf growled and flew away, entering the dark universe after hitting light speed. Apparently, within the power range of the river, Master of Sky Wolf couldn't teleport himself even with the palace.

"This Sky Wolf is still so reckless." The Primal Chaos City Leader shook his head and looked to the two knights. "Thank you for taking care of my student for the past two thousand years," he said. Then he vanished together with Luo Feng and the river.

"Thank us?" the blue knight said, a bit dazed. "I heard that the Primal Chaos City Leader was belligerent, but now he thanks us? Why is he so good-tempered?"

"Good-tempered?" The purple knight sneered. "You only say that because you've never seen how the Primal Chaos City Leader slaughtered before. The master dared to speak only because he was innately reckless, but did you realize he fled after only saying a few words? Among the five forces of the human race, the virtual universe company is as powerful as the Battle-axe Coliseum. Do you really think the Primal Chaos City Leader can control the entire virtual universe by being good-tempered? How can his original be famous for slaughtering if he's good-tempered?

The blue knight blinked.

"Be careful," the purple knight said. "The most powerful of the six peak races were all ruthless, and they can destroy us in the blink of

an eye if necessary."

"I get it." The blue knight nodded.

******

Inside the primal secret region.

After one god-country transport and a million-lightyear teleportation, the Primal Chaos City Leader arrived at one of the many secret regions of the human race, the primal secret region. The Primal Chaos City Leader jumped up with the thousand-treasure shirt and turned into a boundless river, surrounding the stars and the palaces.

"The river," Luo Feng said. He looked at the stars and couldn't see the end of the river.

"The thousand-treasure river can transform into everything, and this river is its original look." The Primal Chaos City Leader pointed at it. "Luo Feng, the reason that I could intimidate the master is this river. And an invaluable treasure like this is the cornerstone of our race! You are a man with luck. Perhaps you will be able to get an invaluable treasure like this in the future."

"I'll try my best," Luo Feng answered.

Chapter 941: Famous in the Universe

The Primal Chaos City Leader smiled and said, "Then I'll wait and see."

Thousand-treasure river was a top-tier invaluable treasure, and even most of the masters of the universe couldn't obtain treasures like this. The Primal Chaos City Leader was just saying this to encourage Luo Feng instead of actually expecting him to get a top-tier invaluable treasure.

Perhaps you don't know, teacher, but I've already had two invaluable treasures, thought Luo Feng, one of which being Force Armor, and it's thousand-treasure river's equal. As for Star Tower, it's one of the most powerful invaluable treasures in the entire universe.

The Primal Chaos City Leader shrunk to the size of Luo Feng from a planet-sized giant.

"Luo Feng, there's something I need to ask you," the Primal Chaos City Leader said. "But the choice is yours."

"Please, teacher," Luo Feng answered.

Beside the river and the palaces, they started to talk.

"True Yan Emperor is also your teacher, and that's why I need to tell you more about him," the Primal Chaos City Leader said gradually and calmly. "As a matter of fact, True Yan Emperor's also practicing on the path of beast god."

"What?" Luo Feng was dazed.

"There are a few powerful ones on that path, but they all kept it as a secret," the Primal Chaos City Leader explained. "The most talented ones of your generation, like you and Seven Blade Emperor, are all following the path of beast god. However, beast gods belong to Ancestral God School, whose existence is a top secret in the universe, and thus people who train themselves

following the path of beast all keep in as a secret, and so do you."

Luo Feng nodded. Only a small number of people knew that Luo Feng was following the path of beast god.

"I told you this because your teacher True Yan Emperor is following the branch of soil and space," The Primal Chaos City Leader said.

"Soil and space!" Luo Feng said with shock. The beast god inheritance token he just obtained was of soil and space!

"You're a smart person, and you must have guessed what I mean," the Primal Chaos City Leader looked at the boundless thousand-treasure river and said. "Seven Blade Emperor got a token from our race before. Given your potential, you'll also get one when you officially become an undying."

"On the contrary," he continued, "your teacher True Yan Emperor is not as talented as you. He only became an invincible emperor by training for an extraordinarily long time and getting instructions from other powerful ones within our race. It's impossible for him to get a token from the race. He filed an application before, but the race has never granted him any approval, and thus, he can only earn the token himself. However, the tokens are some of the scarcest resources in the universe, and one can only find them by luck, with which a sector lord can obtain one by accident. But without luck, a universe knight can't find one even if he were to comb every inch of the universe."

The Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng. "The resources in our race belong to all the humans. Although there are countless treasures, they must be granted to the most talented, and it must be subject to all the seniors' discretion. But now, there's a way to help your teacher."

"I bet you already understand what I mean," the Primal Chaos City Leader continued. "You can give the token to your teacher directly. Your teacher is going to the land of inheritance now, and

it's a huge opportunity for him, as he might become a universe knight. He might also fail since he's far less talented than you or Seven Blade Emperor. You two are almost his rivals by such a short time of training."

"I'm willing to give it to my teacher," Luo Feng answered without any hesitation.

He had to pay True Yan Emperor back.

I'll get the token anyway when I become an undying, he thought. All I need to do is wait. Once my third body comes into being, I'll become an undying. However, my teacher has already waited for an eternity. A small time of waiting in exchange for a huge opportunity for my teacher is totally worth it.

"You've made up your mind already? No regrets?" The Primal Chaos City Leader looked to Luo Feng.

"No, I won't regret it," Luo Feng said, nodding sternly.

"Great." The Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "Now, you'll give the token to your teacher. However, you don't necessarily have to wait to become an undying to go to the land of inheritance. I'll file an application for you. Normally, you'll be granted one after entering the undying level, but I believe Master of Sky Wolf will make the news of Blade River Emperor public."

"Master of Sky Wolf?" Luo Feng was dazed.

"Yes," said the Primal Chaos City Leader. "Blade River Emperor is a sector lord. He will definitely let everyone know and will polish the story. Once it's made known, lots of the peak races will have their eyes on you and try to assassinate you." The Primal Chaos City Leader sighed. "The human race will know, too."

"Your identity as Blade River Emperor is only known to few, but it will change soon," he continued. "I'll use it as an excuse to file an application for the inheritance token for you. Since you're already as powerful as Seven Blade Emperor, you're already qualified to

enter the land of inheritance." The Primal Chaos City Leader smiled. "Although that's a place of danger, it only comes from the competition within our race, as nobody from the other races will dare to assassinate you in the sacred land of Ancestral God School.

"That's why I think the token will be granted. However, I can't be 100 percent sure. After all, they're the resources of the entire human race, and all I'm in charge of is the virtual universe company. The seniors might veto it, since only the undying were able to enter it before. I'll say you're more likely to succeed than to fail."

"Thank you, teacher," Luo Feng said. He truly appreciated the help.

There would still be grudges between siblings. Hence, normally, there were hidden competitions between the five powers of the human race. It would be conceivably difficult, as the resources didn't only belong to the Primal Chaos City Leader.

"The more powerful and famous you are, the easier it is for me to apply for the resources," the Primal Chaos City Leader said with a smile. He was content looking at Luo Feng. Although he already knew Luo Feng's personality by experience, he was joyful when he saw Luo Feng's willingness to give the token to True Yan Emperor without any doubts

Apparently, Luo Feng knew how to show gratitude.

******

Blade River Emperor was only a sector lord.

The news was like a thunder and shocked all the powerful creatures. It spread like wildfire, and lots of the powerful ones of the human race knew about it within the day. People everywhere in the Hong Alliance City were talking about it.

"Blade River Emperor is a sector lord!"

"He was able to kill a peak emperor. And now, people are saying

he's only a sector lord? How is it possible for a sector lord to be so mighty? It's outrageous!"

"It must be fake!"

"It's real. Both the demon race and the automation race have already found out about it, and they've already offered bounties for killing this Blade River Emperor."

"If he is indeed a sector lord, why were so many powerful ones unable to distinguish him? The auras between a sector lord and an undying are totally different."

"They said Blade River Emperor obtained an invaluable treasure, which conceals his true identity."

"Invaluable treasure?"

"Blade River Emperor has an invaluable treasure? That can even set universe knights crazy."

******

It was madness. The news that Blade River Emperor is a sector lord and that Blade River Emperor had an invaluable treasure made a plethora of powerful ones jealous. One could tell how tempting an invaluable treasure was by the sound and fury sealing star resulted in.

"If Blade River Emperor is a sector lord, who is he exactly? He's even more unimaginable than the legendary Ke Di."

"Perhaps it's Luo Feng, as he's the most powerful sector lord of the human race and has already passed the sector-lord-level Sky Mountain."

"I don't think it's Luo Feng. Instead, it might be a super talent who has been undercover all the time. And this talent is even stronger than both Ke Di and Luo Feng, and that's why they've kept it as a secret and given him an invaluable treasure to conceal it."

"Where did all the talents come from? Luo Feng is already the genius of our time."

"Maybe this Blade River Emperor is one of the most talented of the human race and is even mightier than Ke Di and Luo Feng."

"I still think it's Luo Feng. It's impossible for such a genius to stay anonymous."

Within the boundless universe and hundreds of millions of races, most of the creatures had heard the news of Blade River Emperor. They also knew that Blade River Emperor belonged to the human race, but they couldn't be sure who he really was. Lots of people thought it was Luo Feng because, based on all they knew, only Luo Feng had such potential.

"Dad, are you the Blade River Emperor?"

"Some of the super-families within our Ganwu universe also talk about this Blade River Emperor during businesses. I've heard of some of the news and guessed it was you."

In the nine-star bay of Black Dragon Island, Luo Feng was having meals with his family.

"I also heard of it," Xu Xin said.

"Don't interrogate me," Luo Feng said.

Luo Ping and Luo Hai smiled because their father would've denied it if it weren't true.

"Dad, you're awesome!" Luo Hai said, opening his eyes wide.

"Remember not to tell anyone," Luo Feng said as he glanced at his sons.

"We know," said Luo Ping.

"We know how serious it is," Luo Hai answered with excitement.

Although Blade River Emperor was yet to become the most powerful one in the universe, he had already garnered widespread

fame, and his name would be in history forever. Wasn't that what they wanted? Fame?

This is only the beginning of my rise, thought Luo Feng. I'll only become stronger since I'm on the edge now. And the demon race... you'll lose in the end.

Chapter 942: True Yan Emperor and Luo Feng

Inside, the ancient Chaos City was peaceful as always. Three purple messengers were walking on the street and reached True Yan Emperor's house.

"It's the purple messengers of the Primal Chaos City Leader."

"The purple messengers are here."

The most frequently seen messengers normally wore black. Some of the students in True Yan Emperor's house were startled, as they'd rarely seen the arrival of purple messengers. They knew something significant had happened.

"Go, tell the teacher."

After only a short while, True Yan Emperor came out and greeted them himself. He was also baffled. "Three purple messengers are here?" he said. "One black messenger is enough, normally. What's the point of sending three purple messengers here?"

"Congratulations, True Yan Emperor!" The tallest messenger laughed. "Congratulations."

The other two purple knights laughed along.

"Why do you congratulate me? Come, sit inside."

True Yan Emperor led the three messengers into the hall, and several students served some wine and fruits. They left after duty, as they knew they were not supposed to meddle with some major issues. That left only the three messengers and True Yan Emperor in the hall.

"It's such great news." The tall messenger beamed and brought out a metal box.

"What's so mysterious?" True Yan Emperor took and opened it.

There was a hexagonal stone tablet inside, on which was sculpted a roaring beast god.

True Yan Emperor was dazed, and his hand started to tremble. He picked up the stone tablet, and his eyes turned red. He caressed this tablet as if he were worried that it was a phantom. His voice faltered as he said, "Beast god inheritance token! It's the beast god inheritance token! For such a long time—practically forever—I've always wanted it!" True Yan Emperor's body trembled. "Now, I've finally got the chance. Finally!"

He was stuck at the last step for what felt like an infinite amount of time. Although the token could help him greatly, it was almost impossible to get one. The tokens were extremely rare in the universe, as they represented the most special inheritance of Ancestral God School. Perhaps there were only a few of each type of the tokens within the human race, and the race needed to prepare for the potential peerless talents in the future. The tokens would only be granted under few circumstances.

He couldn't make the final breakthrough if he didn't get the token. It was indeed only one step, but it was like a chasm, separating countless emperors from universe knights.

"Thank you, Primal Chaos City Leader." True Yan Emperor kneeled with excitement. "Thank you, seniors. I'll strive to become a universe knight and live up to the expectations."

"Please, get up." The tall messenger helped True Yan Emperor to his feet.

"The race rewarded with a token. I..." True Yan Emperor was thrilled.

"It's not from the race. It's from your student Luo Feng."

"Luo Feng?" True Yan Emperor was stupefied.

"Yes, your student Luo Feng," the tall messenger continued. "I was serving the Primal Chaos City Leader in the primal secret

region. The Primal Chaos City Leader asked us to come here directly and give this to you. As for Luo Feng, he's still with the Primal Chaos City Leader in the primal secret region."

"How did he get the token?" True Yan Emperor suddenly had complicated feelings. "My student was also following the path of beast god, and he could certainly trade this token for another. Why did he give this to me?"

No matter how close the relationship between the teacher and the student, the powerful ones would do everything in their power to improve themselves. Giving the insignificant ones to their teachers could be regarded as gratitude.

"True Yan Emperor, you have a great student."

"We won't stay for long, as we need to go back and report," the tall messenger said. "We'll escort ourselves out."

The three messengers left.

True Yan Emperor was both exhilarated and anxious. Even though he had desired the token for so long, he felt like it was too much.

******

True Yan Emperor connected to the virtual universe and sent ten emails to Luo Feng before coming to Luo Feng's manor in Yu Xiang Mountain.

"Luo Feng," True Yan Emperor shouted, which baffled all the servants and the guards.

"Teacher!" Luo Feng soon got out of the hall.

"Come with me."

True Yan Emperor grabbed Luo Feng and entered the hall. True Yan Emperor couldn't wait to yell, "Where did you get the token? Did you get it from our race? Don't you know how important it is to you? You're following the path of beast god yourself! How could

you just give it up and hand it in to your teacher? I'll be restless knowing you've traded your future for mine. And you know if I can't be tranquil, I might fail even if I enter the land of inheritance."

"Please relax, teacher," Luo Feng said. "I got it myself instead of getting it from my race."

"You got it yourself?" True Yan Emperor was startled.

It was not so easy to get one. Once other powerful ones found it, they would use their godly power to penetrate it and discern how important it was. Usually, they would just hand it in to their race. That was how most of the tokens were held by the races.

"It's true. I obtained it by myself." Luo Feng said. "Just think about this. I gave this to you in the hands of the Primal Chaos City Leader. If I actually got it from our race, the Primal Chaos City Leader wouldn't allow me to do so."

"That makes sense." True Yan Emperor nodded his head. "The Primal Chaos City Leader won't let you be reckless."

"Just use it now, teacher," Luo Feng continued. "It's not difficult for me to get a token from our race."

"You'll definitely be valued by our race based on your potential, and you're more than qualified to get the token. Even the Seven Blade Emperor, who is less talented than you, could get one." True Yan Emperor nodded his head and frowned. "However, you need to become an undying to get the token, and that's going to take a long time.

"Please don't worry about that, teacher." Luo Feng smiled. "Did you forget that I'm Blade River Emperor, teacher? I'm already powerful enough to get one, and the Primal Chaos City Leader will file an application for me. He told me that it would succeed given his presence and my genius."

True Yan Emperor sighed. "The Primal Chaos City Leader is the

ruler of the virtual universe. Okay, he'll definitely succeed. Luo Feng, I've benefited so much from you."

"It was a piece of cake." Luo Feng beamed.

******

Deep in the primal secret region, the thousand-treasure river surrounded the stars. Luo Feng was sitting on top of one of the palaces and looked at the river from afar. He thought back to what the Primal Chaos City Leader had told him.

"Luo Feng, this is the date when we'll know whether you can get the token or not. If it fails, you'll have to wait until you become an undying. I hope it can succeed."

"I will succeed," said Luo Feng as he sat on the top of the palace with his legs crossed. "Land of inheritance, the sacred place of Ancestral God School. How exciting!"

Time passed. Luo Feng was growing anxious from waiting. However, he knew that the seniors from all the five powers of the human race were negotiating the decision. Could they make an exception for Luo Feng? Could Luo Feng succeed?

After a long while, Luo Feng heard a peaceful voice.

"Luo Feng."

Luo Feng turned around and saw the Primal Chaos City Leader holding the rugged stone stick. Luo Feng's heart missed a beat, as he knew the meeting had ended and a decision had been made.

Luo Feng stood up and greeted him. "Teacher."

"The meeting's over," the Primal Chaos City Leader said. "I can tell by the look on your face how concerned you are. Rest assured, because it's good news. The application was approved, and your identity as Blade River Emperor thrilled the masters of the universe of our race. They all think highly of you, and thus I don't need to put forth too much effort."

Luo Feng was overjoyed. He didn't believe what the Primal Chaos City Leader said and was certain his teacher had pulled lots of strings.

"Thank you, teacher," Luo Feng said. "I won't fail you and the other masters of the universe."

"Just don't fail the human race." The Primal Chaos City Leader burst into laughter. "The token will be sent to you in two days, and I've already told True Yan to come to the primal secret region to meet with you. You'll go to the land of inheritance together."

"Yes, teacher." Luo Feng was cheerful.

******

The human race was efficient, and the token arrived after only one day.

"Beast god inheritance token."

Luo Feng started to examine the hexagonal metal tablet in his hands. There was a single-horned lizard sculpture on the tablet, which was the beast god of Blood River World. However, it was not as distinct as the one Luo Feng had gotten before, and it did not contain any law.

"How marvelous the metal is. I've never heard of it."

Luo Feng caressed the tablet and penetrated it with his spiritual force. The information struck his mind. It was the same as the one before. They even had identical coordinates.

Chapter 943: Land of Inheritance

True Yan took off from the Primal Chaos City immediately after Luo Feng told him the news and arrived at the primal secret region on the same day.

Inside the transportation center of the primal secret region.

Luo Feng dressed in black armor, and True Yan Emperor was in gold. They flew off from a spaceship and landed on the boundless land, where lots of transportation channels were built and God Country Teleportation was performed. Creatures here didn't need to worry about being discovered by others.

"Teacher, we're far away from the land of inheritance." Luo Feng said. "Do you have the coordinates of anything that belongs there?"

"The closest one is a billion light years away," True Yan Emperor said.

"That far?" Luo Feng was startled, as that meant it would take them a whole year to get there. "One of my servants has some coordinates, and it'll take us at least half a year to get there," Luo Feng said and waved his hands. A barbarian-race creature covered with scales appeared, and it had a purple membrane on its face, which caught other powerful ones' attention."

"It's True Yan Emperor."

"How is it possible that True Yan Emperor left Chaos City?"

"He did come out."

"Who is the one in black armor?"

"Can that be Blade River Emperor? Everyone says Blade River Emperor is Luo Feng, which is highly likely. See? The black-armored man is pretty close to True Yan Emperor, and we all know Luo Feng is a student of True Yan Emperor. We've never seen this black-armored guy... And can you feel the force emanating from

him? He most likely is Blade River Emperor who conceals his wings!"

Although they were discussing this in a low voice, they deliberately let Luo Feng hear it and wanted to see his reaction.

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor exchanged an eye contact.

"They're correct," True Yan Emperor said to Luo Feng through his mind, he looked a little amused. "You're really a big deal now."

"It's not surprising that they guess it, as many people have already done the same thing," said Luo Feng. "And they also know that my invaluable treasure is the silver wing. Besides, there are only so many powerful ones within the human race, and everyone knows each other. It's not a strange thing for them to guess if someone in an earthling shape they have never seen suddenly shows up and is so close to you."

"You're in some big trouble," True Yan Emperor said jokingly.

"Who cares? It's not necessarily bad to be famous." Luo Feng looked to his servant beside him and said. "Perform godly-kingdom transportation."

"Yes, master."

The barbarian servant started transportation immediately. A flash of aqua light surrounded Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor, who could see the boundless world at the other end of the light. It was the godly kingdom of the barbarian race.

Luo Feng, True Yan Emperor, and the servant all vanished.

******

They soon arrived at a quiet place far away from the territory of humans, which was a star in a remote district of the universe.

"Hiding the object inside a star," said True Yan Emperor. "Your servant is very interesting."

"There is an infinite number of stars in the universe, and they are

large and dynamic enough to hide an object."

The teacher and the student flew out to the surface of the star-like lights.

"Student, how fast can your spaceship go?" True Yan Emperor asked.

"In the dark universe? 72 times of the speed of light." Luo Feng sighed. "There's one that's around one-tenths faster, but it was taken away by the universe knight."

"How reckless are you to mess with the blue knight!" True Yan Emperor nodded. They had talked with each other in the primal secret origin for a long time, and True Yan Emperor had asked Luo Feng how he had gotten the token. Luo Feng briefed him—without telling certain important information. However, he had told the emperor everything about the blue knight.

"I have one that's 90 times lightspeed." True Yan Emperor smiled. "Finally, I have something to be proud of."

"90 times lightspeed?" Luo Feng was shocked.

True Yan Emperor waved his hands. A streamlined shuttle-shaped spaceship appeared in the sky. It was a shining, lustrous golden.

"Master." A voice came out of the spaceship. "You're finally using me. I haven't flown in the dark universe for years."

"This is a metal life form," True Yan Emperor explained. "I haven't let him out since I got into Chaos City. Come on, let's get into it."

The door opened. Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor entered the spaceship, whose speed surged, and they entered the dark universe in lightspeed in a moment. Its speed kept soaring after entering the dark universe.

"89 times, 90 times, 91 times—oh, it can't go faster!" the metal life

said with joy. A cute girl appeared on the control panel. "The master is finally adventuring again. I'm so lonely!"

Luo Feng spat out his wine. "A girl?"

True Yan Emperor glared at the control panel. "Weren't you in an old man's figure before?"

"It's been hundreds of millions of years. Is it really a big problem that I transformed?" The artificial-intelligence life screamed.

"Haha!" Luo Feng burst into laughter. "Teacher, it wouldn't be normal if it didn't transform after being kept there for such a long time."

True Yan Emperor shook his head.

******

It was boring to do interstellar travel, as the scene outside never changed. Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor would exchange some pleasantries at the beginning, but after getting drunk, they both went back to their cabins and started practicing. Although the spaceship was fast, it would take four months for them to get to the land of inheritance.

Inside the cabin, the body of Mo Sha clan was present whilst the original earthling body went back to the internal world and started to practice Nine Volumes Manuel.

Inside the internal world.

On the boundless prairie, Luo Feng looked at the golden-horned beast from afar.

"It's the third metal of Nine Volumes Manuel. I did get a lot." Luo Feng was filled with delight.

The first two metals he had gotten before only provided him with the tomes of the first, the second, and the fifth calamity, and he lacked the tomes for all the other calamities. However, the third metal offered him the tomes of the third and the fourth one, and

thus, Luo Feng could practice three calamities consecutively.

"The first calamity makes my genes three times stronger, and the second one makes them six times. The third one, 12 times, and the fourth one 24 times."

Luo Feng looked at the golden-horned beast from afar. In the past 2,000 years of staying in Ice Hell, the golden-horned beast had already accomplished his goal.

However, Luo Feng realized a big problem. The golden-horned beast had powerful genes, which were ten times stronger than those of humans.

And now, after finishing the first five calamities of the Nine Volumes Manuel, the golden-horned beast was 480 times more powerful than humans, which was outrageous. Even dokus and Silver Eye were only 100 times stronger.

"480 times... How unbelievable is this?" Luo Feng sighed. "That means when I become an undying, I'll become 100,000 times stronger than a sector lord, while the beast can become 48 million times stronger! Even lots of the special lives are not that mighty."

Special lives generally had genes that possessed 100 times greater potential than those of humans, and even the weakest special lives were ten times better. A small number of special lives were 500 times more superior. Only a rare number of them could be 1,000 or even several thousand times finer. The more superior they got, the rarer they were. There were quite a few dokus, whereas beast gods and Mountain Sitting Guest were one of a kind.

"I've figured out before that the more superior the genes are, the force of blood river would help less." Luo Feng sighed. "The force of blood river could make my right claw 100 times stronger and my entire body ten times stronger. However... It's not omnipotent. It can strengthen humans and golden-horned beasts."

But can it enhance beast gods? wondered Luo Feng. It's the

essence of the blood of beast gods.

The function of the force was obvious when the genes were at a low level. However, to individuals like Mountain Sitting Guest, it might help them with nothing.

The golden-horned beast had been practicing the Nine Volumes Manuel for a long time, and it was already as powerful as a special life. When the beast exercised the force again, the effect was significantly smaller.

"The right claw of the beast is still stronger, but it's only twice as strong as the entire body."

Luo Feng recalled how it had been ten times mightier than its body before. On the contrary, he realized the strength of the right claw could not be improved further. Both the fourth calamity and the fifth one couldn't improve its strength, as it had already reached its limit.

"Once the force is exercised, the constitution of the golden-horned beast's body will be 1,000 times stronger." Luo Feng was pondering. "It's rare even for special lives, and I should be content. I'll keep practicing. No wonder the Nine Volumes Manuel must be borne by the Sky-Soul Crystal, as only one is qualified to practice it."

******

He became more and more powerful by practicing, and the true power of the tome gradually showed.

Four months later.

"Student! Student!" Luo Feng heard True Yan Emperor's voice saying. "We're arriving at the land of inheritance! Come out now!"

It was the land of inheritance!

Chapter 944: Bauhinia Island

Inside the control room of the spaceship, Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor were looking at the outside through a virtual scene. One gale after another blew everything they touched, as if they were pythons playing among the stars.

"This is the legendary ancestral god secret region!" True Yan Emperor was amazed.

"The ancestral god secret region is one of the most dangerous secret regions in the universe," Luo Feng said with wonder. "It's the same size as a universe country, and dangerous areas are everywhere. Even universe knights can't manage to survive it."

There were various levels and areas of the secret regions. Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor would certainly research the region, as they had known the coordinates. They were startled to find out that the land of inheritance was located in the ancestral god secret region. As a top-tier secret region filled with hazards and ordinary dangers that could kill a universe knight. In some extremely risky areas, even masters of the universe needed to be careful.

Its diameter was 160 million light years, and it took 200 million years to travel in sub-lightyear speed. One might need to start the adventure from the birth of the universe to pay the entire region even a cursory inspection. Besides, no one dared to do that.

Mysterious! Dangerous! Off-limits! These were the words that best described the ancestral god secret region.

"One of the most common things in this secret region is 'Hei Chong Whirlpool,'" said True Yan Emperor. "Even a small whirlpool can severely injure a universe knight. And a large one can kill them for good. Look. Those are the Hei Chong Whirlpools ahead of us."

"There are more of them at the back," said Luo Feng.

True Yan Emperor turned around and saw a whirlpool that was billions of kilometers long running through the stars. If the whirlpools at the front were like pythons, and the one at the back was hundreds of millions of times mightier.

True Yan Emperor was stupefied. "This is the Hei Chong whirlpool at the periphery. Only the one at the outer right is so enormous."

"We've arrived," Luo Feng said and nodded his head.

The spaceship slowed down and stopped. Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor flew out.

Among the stars were the Hei Chong Whirlpools chasing each other. Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor stood amongst the stars and looked at each other.

"Where is it?" Luo Feng said, frowning. "I can't see the land of inheritance."

"Just wait," True Yan Emperor said.

Suddenly, the space twisted and sucked them in like a series of swirls.

"Teleportation?" said Luo Feng.

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor thought of this, and everything became clear. They were still both standing in hollow space, but the scene afar was breathtaking. The colorful river was running, emanating a mystical power that was highly enticing. Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor both possessed strong wills and realized something was wrong.

"Quick enough," they heard a cold voice say.

They turned around. An eight-meter-high rock undying stood in the hollow. He was dressed in a fiery armor and was green like an emerald. Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor realized he was of the Fei Cang Clan, one of the rock creatures.

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor were shocked, as they hadn't realized anything else was here.

It's a universe knight, Luo Feng thought. Only a universe knight can teleport without letting us recognize it.

Even I can't sense it, True Yan Emperor thought, surprised.

"I'm the guide of Ancestral God School," the knight said. "Give me the token, humans. Or you'll die with it."

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor both felt like they were trapped in a fire, and Luo Feng felt like a boat adrift, lost at sea.

The guide of the school? he thought.

There were gods, beast gods, deified generals, and prophets within the school, and prophets were the weakest. They were merely as powerful as the weakest universe knights. However, this creature of Fei Cang Clan emanated a force that was irresistible.

Teacher, is he a general? Luo Feng asked mentally.

It should be, True Yan Emperor answered.

They took out the tokens anyway.

"The tokens are rare," the knight said with a smile. "No wonder the human race is one of the top six races. Sending two people with tokens at one time is impressive, indeed. Come with me."

The knight was flying with Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor aside.

"Do you see that?" The knight pointed to the dreamy and colorful river.

They both nodded.

"Come and look at it closer." The knight teleported them to beside the river.

"This is...?" Luo Feng held his breath.

It was no river; on the contrary, it was composed of auroras of

five different colors. He could still see the river shape from afar, whereas he could only feel its boundlessness standing beside it.

"Is this the five-color aurora lake?" True Yan Emperor asked, thrilled at the idea.

"You do know something," the knight complimented him. "Yes, it is indeed the five-color aurora lake."

"A lake?" Luo Feng was bewildered and trying to look to the end of the river.

"Of course, it's a lake," the knight explained. "You see it as a river only because you're standing on the same level of it. However, if you fly above and overlook it, you'll see a circular lake. This lake has a diameter of ten light years and is almighty. One aurora can severely injure a universe knight, and it's constituted by countless rays of auroras. It's one of the most forceful invaluable treasures in the universe."

Both Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor were dazed. Even one aurora was this powerful?

"This lake is the guarding invaluable treasure of the Ancestral God School," the knight continued. "Who will dare to trespass with such an invaluable treasure around?"

"One of the most powerful invaluable treasures? Guarding invaluable treasure?" True Yan Emperor sighed.

"No wonder the Ancestral God School is the first power of the universe." Luo Feng recalled his star tower instead.

There were countless auroras on the surface of the lake, and together, it served as the guarding treasure of the Ancestral God School. The spiral of the star tower, which was made up of sealing stars, was also precious, and together with the heavenly pillar, the star tower was also one of the most forceful invaluable treasures in the universe, according to Mountain Sitting Guest.

"What an eye-opener for me to see the five-color aurora lake,"

True Yan Emperor said.

"It's lucky enough for you even to take a look at an invaluable treasure of this level," the knight said, a bit proud. "There's another invaluable treasure of this level: star tower. That's something that can't be moved by literally anyone, and lots of the powerful ones in the universe still don't know the tower's real power."

"Star tower is also one of the most powerful invaluable treasures?" True Yan Emperor was shocked.

"It seems you don't know everything."

The knight shook his head. "Star tower is one of the easiest to see but also the most mystical invaluable treasures in the universe. Nobody's been able to figure out the mystery behind it, and nobody can take it away. It's been standing there forever."

"I'm done talking, and I'll take you to Bauhinia Island now," said the knight. With that, he teleported.

******

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor felt a bit dizzy before getting to the edge of the lake. They were only a few hundred meters away from it. Each of the auroras was around 10,000 kilometers long, and its force made Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor shiver.

"Did you see that?" The knight pointed to the deep of the lake. "That's the Bauhinia Island."

"What? Inside the lake?" They looked in that direction. They could indeed see a blurry island, dim among the auroras.

"Come in." The knight flew directly inside.

"Go in? Even though the auroras are forceful?" True Yan Emperor couldn't help asking.

"Rest assured, this is one of the most powerful treasures in the universe, and it won't hurt anyone it recognizes," the knight said.

"You both have the tokens, and thus, you'll both be fine."

True Yan Emperor looked at Luo Feng and said, "Student, I'll try first." And then he touched an aurora with his hands. The aurora encircled his arm like running water without attacking him.

The knight didn't say anything after seeing this. He had seen how careful and distrustful those heirs were.

"Let's go," True Yan Emperor said.

"Yes, teacher," Luo Feng said and followed him into the lake.

They felt like they were marching in a real lake, and the auroras comforted their bodies. The island became larger and larger as they approached it.

"This is Bauhinia Island, where your beast god heirs will reside on," the knight said just before they reached the island. "And this is the margin of the lake."

Chapter 945: Guarding Beast God

Bauhinia Island, with a diameter of millions of kilometers, was far away from the auroras.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

The knight, Luo Feng, and True Yan Emperor landed on the island like three beams of light.

"There are so many palaces," said Luo Feng, looking at the palaces on the ground and on the mountain. He could literally feel the force coming from all the palaces in every area. He frowned. "There seem to be lots of powerful ones living here."

"Look at that," the knight said, pointing to the sky.

They both looked up.

"Huh?" said Luo Feng.

He saw halos enveloping the entire island. The halos kept swelling before they disappeared, and then, a new halo came into being. Each halo surrounded another in concentric circles like the ripples on the water. They were spreading. Born and vanished. Born and vanished. Again and again.

Each halo was made of threads of the law—the time law, space, gold, wood, water, fire, soil, wind, thunder, and light. Each law was mixed in each thread, which made the halos complete and perfect. Luo Feng was amazed as he realized the halos were actually manifesting the laws of the universe.

"You two!" the knight shouted.

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor came back to reality.

"This is... This is..." True Yan Emperor was rendered speechless. "It's incredible!"

"This is the periphery of the laws." The knight looked at the halos ardently. "The ancestral god school is the first power of the

universe and is responsible for maintaining the operation of the laws of the universe. And it's protected by the laws."

Luo Feng was bewildered. Maintaining the operation of the laws of the universe?

"The secret region of our school has the most special creatures and treasures," the knight said with great confidence. "The five-colored aurora lake was also rewarded by the laws of the universe. What we're doing is following the laws, and ancestral god school is defying the laws of the universe."

"How overbearing it is," Luo Feng murmured.

"You don't believe it?" said the knight. "You'll understand after living here for hundreds of millions of years." The knight glanced at Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor.

"Hundreds of millions of years?" Luo Feng was baffled.

"Come with me," said the knight. "The first thing to do is to build a dwelling place on the island."

The knight walked quickly with Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor following him. One step was a thousand kilometers, and they reached the destination in no time. They could see all forms of palaces and powerful ones of all races while walking on the island. There were billions of races, and all of them were mystical with different shapes and characteristics. Luo Feng could recognize some of the special creatures.

"How many residents are there on the island?" Luo Feng wondered.

"Other than the island owner, all of the others are the heirs," the knight said. "My job is to lead you here, and I'll leave soon. There are a plethora of heirs. You can calculate yourselves. There have been only a few hundred human heirs since the birth of the universe. And when you take into account the entire universe? It's a fair universe, and the tokens were distributed everywhere. There

are hundreds of millions of races in the universe, and adding all of them together makes tens of billions of heirs."

"Tens of billions of heirs?" Luo Feng stared at the knight.

"There are really that many heirs?" True Yan Emperor found it hard to believe.

"It's a vast universe, and humanity is only one of the many races," the knight explained. "Only the ancestral gods know how many heirs there are. Of course, there are only 100 million living on the island."

"100 million?" Luo Feng pondered. "What about the others?"

"If an heir dies, the Universe master will reverse the time to bring back rather the heir than the token. It's too costly to bring back a token, and even a Universe master is reluctant to pay the price." The knight continued, "Each of the heirs comes with a token, and the second you step in here, your life and the token are bound. The token will be shattered if you die, and it can never be reused. Many powerful heirs died. That's why there are only 100 million of them now." The knight finished explaining.

They walked to the ground beside a river. The knight said, "You two will build a palace here. Remember, each palace can be no longer or wider than one kilometer. Even those enormous demon races and sky beasts need to shrink to fit the designated space. There are no exceptions."

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor nodded. They didn't see any palace that was over one square kilometer.

"Also! You can leave some authenticating objects in the palace to make sure you can God Country Teleport yourselves here," the knight said. "You'll visit the island very often unless you die. If you have soul servants, don't bring them out. They will be destroyed by the lake. Keep them in the palace, as it's your place. Don't ever bring them out. Of course, botanic or metal life forms are the

exceptions."

"We get it." Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor followed the instructions carefully.

"Come with me," the knight said and continued briefing them, as he was the guide.

******

After a short while, they arrived at the tallest mountain where sat a towering palace that was a thousand square kilometers.

"The owner of this island, unlike you heirs, is not restricted." The knight pointed at the towering palace and said, "That's the palace of the owner. Let's go."

They walked up the mountain.

"Look up," the knight said, pointing at the sky.

They both followed the knight.

"What is it?"

Luo Feng saw something inconceivably spectacular. He could see a crack inside the lake, inside which a magnificent and extensive palace was located. There were eight sub-palaces surrounding the glowing main palace.

"That is the core of the school," the knight said admiringly. "That's the largest palace, which is the ancestral god palace, where the ancestral gods live. Although there are three ancestral gods, only one of them is sitting here. The eight palaces around it are the beast god palace, where the beast gods reside. And there are around a dozen palaces around each beast god palace, which are the guarding beast god palaces."

"Outside the beast god palaces," continued the knight, "are the locations of 72 lands, only 63 of which are in our view, of course. And the 72 generals are living there. Each of the general's land is as large as Bauhinia Island. There are 3,000 stars on the margin, and

those are 3,000 starry worlds, on which live the prophets. All these constitute the core of the ancestral god school." The knight sighed. "Other than these center places, there are lots of islands on the five-color aurora lake, and there are many sub-members of the school living there."

"Sub-members?" Both Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor looked at him in shock.

"Yes. They're candidates of the prophets and deified generals, and powerful heirs of the beast god." The knight couldn't help laughing. "Humans, do you really think there's free food available in the universe? Remember, it's a fair universe, and our school is not a charity. We paid a huge price for the inheritance crystals of prophets and the land of inheritance of the generals and the beast gods. You'll certainly have to pay for it."

"However..." continued the knight. "The school won't care much about the weak. That's why those who receive the inheritance of prophets and deified generals won't be required to work for the school unless they receive a complete inheritance. However, once one obtains the complete inheritance, like that of deified generals, the entire land of inheritance will crumble."

Luo Feng's heart skipped a beat. He recalled that he had been told something similar in the demon-note general's land of inheritance —that if anyone received a complete inheritance, the entire land would disintegrate.

"All the candidates of prophets and deified generals have received the complete inheritances," said the knight. "As for those following the path of beast gods, the most powerful ones have reached an extremely supreme level and are close to the complete inheritances. Note this: The school needs to pay a higher price for beast god inheritance, and those who are on the way to triumph will also need to sacrifice more. These are the sub-members."

Chapter 946: Three Paths

"Then what about the guarding beast god palaces?" Luo Feng couldn't help asking.

"Guarding beast gods are the ones who gain the complete beast god inheritance and have become masters of the universe," the knight explained. "They didn't become actually beast gods either because there were no vacancies, or they themselves didn't want to inherit the positions in the first place. After all, your power can be significantly improved after inheriting the position, but that's the end of it."

"Masters of the universe are the greatest and mightiest beings in the universe, no matter where they are," the knight continued. "The ancestral god school will respect their will and make them 'guarding beast gods' even if they don't want to inherit the positions."

Both Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor nodded. There was no such thing as a free meal, and everything came at a price. The ancestral god school wouldn't give resources away without being paid back. For those who had enough potential, the school didn't care for returns, whereas for those who could gain a complete inheritance, the school would demand something back.

"Rest assured." The knight smiled. "The ancestral god school is arguably the freest power in the universe, and it has no intention of fighting for other territories. The dangers in the secret region are enough to intimidate other powers. Even if you become the sub-members of the school, you won't feel restricted." The knight shook his head. "Of course, it all means nothing if you can't even become a sub-member in the first place, which is difficult to begin with. No matter which path you're following—prophet inheritance, general inheritance or beast god inheritance—they're all highly demanding!"

Luo Feng listened carefully and nodded. None of the hundreds of thousands of creatures in the land of demon-note deified general inheritance managed to get the complete inheritance. However, the land accepted 32 creatures for every 10,081 eras, and the creatures there only tried for 50 million eras, which was a blink of an eye compared to the history of the universe.

"The owner of Bauhinia Island is a guarding beast god." The knight looked at the towering palace.

"Guarding beast god?" Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor followed him.

There were quite a few sculptures on that palace. Some were like lizards, some were like roaring apes, and some were like birds. Although there were tens of thousands of sculptures, they could all be classified into eight categories. Luo Feng understood them to be the images of the beast gods.

In front of the palace of the island's owner was an enormous square, which was a section of a mountain. There were three flowing springs on the spectacular square, with their water coming seemingly from out of nowhere. However, the ground on the square was not wet at all.

The knight, Luo Feng, and True Yan Emperor walked to the springs and looked at the door of the palace.

"Get inside," the knight said. "My job is done here. I hope you can live longer on the island instead of falling, as you won't be able to come back with another token. I bet few races will give you a token twice."

"Thank you, knight." Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor appreciated the knight's instruction.

The knight smiled and flew into the auroras like a beam of light.

"Let's go, student." True Yan Emperor smiled.

"Sure."

Inside sat a human wearing a simple black cape. He had long blue hair and blue engravings. A dimming force was emanating from him, reserved yet terrifying. Luo Feng felt he must be at least a universe knight.

"A human?" Luo Feng was startled. "Is he the guarding beast god?"

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor exchanged a glance. The guarding beast god was a human?

The man stood up, looked at them, and smiled. "I didn't expect to see humans here. How wonderful. You guys can stop guessing, I'm only a servant of the island owner instead of a guarding beast god. My job is to guard the palace and message the island owner."

"A servant?" Both Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor missed a heartbeat. A soul slave of a universe knight level? And he was a human?

Of course, thought Luo Feng. If I can enslave the barbarian races, then the barbarian races can enslave humans, too. Besides, guarding beast gods are masters of the universe. It's not surprising for them to have a universe-knight level slave.

Luo Feng could only console himself in this manner.

True Yan Emperor looked at the black-caped man and said, "We're the new heirs and are here to greet the guarding beast god."

The man smiled. "You just wait here. I've already passed the message to the guarding beast god, but he's currently busy. Please be patient."

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor gave each other a look.

Let's just wait.

They could only wait for the guarding beast god.

******

After half a day of waiting, both Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor

were tired out. Luo Feng asked, "When will the guarding beast god arrive?"

"Be patient," the man said with another smile. "The issues the guarding beast god is dealing with are much more important, and you guys are not in a rush. According to the rules of the ancestral god school, it will take the ancestral god ten years to show up. If the guarding beast gods know they can't make it in ten years, other guarding beast gods will take over."

"Ten years?"

"It ranges from an instant to ten years," said the sitting man. "The unluckiest guests I received in the past waited for three days shy of ten years. So, please sit down and be patient. Just wait!"

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor sat down without knowing when they could meet the island owner.

******

After twelve days.

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor sat on the courtyard of the palace with their eyes closed. Suddenly, they felt an almighty force surrounding the palace. They both opened their eyes instantly.

"It's the guarding beast god."

They both stood up, and the knight was already inside the main hall.

They heard a high voice from the hall say, "Come in."

They both went in, and Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor saw a figure on the throne. It was a special life form in dragon-shape. It possessed wings and strange armor on its body and looked down upon them. There were tongues of flames on the armor, which made Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor feel like they were being engulfed in fire and the special creature was the controller of space. The dragon could kill them with a snap of its fingers.

Guarding beast god, Luo Feng thought to himself. It should be following the path of fire, space.

"From now on, you're the heirs of Bauhinia Island," the guarding beast god said. "First of all, I'll grant you access to the world of glory."

Two mini-quantum computers appeared after it finished talking, and they flew to Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor.

"This is the receiver of the virtual world," said the guarding beast god. "The world of glory is the virtual universe of the ancestral god school, and it's akin to humans' virtual universe. Although it's much smaller, they have similar functions. You'll know when you land on it."

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor took the receivers.

"I'll also grant you the access to the land of inheritance, the land of treasures, and the land of the secret region," the guarding beast god said. "Did you see the three water curtains outside?"

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor nodded. Water curtains? Weren't those springs?

"That's the portal," the guarding beast god continued. "It's impossible for you to get in without my permission. The one on the left is the portal to the land of inheritance, the one in the middle is to the land of treasures, and the one on the right is to the land of the secret region. Three water curtains are portals to three different places. The land of inheritance is where you accept the beast god inheritance, and you'll be tested how much you understand the laws.

"In the land of treasures are buried all the valuables left by the beast gods, guarding beast gods, and the powerful ones following the path of beast gods. There are a plethora of valuables there, and the seniors placed lots of barriers, restrictions, and requirements. Only if you satisfy the requirements of the seniors can you take

treasures there. Not long ago, one of your humans gained a treasure.

"As for the land of the secret region, you can go there for adventures. The secret region of the ancestral god school is the most mysterious secret region in the universe, where reside the most special creatures and the most mystical riches. There are natural and crafted treasures alike. However, it's also the most menacing secret region, and the closer you get to the land of treasures, the more dangers there will be. Even universe knights can be killed, and even masters of the universe can be trapped. Prepare to die if you decide to adventure there."

"The land of inheritance, the land of treasures, and the land of the secret region, together with the world of glory, are the four places you need to be familiar with. Go build a palace first, and then go to the land of inheritance." The guarding beast god looked down on them. "Go."

"Yes, island owner," they said.

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor saluted it before exiting.

Chapter 947: Inheritance

There were hundreds of millions of heirs on the Bauhinia Island. Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor went to the location the knight had given them and started to build a palace.

"Concentrate!" Luo Feng said.

He used force of world in his internal world to build a mansion. It was an enormous courtyard that resembled the Jiang Nan garden of ancient China. There were paths made of cobblestones, and all sorts of flowers were planted on the side.

At the corner of the courtyards sat a pool of water. The water was the essence of a Jiang Nan Garden. There was a stone bridge above the water, and pavilions were placed around it. Besides, there were lots of individual bedrooms and living rooms, and in front of some of the rooms were pools where rock gardens could be seen.

Although the entire garden was only one square kilometer, it was constructed in a mesmerizing way, which was exactly how Luo Feng remembered his hometown. Lots of the gardens had been destroyed during the grand nirvana, but some of the rich built the gardens during the base city era. Luo Feng had learned about it before, when he was a student, and he had an extraordinary memory. All he did was memorize the pictures on the history textbooks. Luo Feng used lots of force of world techniques to solidify the garden.

Luo Feng pointed to the mountain afar.

"Get out!"

Hong!

Another private garden appeared. Afar were the undulating hills which merged as one with the rivers, gardens around them.

"Student, you're..." True Yan Emperor was still building a huge palace while glimpsing at the residence Luo Feng built.

"Extraordinary."

"Teacher, you can't actually feel the secret of my hometown by using your godly power. Come inside." Luo Feng smiled and led True Yan Emperor inside.

True Yan Emperor had adventured the universe long enough to see quite a lot. There were countless other forms of designs of architecture on the Bauhinia Island, and they were just as delicate as the one Luo Feng built. However, True Yan Emperor had never seen something like this.

True Yan Emperor said with surprise, as walking on the stone bridge, "It's incredible. I feel like it's dozens of times larger than it actually is. There are different scenes of the same pool at different angles."

Luo Feng smiled. "A single step can shift the scene, and this is the mystery of it. And all the scenes are breathtaking in a unique way based on the visual guide."

"Can you make me one?" True Yan Emperor asked him.

"How can I not? You've already asked me." Luo Feng made another garden of a slightly different type. The garden he had made for himself was more akin to those during the Ming and Qing dynasties, while the one for his teacher was of the Tang dynasty, which was more majestic.

******

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor went back to the square in front of the palace of the Bauhinia Island owner.

"Let's go."

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor entered the spring on the left.

The moment they touched the spring, they disappeared. The scene changed completely, and before Luo Feng could get a clear sight of his surroundings, he felt a terrifying force.

Hong!

The force was stronger than anything in Ice Hell, and he felt like dozens of neutron stars on his body, together with lots of other souls.

"What is this?" Luo Feng asked.

He could finally see everything clearly, and it was hollow surrounded by black mist around him. There was a huge aerolite floating in the hollow, and a purple-armored powerful one with a wolf head was sitting on it. It belonged to one of the most populous branches of the human race—Werewolf.

The werewolf was surprised to see Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor. He laughed and said, "You must be Blade River Emperor and True Yan Emperor. I knew you two are coming."

"Greetings, Jiu Feng Knight," True Yan Emperor saluted him.

"Greetings, Jiu Feng Knight." Luo Feng bowed to him as well, but he was baffled.

Just then, True Yan Emperor started to talk to him in his mind. Student, Jiu Feng Knight is one of the seven-star overlords of the human race, and he's an equal of the master of the heaven erosion palace. Rumor has it that he received the complete inheritance of deified generals.

Luo Feng was startled. Complete inheritance? An equal of the master of the heaven erosion palace?

"This is the land of inheritance of the ancestral god school," said Jiu Feng Knight looked at the two of them with a smile. "Naturally, there's a powerful force, which is to suppress the soul seals in the godly bodies. Creatures less powerful than emperor-level undying will die under the force, which is why only the undying can be granted the tokens. After all, talents who can get the tokens are all at least as powerful as the emperors. Can you see the black mist surrounding us?" Jiu Feng Knight pointed around.

Both Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor nodded. It was such a strange district. Neither godly power nor world power could detect anything, and it was surrounded by black mist.

"Get into the black mist and accept the inheritance," the knight said. "You two, separate."

"Yes," Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor answered respectfully.

They flew away in different directions.

The second Luo Feng flew into the black mist, he felt a force pressing his body, and even though Luo Feng had a stronger will than most of the universe knights, he couldn't resist it. He stood in the hollow a long time and reached out with the fingers of his right hand.

Chi!

World power burst out and turned into a law engraving. The engravings kept bursting out, starting from space and gold.

Luo Feng started to perform without control over his own body. Starting from the basis, he manifested all his understanding of the laws. More and more engravings came out as time passed by, and the threads were all twining around each other, painting a beautiful world of the law.

Luo Feng only stopped much later. The mystical force left Luo Feng.

"Huh?" Luo Feng finally had his mind back. "What?"

Luo Feng was so terrified that his entire body was sweating. He remembered distinctly how he was manipulated by the force to manifest the laws of merging.

"It's—it's incredible," he stammered. "My will is so strong, and there is a tower pearl in my soul to protect it. Even masters of the universe would find it hard to control my mind. However, that mysterious force, it..."

Luo Feng finally realized how mighty the ancestral god school was.

"That's right. It's the land of inheritance. Even those universe knights who are as powerful as the master of the heaven erosion palace or Xi Luo Feng will come here if they don't acquire the complete inheritance. That force will just manipulate everyone else, like what it just did to me. The mysterious force is nonaggressive, but it didn't even give me a chance to resist. What did that come from?"

As Luo Feng was still pondering its whereabouts, the force arrived again.

"The third level," Luo Feng heard a pressing voice say.

It did not say anything else, but it made Luo Feng realize what "the third level" meant. The voice was echoing inside Luo Feng's mind, and Luo Feng fell into a hallucination He was trapped in a bizarre dreamland.

Inside the dreamland, Luo Feng was shown the most mystical and intricate secrets of the path of beast gods, and all the merging space laws and gold were instructed in the most detailed way possible. It was like someone pouring all the knowledge inside Luo Feng's brain. It was far more effective than reading 52 chaos tablets or looking at the sculpture of beast gods.

After a long time, the force wore off. The black mist kicked Luo Feng out of the dreamland.

"It's beyond my wildest imaginations." Luo Feng blinked and was inspired. "I wish I can have more of this. I've trained myself in Ice Hell for more than 2,000 years, and I could barely comprehend a tiny bit of the third chapter of Nan Shen Seven Forms. However, I can now comprehend a lot more after spending only a short time there. I feel like I can actually complete the third chapter if I can be indoctrinated one more time. I must have been taught the whole third chapter, but I can only understand half of it."

Luo Feng was anxious. He hadn't felt this way for a long time. It was like dreaming, but he could only remember a small portion of it. After becoming a powerful one, he had never experienced blurry memories. But now, he felt the same way, and all he could remember were fractions of secrets of the third chapter.

"Don't just stand there," the knight on the aerolite said.

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor both looked happily surprised.

"The land of inheritance was born with the universe, and it was fraught with wonders," the knight said. "It was the most important place of the ancestral god school. Every time, it will test how much you have understood the laws. There are seven levels of beast god inheritance, and if you've completely comprehended the first two levels, you'll be bequeathed the third-level inheritance, so on and so forth." Jiu Feng Knight looked to Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor. "How about you two? Which level have you reached?"

"The third level," Luo Feng said. "I've learned a lot."

"The fourth level," True Yan Emperor said with thrill. "I feel... I feel that I'm having my breakthrough."

Chapter 948: Extrapolation

"Breakthrough?" Jiu Feng Knight looked at True Yan Emperor in surprise.

"Teacher? You're—you're!"

Luo Feng was exhilarated. His teacher had been stuck at the last step for eras, and although beast god inheritance was a huge opportunity for him, he wasn't guaranteed to succeed. However, he was going to have his breakthrough right after inheritance.

True Yan Emperor was thrilled. He had been waiting for too long. He was still accompanied by his families when he first became a powerful one, but with time going by, his families all became old, and his hometown also prospered because of him. After eras, he didn't need to worry about his hometown anymore. The only thing he was pursuing was the path of power. Nevertheless, he couldn't move forward while some of the other talents of the barbarian race had become universe knights. He could only stay in Chaos City and find a sense of accomplishment by teaching the juniors.

Beast god inheritance was his biggest opportunity. However, success wasn't guaranteed.

"Haha! I just feel this way as I have lots of inspirations," True Yan Emperor laughed. "I'm not sure when I can actually step forward."

"Even feeling it is good enough," said Jiu Feng knight with a smile. "What will really worry me is that you don't feel anything. Now that you've got inspirations, go back and contemplate them. Study the path of beast god and you'll recall the instructions you had during the inheritance."

"Ah!" Luo Feng was startled.

Could he actually remember them?

"This is a small trick," Jiu Feng knight said. "During the

inheritance, you, Blade River Emperor, received the third level of it by watching every secret behind that. However, the amount you can remember depends on your original progress, and that's why you can't remember everything. If you go back and ruminate on it, you can remember more. The key is to seize the moment and study the path of beast god!"

"Thank you, Jiu Feng knight," Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor said with gratitude.

"Also, is the inheritance great?" Jiu Feng Knight looked at Luo Feng. "I can tell by your facial expressions. Don't be smug. You might think this one-time inheritance is far more effective than the training you've done before, but it's only an illusion."

"An illusion?" Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor were dazed.

"Maybe you found it difficult to understand during your previous training," said Jiu Feng knight. "However, you only ran into those problems because you actually put effort into it, and that's why you were suddenly enlightened during the inheritance. If you think inheritance itself is enough for you, you're way off. Without the reflection of the failures you had before, you wouldn't gain anything even if you received the inheritance."

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor suddenly understood. It was just like the chaos tablet, which would only be helpful after they practiced long enough. As for beast god inheritance, it was tens of millions of times more helpful.

"When can we come here for inheritance again?" Luo Feng asked.

"There are seven levels of beast god inheritance, and you can have a free instruction for each level," Jiu Feng Knight said. "When you complete the second level, you can take the inheritance for the third level. When you're done with the third level, you can come here for the fourth level, and so on and so forth. You can get only one for each level. That means you can't get a free third-level inheritance."

"Free? Does that mean I need to pay a price?" Luo Feng asked. It was totally worth it to trade a treasure for one inheritance.

"What's the price? A treasure?" True Yan Emperor followed up.

"Do you really think the ancestral god school would care about your treasures?" Jiu Feng Knight shook his head. "The only way is to go to the world of glory."

"World of glory?" Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor remembered it.

"You'll know one when you enter it," Jiu Feng knight said. "But you need to be extra careful."

Jiu Feng knight looked at Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor and said, "I'll tell you two rules. One: There shall be no killings in the five-color aurora lake, or you'll be attacked. Two: Each heir has a palace on the Bauhinia Island, and the palace belongs to you and you only. Nobody can trespass in it, and you can't trespass in others' palaces. Remember the two rules. Now go. The portal is right behind you."

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor took a bow, turned around, and saw a transparent wave. They flew inside.

Shua!

They were teleported.

Jiu Feng knight sat on the aerolite and said, "Blade River Emperor? Is he the sector-lord Blade River Emperor? Incredible for him to reach the third level as only a sector lord."

******

On Bauhinia Island.

Luo Feng and True Yan Emperor walked out of the water curtains and flew back to their palaces.

"Student, I have so many inspirations now that I think I can actually have my breakthrough—if I can actually accomplish it."

True Yan Emperor looked at Luo Feng. "You deserve the credit for that."

"The token means nothing without your hundreds of millions of years of training," Luo Feng answered.

"That sounds about right," True Yan Emperor said. "I gained a lot by taking you on as my student. I still need to contemplate and try to leap forward. I guess I can either spend a year or 10,000 years before I become a universe knight. But if I can't even make it after 10,000 years, I might lose my chance."

"You can succeed, teacher," Luo Feng encouraged him.

"I hope everything you say will become true," True Yan Emperor said. "I might not show up for a long time. And don't come to me unless there's something urgent."

"I understand," Luo Feng said, nodding. He wouldn't interrupt his teacher at such a crucial time.

"I hope I am a universe knight next time I see you," True Yan Emperor said.

"I hope so, too." There was a trace of light in Luo Feng's eyes.

True Yan Emperor flew to the garden afar and closed the door.

Luo Feng sat beside the river and couldn't help smiling. "Finally, my teacher can have his moment. I'll need to work hard, also. The training I have in normal times is the root."

Luo Feng went back to his palace, sat on the path beside the pool with his legs crossed, and started to practice.

******

Half a year passed, and Luo Feng finally opened his eyes.

"Jiu Feng knight was right," he said. "I did advance a lot in the past half a year. Although it wasn't as effective as I was during the inheritance, it's much better than in Ice Hell. I can now understand that in a normal speed. I don't need to rush."

Luo Feng stood up and walked outside. He walked to the side of the river and looked around. The door of his teacher's palace was still closed, and he could see other figures afar.

"Where can I go? The world of glory, the land of inheritance, the land of treasures, and the land of the secret region," Luo Feng murmured. "I can't go to the land of the secret region now or I'll die. And there's no point going to the land of inheritance. I'll go to the land of treasures."

Luo Feng was expecting something great. The land of treasures, according to the guarding beast god, was filled with treasures left by a plethora of beast gods, guarding beast gods, and their equals.

"The guarding beast god said there was a human obtaining a treasure," said Luo Feng, recalling how Seven Blade Emperor used the golden pool. "Could that be him? Whatever, I'll go take a look first."

Luo Feng flew to the square in front of the palace of the island owner. As he landed, he saw a figure there. The figure was ten feet tall and wore armor resembling green bark. He had silver skin, a bald head, and diamond eyes.

"Automaton race," Luo Feng said as he landed.

"Human," the powerful one of the automaton race said. It stared at and inspected Luo Feng. Then it smiled and said, "I have the information of 91,293 human emperors, and that of all the famous undying of humans is here. Normally, only the well-known emperors can get tokens and get in. But strangely, I can't find your information. Based on the fight between Blade River Emperor and Hei Ti Emperor, a phantom of beast god will appear if the Blade River Emperor makes his move. Apparently, Blade River Emperor is following the path of beast gods. And in the past 10,000 eras, there were few humans following the path of beast gods. The Blade River Emperor is extraordinarily talented, and the human race would definitely give him the token. Correct me if I'm wrong.

You're Blade River Emperor!"

The powerful one of automaton race looked at Luo Feng and added, "How incredible true treasures treasures are, that I can't even tell you're a sector lord."

Chapter 949: Land of Treasures

Luo Feng looked at the powerful individual of the automaton race in front of him, frowning. He didn't expect the barbarian race to be so accurate. But, on second thought, he wasn't that surprised. The bug race, the demon race, and the automaton race were often in contact with humans, and they had detailed information on humans. Besides, only the most talented ones could get the tokens and come to the land of inheritance.

"I know you're Blade River Emperor, even if you're not talking," the powerful one of the automaton race said as he stared at Luo Feng. He wanted to kill the human in front of him to get the tempting reward.

"All you can do is to guess my identity." Luo Feng grinned." I, however, have already figured out that you're Ju Jue Emperor. As for my identity, you can keep guessing."

Luo Feng took a step into the spring and vanished.

Ju Jue Emperor was a bit dazed. He looked at the empty square and whispered, "Interesting that he didn't admit it. It seems this overly talented Blade River Emperor doesn't have a good temper. After all, he's so gifted."

Everyone who was qualified to enter the land of inheritance was gifted.

Fame was what made Blade River Emperor special. Everyone in the universe knew that there was a Blade River Emperor in the human race who was able to defeat peak emperors as only a sector lord. That eclipsed lots of other talents in the universe—even those invincible emperors. It wasn't surprising that they were jealous.

"Land of treasures?" said Ju Jue Emperor. "That place is always filled with heirs, and they won't stay there for long. There's going to be someone who can figure out his true identity." Ju Jue

Emperor smiled and stepped into the water curtain.

Although Luo Feng didn't admit to his true identity, Ju Jue Emperor had evolved from intelligent life forms, which granted him extraordinary speculating capabilities that were a source of pride for him.

******

The teleportation was finished. Luo Feng appeared on the peak of a mountain, and he could see tens of thousands of hills of all sorts. He couldn't even see the end of them. There were lakes of different sizes among the mountains, the largest ones being over a million square kilometers. The lakes were like emerald jades; some were light while others were dark.

Luo Feng looked up. There were moving auroras up on the sky. Apparently, the land of treasures was within the five-color aurora lake.

That's right, Luo Feng thought. The land of treasures was flooded with valuables. The Ancestral God School needs to place it in a secure place, or it will be robbed by some supreme beings outside.

Sou!

Luo Feng flew up and traveled across the mountains through the air. He could see creatures of all races, including many special creatures. Some of the gigantic creatures of the demon race and plant race shrunk their bodies.

Interesting, Luo Feng thought. It's like an exhibition of all the creatures. Although I saw lots of races in the outer-domain battlefield, it was nothing compared to this one.

This was the first time Luo Feng had seen so many races and clans he had never encountered before, which made him excited. After a while, he got used to it.

Luo Feng dove and landed on a mountain. He found a rock, sat on it, and wondered, "Where are the treasures?"

"Brother Human!" he heard a voice call out.

Luo Feng turned around and saw someone flying toward him. He was transparent with a handsome face and covered in green armor.

Luo Feng smiled and said, "Brother Dark Mist clan." The Dark Mist clan belonged to Hong Alliance.

"I'm Thousand Rain," the handsome one from the Dark Mist clan said with a smile.

"I'm Hua," Luo Feng said.

"I've never seen you before. Did you just arrive?" Thousand Rain asked.

"Indeed. This is my first time in the land of treasures." Luo Feng looked around and sighed. "I heard there are quite a few treasures left by the seniors of Ancestral God School. But all I can see is the beautiful view instead of the treasures."

"You didn't find any treasures?" Thousand Rain burst into laughter.

"What's the deal?" Luo Feng looked at him. "Why is that funny?"

"There are treasures everywhere." Thousand Rain pointed around. "Treasures are hidden in every mountain and every lake."

"Everywhere?" Luo Feng was dazed.

There were tens of thousands of mountains and lakes. How many treasures were there?

"There are a plethora of treasures. See? Those are the tallest 108 mountains." Thousand Rain pointed to the towering mountains afar, which were significantly taller than others. "Every heir knows that the most precious 108 valuables of the Ancestral God School are hidden there, and 42 of them have been taken away by some of the luckiest guys in the universe, the latest being 1.2 million eras ago. The universe knight of the demon race who got lucky obtained an invaluable treasure."

"An invaluable treasure?" Luo Feng was thrilled.

"Of course," Thousand Rain continued. "This is the land of treasures of the Ancestral God School. Each of the top 108 valuables is at least an invaluable treasure. There are many other rare valuables, too, some of them being really helpful for those following the path of beast gods. They're just almost impossible to get."

Luo Feng looked to the mountains.

"Nobody tried to cut into the mountains?" Luo Feng said jokingly.

"Who has the guts to do that?" Thousand River said. "For one thing, all the mountains are protected by the force of the five-color aurora lake, and emperors like us can't damage them at all. Also, for universe knights who are able to do that, they dare not. Vandalizing the land of treasures is a blasphemy to all the seniors of the Ancestral God School, for which anyone would be killed instantly by the five-color aurora lake."

Luo Feng nodded.

"Don't even think about the valuables there," Thousand Rain smiled and said. "The more precious the valuables are, the more difficult it is to get them. If we know the requirements, we might be able to strive for it. However, we don't even know what conditions those supreme ones have for opening the treasures. That's why only luck can help. If you can find one that suits you, the weakest one here is more precious than an ordinary treasure."

Luo Feng nodded, thinking about the creatures who had placed the valuables.

******

There were a great many emperors in the land of treasures, but there were also lots of universe knights. After all, many heirs were universe knights, and many of the sub-members of the Ancestral God School were universe knights. The ratio between emperors

and universe knights was 1000 to one, and the emperors avoided the knights.

Hong!

A towering figure dove into a mountain.

"Humans?" the creatures said as it glimpsed Luo Feng and Thousand Rain. "Humans are the most annoying."

The figure detested them. He dove toward Luo Feng and Thousand Rain, who attempted to dodge him. However, the figure sped up and hit Luo Feng directly.

Hong!

A terrific, godly power assaulted Luo Feng and Thousand Rain, and they bounced away.

Pu!

Blood trailed from their mouths.

"Bastard!" Thousand Rain gnashed the teeth in anger.

Luo Feng's face darkened. Thousand Rain grabbed him and spoke to him mentally, saying, Don't go. He is a universe knight.

Luo Feng was furious. He had never come across anyone so aggressive and reckless. We're inside the five-color aurora lake. What can he do? Kill us?

He didn't kill us, Thousand Rain replied. These universe knights have lived here for eras, and they know the rules. See? The mountain remains intact, and our bodies are not broken. He was just trying to humiliate you. What can you do about it?

But Luo Feng was charging the knight before Thousand Rain could finish.

On top of the mountain, the creature glanced at the two of them and sneered. However, he was surprised to see the human coming toward him.

"What is he doing? He's only an emperor." The creature was irritated and planned to swat Luo Feng away.

Suddenly, he noticed something that dazed him. Luo Feng was holding a flame god crystal. The crystal posed him no threat, but the explosion from it could kill the human. If the human died, he would die along with him.

"Knight." Luo Feng landed on the mountain holding the flame god crystal and looked at the universe knight of the barbarian race. "Can bullying emperors really give you a sense of accomplishment?"

Chapter 950: The Knight and the Emperor

Bei Shan Knight had been living on Bauhinia Island for a long time, and he went to the land of treasures often. And the weak emperors were already accustomed to him being dominant! This was a usual situation for the island, as the knights and emperors were in no way equals.

Knights with good tempers would fly to a place slowly, and the emperors there would go away. However, if they ran into aggressive ones like this Bei Shan Knight, they could only put up with them. It was quite common already.

Bei Shan Knight looked at the human in front of him and sneered, "Bullying you? I innately dislike humans, and that's why I bully you. What can you do about it? You dare disrespect me as a mere emperor?"

"Yes, I just did it, and I'll continue to do so. What do you want to do about it?" Luo Feng looked up at the barbarian knight, holding the flame god crystal.

It was silent all around.

Thousand Rain with blood on his lips, as well as other powerful ones of the barbarian races, all turned to watch.

"I haven't seen this one," said one of them.

"He's new."

"Look, another stupid one."

"Not surprising at all. They think they're under the protection of the law of the Ancestral God School and that the knights can't hurt them. Besides, lots of the newcomers are the special ones of different races, and they can't put up with it. The Bei Shan Knight is hostile against humans and is reckless. It's normal that the newcomers defy him. But he'll know how to behave himself after this."

"Let's see what sort of fight the new one will put up."

"The human's smart to hold the flame god crystal in his hands. That way, he can intimidate Bei Shan. If the crystal kills the human, Bei Shan will die along with him."

The powerful ones around them were all watching from afar. Most of them were emperors, and a few of them were universe knights.

******

At the peak of the mountain, Luo Feng wiped his lips and looked at the universe knight of the barbarian race.

"Impressive," Bei Shan Knight said and looked at Luo Feng from the top. He was irritated but, at the same time, interested. He hadn't come across a human emperor who dared to confront him directly in a long time. "Human, do you know that I'm a universe knight?"

"I do," Luo Feng said, staring at him. "But so what?"

"Don't you think you should revere me?" Bei Shan Knight said.

"Why should the weak respect the strong?" Luo Feng answered. "Because the weak are afraid that the strong will kill them, and they admire the power of the strong. Apparently, I don't admire you whatsoever. I don't need to be afraid of you within the five-color aurora lake. So, you tell me, why should I venerate you?"

Bei Shan Knight burst into laughter, which echoed among the mountains. More powerful ones turned to watch.

"Indeed, you don't need to be afraid of me here." Bei Shan Knight curled his lips and added, "But, human, you should also know that you're not going to stay here forever. I have seen you, and now I know your scent. You know what could happen if I find you outside. Don't you think what you're doing is stupid?"

Luo Feng gazed at Bei Shan Knight.

Forget about it, Thousand Rain said, communicating with Luo Feng telepathically. Don't mess with a universe knight. The universe knights have been used to being revered all the time, and we're not equal to them. Bei Shan Knight indeed stepped out of line this time, but all we can do is bear with it. It's not good for us to have feuds with universe knights.

Thank you, Thousand Rain, replied Luo Feng.

Luo Feng wasn't terrified at all as he looked at Bei Shan Knight. The mighty Master of Sky Wolf had already spread the news of Blade River Emperor, and there were countless creatures in the universe who were trying to assassinate him. The rewards from the peak races were already tempting for a great number of universe knights, possibly some masters of the universe. That was why Luo Feng had chosen to hide here.

"Several top races are trying to kill me," said Luo Feng. "Why do I need to tolerate you? Besides, you're only an ordinary knight, and when I become an undying, my golden-horned-beast body is thousands of time stronger than humans, and it can wear force armor."

Luo Feng didn't want to suffer from this. Since the news of Blade River Emperor was known to the entire universe, and since Ju Jue Emperor had already recognized him, his identity wouldn't be a secret in the land of inheritance for long. So, why should he put up with this? Compared to the glaring from the peak races, this Bei Shan Knight was nothing.

Luo Feng nodded. "You're right, I'll make an enemy of a universe knight if I wrong you, and it might be stupid. However, I've already wronged you. Tell me what I should do?"

Bei Shan Knight was dazed, as he'd never come across anyone like this before. "Interesting."

"Bei Shan, you've finally encountered a handful!" came a rumbling voice from a knight of a barbarian race from a mountain

afar.

"The human newcomer doesn't even give a damn about you!" said another.

A third voice added, "Kill him and build your reputation!"

Three universe knights were laughing, and their voices were echoing in the sky. As for the emperors watching, they whispered to each other.

Thousand Rain was holding his head, hiding far away. "Oh my god, the human's gone mad."

Occasionally, there would be some stubborn newcomers. However, they would usually admit defeat right away. This time, on the contrary, the newcomer was overly reckless. None of the emperors were able to identify Luo Feng, but they all thought the human was foolhardy.

Bei Shan Knight heard the laughter from the other knights, and his face darkened. They, as universe knights, would care more about how they looked. There were many universe knights within the Ancestral God Schools, and they were divided up according to different alliances. For example, the human universe knights were one group, and the universe knights of the Nine-City Alliance would form another group. Presently, the universe knights from another group were laughing at him.

Heng!

Bei Shan Knight gave Luo Feng a cold look and surrounded Luo Feng with an aggressive force. Luo Feng treated the force like a breeze.

"Brave enough," Bei Shan Knight said. "I've always hated humans, and I hate you even more after what has happened here. Now, you'll kneel down and destroy half of your godly body, and I'll pretend none of this ever happened."

Luo Feng glanced at Bei Shan Knight. "You want me to destroy

half of my godly body and kneel down to apologize? You're so merciful. What if I disobey you? Will you kill me outside if you have the chance? I'm so afraid." Luo Feng looked at him wryly. "I'm so afraid! I'll remember this if I'm afraid, and I'll have my revenge. You're of the Fang Chui clan, right?"

Bei Shan Knight became more and more hostile, and Thousand Rain was already scared to half death.

Just apologize, urged Thousand Rain. Just...

Bei Shan Knight said in a low voice, "Human, I admire your bravery. Remember, I'm Bei Shan Knight. Hide in five-color aurora lake as long as you can."

Heng!

Luo Feng sneered. He had a reason to be so contemptuous. If Bei Shan Knight knew that he was Blade River Emperor, he wouldn't dare lay a finger of him.

The Fang Chui clan could handle the anger from the human race, who highly valued super-talents. If he did it, the whole clan would suffer because of him, and thus, only the powers that were Hong Alliance's equal would dare to hurt Luo Feng.

At the peak of the mountain, neither Bei Shan Knight nor Luo Feng lowered their heads. It was impossible for them to do so.

Heng!

Bei Shan Knight hummed and prepared to fly away.

"Bei Shan," came a voice.

A snow-white figure appeared beside the mountain, and the figure was ten feet tall. His entire body was coagulated like an ice cube, and there were lots of other ice shatters inside. He looked like a human and was wearing ice armor. He seemed to be more forceful than Bei Shan Knight.

"Zhu Chong Emperor!" Bei Shan Knight's face darkened.

"Bei Shan," the ice-armored man said with a smirk. "I know that you don't get along with humans, but he just arrived. Do you really need to be so cruel to him? I'm just here to tell you to go easy on the emperors."

Luo Feng was blown away. He couldn't help staring at the ice-armored man. An emperor? The ice-armored man in front of him was an emperor?

Thousand Rain, who is he? Luo Feng asked Thousand Rain.

Thousand Rain wasn't prepared for Luo Feng's question. But then he answered, That's Zhu Chong emperor, one of the three emperors on Bauhinia Island. Rumor has it that he's a unique creature in the universe, and his original body is more than 40,000 miles tall. His constitution is 5,000 times more powerful than ours as only an emperor and is more powerful than lots of ordinary universe knights. Besides, his techniques are extraordinary. He got two invaluable treasures from the Ancestral God School, who specially trains him. Ordinary universe knights are not his match.

Luo Feng blinked and looked at Zhu Chong Emperor in front of him.

A unique life form? thought Luo Feng. More than 40,000 miles tall? 5,000 times?

Chapter 951: He is Blade River Emperor

"Unique?" Luo Feng found it hard to believe that a unique life form would just appear in front of him.

He had known only two unique lives before, one of them being the fallen beast god, who was born to be a Universe master. And the other was teacher Mountain Sitting Guest, who was one of the mightiest in the entire universe. Luo Feng perceived a unique life to be incredibly powerful.

"A unique life form at an undying level? One of the top three heirs on the island?" Luo Feng rejoiced in his heart. "That sounds about right, as all the talents of the universe are on Bauhinia Island. My teacher True Yan Emperor can barely get in. Top three? How strong can those be?"

Luo Feng wasn't arrogant anymore. He wasn't qualified to be arrogant when compared to the Zhu Chong Emperor.

A unique life form, thought Luo Feng. That's right. Special life forms. The guarding beast god told me that the secret region of the Ancestral God School has the most special creatures out of the entire universe. Perhaps I can find a chance to confirm my third body, which is crucial to my future. I don't need to find the strongest one, but I need to find the one that suits me best.

Thousand Rain couldn't help but praise the emperor while Luo Feng was thinking about his third body. "We're emperors just like Zhu Chong Emperor, but look at the gap between us and him! Our constitutions are already 5,000 times weaker than his, and that's a larger gap than between the universe knights and us. Rumor has it that Blade River Emperor can kill an emperor undying as only a sector lord, and this Zhu Chong Emperor can kill an ordinary universe knight as only an emperor. No wonder the Ancestral God School treats him as a special life form."

"Stay out of this, Zhu Chong Emperor," Bei Shan Knight said in a

low voice.

"Oh?" Zhu Chong Emperor enlarged his body to the size of Bei Shan Knight. He gazed at Bei Shan and said, "First of all, I'm an undying emperor, and this newcomer is a human. You know that humans are my brothers. Tell me why I should stay out of this." But just when Bei Shan Knight tried to say something, Zhu Chong Emperor continued, "Knights are indeed at a higher status than emperors, and that's why emperors will avoid the knights if they see the knights from afar. However, you're so belligerent, Bei Shan. Can you really blame him for fighting back? You're within five-color aurora lake, and killings are forbidden here. You were trying to force the human to burn his godly body?"

Heng!

Bei Shan Emperor flew away like a beam of light. Zhu Chong Emperor turned back to a ten-foot figure after seeing this.

"Human," Zhu Chong Emperor said and looked at Luo Feng.

"Thank you, Zhu Chong Emperor," Luo Feng said and smiled.

"I didn't help you much," Zhu Chong Emperor said. "I could've stopped it if I found out sooner, but now, Bei Shan Knight might hold a grudge against you. Be careful."

"Okay." Luo Feng nodded.

Zhu Chong Emperor was a little surprised. He didn't care about being hated? He had no idea how many enemies Luo Feng had.

"You can come find me in the world of glory," Zhu Chong Emperor told Luo Feng, after which he flew away.

Thousand Rain didn't fly to Luo Feng until Zhu Chong Emperor left. Thousand Rain landed on the mountain and sighed. "Please don't blame me, as I really don't want to mess with that universe knight," he said. "He was way out of line this time. I was going to avoid him when he hit me away. It's like he's trying to show off."

"I'm not blaming you." Luo Feng smiled.

In the distance, creatures were gossiping The confrontation between Zhu Chong Emperor and Bei Shan Knight attracted tens of thousands of powerful ones, which was remarkable considering the size of the land of treasures.

Luo Feng heard what was being said and smiled. "Nobody thinks much of me," he said.

"Can you blame them for thinking that you're foolhardy?" said Thousand Rain. "How many emperors have the guts to confront universe knights? For the ordinary races, even the top ones like space beasts, only have ten times more powerful genes than ordinary ones. And even though we are the peerless talents of our own clans, we are still emperors; we won't dare to fight with universe knights. Only the most exceptional of the special creatures have the ability and bravery to do that."

"There are only several emperor-level special creatures among the heirs."

"We need to be careful," Thousand Rain said. "We'll be in trouble if a universe knight holds resentment against us."

"Okay." Luo Feng was listening to a discussion afar. "I'll go check out other places."

"Haha! I know you can't stand all the gossiping," Thousand Rain said. "I'm coming with you."

Sou! Sou!

Luo Feng and Thousand Rain flew away like two flashes of light.

Tens of thousands of powerful ones were talking about what happened in small groups.

"How mighty Zhu Chong Emperor is! Bei Shan Knight didn't dare say another word!"

"Bei Shan Knight was only at fourth-level inheritance, and his

constitution is nothing compared to that of Zhu Chong Emperor, whose godly body was 5,000 times stronger than ordinary emperors. Besides, Zhu Chong Emperor has two invaluable treasures. What do you think Bei Shan Knight could do about it?"

"He's wise not to mess with Zhu Chong Emperor, who has killed universe knights and defeated three universe knights before."

"How incredible."

"Well, he's 5,000 times more forceful than ordinary emperors. There's no comparison."

"Bei Shan Knight was humiliated this time. How unfortunate for him to run into a stupid newcomer and be suppressed by Zhu Chong Emperor at the same time."

Some of the universe knights were gloating.

"Unlucky Bei Shan."

"Although Bei Shan is aggressive, it's no big deal. Who expects the human to refuse to back down?"

"The human newcomer is a bit stupid. See? He now has made an enemy of a universe knight."

"You should just back down when you're weak."

******

After Luo Feng and Thousand Rain flew hundreds of thousands of miles, they were stopped by three emperors.

"Um?" Luo Feng looked at the three emperors in front of him.

One that looked like a beetle stared at Luo Feng with its compound eyes. "Human, are you Blade River Emperor?" it said in a hoarse voice.

Luo Feng was dazed.

"Blade River Emperor?" Thousand River said, turning to gape at Luo Feng in surprise.

"Stop covering it up, human," said the beetle emperor, confident and excited. "Based on my information, there's not a single emperor of the human race that matches you—except the mysterious Blade River Emperor... Blade River Emperor, I've heard a lot about you. How thrilling it is to finally see you. Bei Shan Knight is stupid enough to mess with you. The automaton race and demon race have already released the reward for hunting you down, and there are a plethora of powerful ones trying to kill you. However, they're all really careful, as they all know the resources the human race have put in place to protect you."

Luo Feng frowned.

Sou!

Luo Feng flew away, followed by Thousand Rain.

"Blade River Emperor! Blade River Emperor!" the beetle screamed, and its voice spread everywhere.

"Blade River Emperor?" others replied

"What Blade River Emperor?"

"It is, of course, the most unimaginable talent of the human race! Blade River Emperor! Where is he?"

"It's the human!" said the beetle. "The one who confronted Bei Shan knight on the mountain! I was pondering his identity just now. There's detailed information of the Nine-Domain Alliance, and the humans who came here with the tokens are the most incredible talents. It should've been fairly easy to find his information, but I can't. Now I understand why. It's Blade River Emperor. They said Blade River Emperor used the method of beast god to fight Hei Ti emperor. It must be him."

"The human newcomer is Blade River Emperor?"

The powerful ones who were just randomly gossiping suddenly got serious.

Ju Jue Emperor talked to his friends, who couldn't help marveling. "He's Blade River Emperor, unless another super-talent comes out—and it's almost impossible that there are two super-talents. The probability of him being Blade River Emperor is over 99.1 percent."

"It actually is the Blade River Emperor. And he came here as only a sector lord."

"Impressive."

"He didn't even bow down in front of a universe knight. How arrogant is that?"

"Do you think it's possible for such a peerless talent not to be arrogant? He was able to kill an emperor as a sector lord, and he's only human. We all know humans aren't special creatures. The supreme beings of the human race must treat him as one of a kind. The demon race, the automaton race, and the worm race all want to kill him. No wonder he didn't give a damn about Bei Shan Knight. Who is he compared to the demon race, the automaton race, and the worm race?"

"Unbelievable! He's Blade River Emperor."

The news that Blade River Emperor had come to the land of treasures and confronted Bei Shan Knight spread like wildfire.

All the powerful ones of the barbarian race knew about Blade River Emperor, and there were even a few of them who didn't care about the outside but heard the news from their friends. They were all amazed.

"He can kill an emperor as a sector lord? Then can he kill a universe knight when he becomes an emperor? And he's not a special life form, but rather a human?"

He was no special creature, but he was as powerful as one. This was how Blade River Emperor garnered such fame and why the worm race, the demon race, and the automaton race wanted to kill

Luo Feng.

Chapter 952: The Trouble with Fame

Luo Feng and Thousand Rain flew away like two beams of light. The land of treasures was boundless, and lakes could be over a million square miles.

"How long are we going to fly like this?" Thousand Rain said. "Let's teleport ourselves."

"Okay." Luo Feng answered.

His Mo Sha Clan body turned into a metal sheet, and they teleported themselves almost at the same time with Luo Feng following Thousand Rain. Although it was difficult to sense the accurate coordinates during distant teleportation, Luo Feng and Thousand Rain didn't teleport themselves that far.

They appeared inside a remote mountain. Thousand Rain looked down and pointed at a col between peaks and said, "Let's go there. I bet there are lots of them trying to find you. We can at least have some quiet time there."

"Good." Luo Feng smiled and dove alongside Thousand Rain.

There were streams in that col, and the water was running. Luo Feng and Thousand Rain landed beside the stream.

"Are you really Blade River Emperor, Hua?" Thousand Rain couldn't help asking.

"Do you really want to do this?" Luo Feng looked at him.

"No, that's not what I mean," Thousand Rain explained. "I'm not investigating you. I'm just curious. Blade River Emperor is so famous because he can kill an emperor as a sector lord, which is something that can only be accomplished by unique creatures like Zhu Chong Emperor. I bet there are lots of others who are curious."

"Then just think of me as Blade River Emperor," Luo Feng said.

He smiled and nodded.

"You're not him?" Thousand Rain was dazed. "Or perhaps you are? Are you a phony that the human race introduces to mislead those barbarian races who want Blade River Emperor dead? Impressive. Impressive, indeed. That way, they can protect the real Blade River Emperor and render all others' efforts in vain. Besides, the race will certainly reserve the time and bring you back to life, given your talents."

This Thousand Rain is really imaginative, Luo Feng thought to himself.

Thousand Rain said, "Rest assured. I won't tell anyone. You're not trying to mislead me, right? Maybe you are indeed the real Blade River Emperor."

"You can think whatever you want," Luo Feng said, smiling. "You can call me either Hua or Blade River Emperor. I'll answer to both."

"You..." Thousand Rain didn't know how to respond.

"Stop talking about this," said Luo Feng. "I'm really curious about the treasures here."

Luo Feng looked at the col. The scene was breathtaking, and the mountains were steep, where grew all kinds of plants. Rocks and streams were everywhere. Luo Feng observed it for a long time.

"Where are the treasures hidden?" Luo Feng couldn't help asking. "I haven't seen any treasures after arriving here."

"There are treasures everywhere," Thousand Rain said jokingly. "Of course, they are invisible to you."

"What do you mean by that?" Luo Feng kept asking.

"You know nothing, newcomer. Enter the world of glory and chat with our friends in the Hong Alliance more. You'll know more by doing that. Let me introduce you to some common sense."

Thousand Rain pointed around. "All the supreme beings of the Ancestral God School can leave some treasures here, and they set conditions for those treasures. As long as one is qualified, the treasures will show themselves to that one when it walks close."

"Show themselves?" Luo Feng was baffled. "Treasures are not alive. How do they know whether we're qualified or not?"

"You don't understand." Thousand Rain pointed to the sky and said, "The Ancestral God School controls the entire five-color aurora lake. They'll know everything you do or touch within here."

Luo Feng was suddenly enlightened. That's right. I can know everything that's going on in star tower.

Just like the five-color aurora lake.

"The level of beast god inheritance you've reached, the strength of your godly power, the amplitude of your soul and godly body—the control system of the world of glory should be connected to that of the entire five-color aurora lake," Thousand Rain said. "In a word, the control system will collect all your information. And once you're qualified for a certain treasure, it will open automatically for you. There are two conditions for obtaining a treasure. One, be qualified; two, go to the treasure directly."

Thousand Rain smiled and added, "If you want treasures, show some extraordinary talents in the world of glory or inside your palace if you don't want to reveal it to everyone. Although the palace belongs to you, the control system will still know your every move. Remember. Show your power. Otherwise, the control system can't collect information."

Luo Feng nodded. It was exactly like him being in star tower, where he could see how the powerful ones in the star tower moved. However, that was the most he could do. He couldn't examine the souls of the barbarians and inspect the secrets inside their bodies.

"If you are indeed a sector lord, you can reveal your true identity temporarily in your palace," Thousand Rain said. "There have been fewer than ten sector lords arriving here since the birth of the universe, and every one of them who did was an emperor's equal. That's what makes you special. Maybe there are some treasures that are for sector lords only."

"Ha..." Luo Feng smiled as thoughts flooded in his mind.

I'll collect some information in the world of glory later, thought Luo Feng. I know so little as a newcomer.

******

While Luo Feng and Thousand Rain were hiding at the periphery of the land of treasures, the place was filled with hustle and bustle.

The news that Blade River Emperor had appeared in the land of treasures and confronted Bei Shan Knight spread like a virus. Through the virtual world of the world of glory, tens of thousands of heirs knew about it, except some, who turned off notifications.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

One creature after another appeared at the portal. The powerful ones who rushed to the land of treasures all wanted to see the famous Blade River Emperor.

"Where is Blade River Emperor?" they demanded.

"Where is the human, Blade River Emperor?"

"Blade River Emperor flew away with the Thousand Rain Emperor of the Dark Mist clan," answered those who knew the truth.

"You can confirm that the human is Blade River Emperor, right?"

"We can all confirm it. He is the Blade River Emperor, and there are only so many emperors within the human race. Talented emperors are rare. Do you really there's another who can rival Blade River Emperor? Coincidentally, Blade River Emperor also

follows the path of beast god. Do you really think two peerless geniuses following the same path will hide their identities and rise at the same time? He must be Blade River Emperor."

"Makes sense. Let's go. I want to see this Blade River Emperor. I know of the rewards offered by the demon race, the automaton race, and the worm race, and all of them are incredibly generous. Especially the demon race, who offer an invaluable treasure. Although that one can barely reach the threshold of invaluable treasures, universe knights are all crazy for it."

******

Although the land of treasures was vast, there were too many powerful ones, and Luo Feng and Thousand Rain were spotted after a short while.

"Look, isn't that Thousand Rain Emperor?"

"That's right. See the black-armored human beside him? That must be Blade River Emperor."

"Blade River Emperor is a sector lord? Why can't I tell?"

"Blade River Emperor is said to have invaluable treasures, which can cover his scent."

Three creatures dove towards the col. Luo Feng and Thousand Rain lifted their heads, and those three arrived.

"Busted." Luo Feng shook his head. He had originally planned to wander within the land of treasures, which seemed impossible now.

"Blade River Emperor."

"Blade River Emperor."

All of the three figures were five feet tall with broad waists and muscles so strong it was as if they were carrying shields. They had six arms and six eyes that stared at Luo Feng trying to discern the secrets behind this sector lord who could kill a limit emperor.

"Are you Blade River Emperor?" a green-armored powerful one suddenly asked.

"He must be."

"He must be," the other two said.

"Powerful ones from Ta Bei clan, what do you want with Blade River Emperor?"

"Stop denying it," said a powerful, purple-armored creature from the Ta Bei clan. "It's impossible that two peerless and hidden talents who both follow the path of beast god could come from human race."

"Blade River Emperor," the green-armored one said, gazing at Luo Feng. "I've heard of your story, but I don't buy it! The human race has ordinary genes, and no matter how deeply you understand the laws and how powerful your secret techniques are, you can't defeat an emperor without an extraordinary constitution and body. Rumor has it that you're a sector lord. I bet that's fake!"

Chapter 953: Hong Alliance

The green-armored undying gazed at Luo Feng and burst into laughter. "Sector lord killing an emperor! That's not something that can be accomplished by you humans."

"You don't think Blade River Emperor is a sector lord?" Luo Feng asked. "The demon race, the worm race, and the automaton race seem convinced. Convinced enough to post rewards for killing Blade River Emperor. And the demon race even offered an invaluable treasure."

"Who knows?" the undying of the Ta Bei clan said, gazing at Luo Feng. "Maybe that's because you humans are so good at deceiving others. That sounds about right. You humans are one of the peak races, you are talented at just about everything. You don't need to explain anything. We'll be convinced if you can give out the scent of a sector lord, after which we'll apologize to you and show you our admiration."

They all stared at Luo Feng, waiting for the scent of a sector lord.

"Thousand Rain, I'll go back first," Luo Feng turned around and told Thousand Rain beside him.

"Um, I bet other powerful ones will arrive in no time," Thousand Rain said, nodding.

"Human? Human!" two of the three creatures from the Ta Bei clan screamed.

"You three," said Luo Feng. He turned to them and sneered. "You're all stupid. I didn't deny, nor confirm that I am Blade River Emperor. I don't care if you believe it or not."

Sou!

Luo Feng teleported himself and vanished.

"You little—!" But before they could finish cursing at him, Luo

Feng was long gone.

"Ha!" Thousand Rain laughed, smirked, and disappeared.

They all gnashed their teeth in anger. "How dare this Thousand Rain Emperor be disrespectful?"

The green-armored one looked at his companions and said, "This Blade River Emperor is indeed careful. He didn't give away anything or have any intention of revealing his sector-lord scent. It seems that we didn't succeed in confirming his identity."

"Let's go back to report to our seniors."

The three powerful creatures of the Ta Bei clan flew away.

******

Luo Feng teleported to the portal of the land of treasure, where some barbarians talking to each other immediately noticed him.

"It's the human."

"Look, it's Blade River Emperor."

"He's the Blade River Emperor?"

The barbarians flew to him instantly, one yelling, "Wait! Blade River Emperor!" while another shouted, "Human!"

However, Luo Feng pretended that he didn't hear anything and stepped into the portal. The barbarians could only sigh and shake their heads.

******

Luo Feng teleported back to his palace instantly after getting back to Bauhinia Island.

I didn't expect to rouse suspicions quite so soon, thought Luo Feng as he went to the second floor of a pavilion.

There were futons on the ground with empty space surrounding them. Here, he could see the pools and gardens directly. He sat down with his legs crossed and looked down.

"On second thought, it's not that startling," he murmured. "It's almost impossible for two hidden peerless talents to rise from the same race, not to mention both following the path of beast god. Even I wouldn't buy it, let alone the barbarians."

Luo Feng waved his hand, and the mini quantum computer appeared on his hands. It was the receiver to connect to the world of glory.

I'll enter this world of glory and see how it's different from the virtual universe of my race, Luo Feng thought.

He sensed the receiver through his mind and connected to the world of glory shortly.

******

In the world of glory, a figure appeared at the periphery of a square holding a black book.

"Um?" Luo Feng smiled, holding the book. "Interesting. The virtual universe uses virtual assistance to function, while this one uses this book."

Luo Feng opened the book. There was only one word on the first page, written in the human language: "Name." The following pages were blank.

"Please enter a username for the world of glory," Luo Feng heard a voice say when he turned to the first page.

"Name?" Luo Feng considered for a moment, then answered, "Blade River."

Since many powerful creatures already thought he was the Blade River Emperor, he would give himself this username. He didn't care much about the authenticity.

Luo Feng turned to the second page. It was the map of the world of glory, and Luo Feng heard the voice say, "There are two districts in the world of glory. One is the open-air square, and the other is

the world of battle. You can connect to the world of glory within the secret region of the Ancestral God School."

"Wow... it's pretty small," Luo Feng whispered.

And there are very few functions, he complained inwardly.

There was no comparison. If the virtual universe was a skyscraper, the world of glory was a cottage. It only covered the Ancestral God Secret Region, and there were only two districts: the open-air square and the world of battle. There weren't even accommodations or shopping malls. The human virtual universe was much more bustling. There were countless levels of space and a wide range of functions. Everything that you could or could to do was provided in the virtual universe.

Luo Feng skimmed through the options.

Leaderboard of the world of glory

Glory points

Points for inheritances

Now, Luo Feng understood. The only way to have extra inheritances was to come to the world of glory.

There were seven rankings on the leaderboard starting with first-level ranking and descending to second-level ranking and so on and so forth. Different heirs appeared on different rankings according to their wins and losses. As for Luo Feng, he was at the back of third-level ranking. Zero wins and zero losses! Of course, there were creatures with records far worse than his.

It's simple, indeed, Luo Feng thought. The Ancestral God School only wants to offer a place for us to gather by setting up such a simple virtual universe.

"Open-air square?" Luo Feng looked away.

The square was actually an open-air bar where lots of wine was being served and meals were taking place. They could be enjoyed

by all heirs at any time. There were chairs assembled within the square, and Luo Feng could see tens of thousands of heirs with a glance. And with a glance, they spotted him, as well.

"Look, it's Blade River Emperor."

"It's Blade River Emperor."

The heirs all noticed Luo Feng, but they chose to stand by. He realized that the heirs were in hundreds of or even thousands of separate groups. He could sense the hostility among the groups.

There are always conflicts whenever there are powerful ones, thought Luo Feng. Especially in a place like this, where all the talents in the universe live.

"Blade River Emperor."

A creature flew toward Luo Feng like a bolt of lightning.

Luo Feng looked at him and realized it was human. He smiled. "Cha Man Emperor."

Cha Man Emperor was a low-key emperor of the human race. Although he wasn't as mighty as the emperors who could rival universe knights, he was very close. Cha Man Emperor was incredibly talented and had risen to a high level very quickly. For this, he was highly valued and specially trained by the human race. Unfortunately, he was stuck at the final step to becoming a universe knight, which had robbed him of his pride and made him meek.

Many talented ones suffered similar fates. There were, after all, only so many who were qualified to become universe knights—such as Seven Blade Emperor. Who could say for sure whether he would become a universe knight?

"Let's go, the Hong Alliance is here." Cha Man Emperor took Luo Feng and walked away. "According to the command I received from our race, I should call you Blade River Emperor directly when you're suspected. Will it affect you?"

"They will be just as suspicious if you don't call me that."

"It'll happen either way."

"Don't worry about it." Luo Feng smiled.

Cha Man Emperor nodded and continued. "These heirs are divided mainly by the alliances they belong to. The enemy alliances don't get together. We who belong to the Hong Alliance will stick together."

"There seem to be many groups," Luo Feng said.

He could see the divisions between them. Most were in groups of hundreds or thousands of members. There were few groups with more than 10,000 members, and they represented the superpowers of the universe.

Luo Feng pointed to one particularly large group where hundreds of thousands of powerful ones sat together. "Who are they? There are so many members."

"That's the Snow Territory Alliance," Cha Man Emperor said. "Although they are inferior to our Hong Alliance in terms of power, it is the alliance that has the most members. There are lots of undying and even emperor-level undying within that alliance, though most are from weak, ordinary clans—with a few exceptions. You should know that the Ancestral God School doesn't care about the number of members a clan has when it distributes tokens."

After a short while, they arrived at a corner of the square.

"That's our place," Cha Man Emperor said with a smile.

Luo Feng looked to the front and saw only around 1,000 powerful ones. They were all very common clans of the Hong Alliance.

"This is it?" Luo Feng whispered.

"We're the elites," Cha Man Emperor said, still smiling.

"That's right, we're the elites," agreed Luo Feng. "No point

comparing the quantity, I suppose."

Luo Feng smiled back and followed Cha Man Emperor to the heirs of the Hong Alliance.

******

Within the territory of the demon race.

Balls of flames as big as stars were distributed everywhere and enveloped the valley. At the center was the towering Sky Wolf Palace.

An enormous, snake-shape creature with two heads groveled on the palace floor, but its voice was echoing within the entire space. "Master of Sky Wolf, the heirs of our demon race within the Ancestral God School gave us a message. A human suspected to be Blade River Emperor went to the land of treasures. It's highly likely that he's Blade River Emperor."

The Master of Sky Wolf was in charge of the reward for hunting down Blade River Emperor.

Chapter 954: A Difficult Invitation to Battle

A silhouette engulfed in fire walked slowly out of the Sky Wolf Palace.

"Give me the details," the Master of Sky Wolf said, looking down at the snake-shaped creature.

"I bring news," said the snake. "I'm here to tell you first that important information is about to be sent to you."

"Go," the Master of Sky Wolf said.

"Yes."

The snake flew out of the Sky Wolf Palace and teleported itself.

The Master of Sky Wolf stood in front of the palace and received the information from the virtual universe. Although the telecommunication system owned by the demon race couldn't compare to the human race or automaton race, they had built a basic system by plundering parts from others. Besides, creatures who were masters of the universe could easily obtain information from hundreds of millions of lightyears away without any need to access the virtual universe.

Weng!

Among the stars appeared a three-dimensional virtual projection. The Master of Sky Wolf looked at it from afar, watching the confrontation between Luo Feng and Bei Shan Knight in the land of valuables.

"It's him," The Master of Sky Wolf murmured. "I can tell by his eyes."

He had seen Luo Feng before. The speculations made by other super beings of the other races were questionable, but the Master of Sky Wolf was powerful enough to distinguish between the real thing and a forgery. The eyes were the window to the soul, and he

could recognize that meddlesome human by those eyes.

"I can't believe he went to the Ancestral God School. It was a smart move, indeed, but I'm a bit surprised the humans are unable to protect him within their race. I'm sure he'll stay in the Ancestral God School for a long time... The worm race and the automaton race might also receive the information. They might even act first. It's going to cost them dearly if they want to kill Blade River Emperor within the domain of the Ancestral God School. I'll let them do it first."

The eyes of the Master of Sky Wolf gleamed as he pondered how to dispose of this individual—this man who possessed the potential to be a great being of the human race.

The Master of Sky Wolf had seen Luo Feng before, and he was sure that the talented human could become an undying. However, it would be exceedingly difficult for him to become a universe knight. It was difficult for anyone to become a universe knight. Like True Yan Emperor, who had been stuck at the last step for an age. Or like Cha Man Emperor, who was every bit as talented as Seven Blade Emperor but couldn't break through even after hundreds of thousands of years of training. And like Zhu Chong Emperor, who was a special life form in the universe—even more powerful than some bona fide universe knights. However, he still couldn't become a universe knight, even with all the resources provided by the Ancestral God School.

Mountain Sitting Guest had once said that rare resources could help the undying make their breakthroughs and become universe knights, but it was a huge price, and success was not guaranteed.

Blade River Emperor was indeed impressive. However, he was still outshone by a special life form like Zhu Chong Emperor.

He must have lots of secrets, thought the Master of Sky Wolf. That's how he killed an emperor limit as a mere sector lord. If he becomes a universe knight, especially a high-level one, he will rival

a universe master. Perhaps he will become another heaven erosion palace leader—or maybe even stronger than that. He will pose a greater threat than a universe master by then!

To the enemy races, the idea of universe knights wielding the power of universe masters was, indeed, more intimidating than actual universe masters, as no one could resurrect a dead universe master! However, although universe masters like the Chaos City leader couldn't bring back a universe knight as powerful as the heaven erosion palace leader, the strongest ones of the universe—such as the founder of the Huge Axe dojo—could certainly do that.

A supreme being that could be resurrected at any time... What a threat that was!

"There's a huge hurdle between an undying and a universe knight!" said the Master of Sky Wolf. "If Blade River Emperor can't cross the hurdle but the human race still tries to help him regardless, they might pay a huge price without any reward."

Although the Master of Sky Wolf was worried about the surge in power of Blade River Emperor, this human was far from a real threat at the moment.

"I'll wait and see if the worm race or the automaton race make the first move."

******

The worm race and the automaton race received the message on the same day. Four of the peak races in the universe—humans, automatons, worms, and demons—had territories close to each other, and the wars between them could be bitter and devastating. They would surely try to eliminate any peerless talent as soon as possible.

The automaton race reasoned, "The demons and worms might get to him first. There's no need to rush."

Meanwhile, the worms debated, "The humans must have a plan

to protect Blade River Emperor now, and we need to arrange any attack carefully."

The three peak races were the only ones concerned. The other powers that could rival the Hong Alliance were all on the fence. As for the weaker ones like the Nine-Territory Alliance, they would love to see the four peak races destroy each other in battle.

******

On the open-air square in the world of glory.

Luo Feng quickly became friends with many powerful beings.

"The Hong alliance really doesn't have many heirs." Luo Feng couldn't help saying.

"Indeed," Li Li Emperor said with a nod, sitting beside Luo Feng. "But this is only a quarter of us. We humans are rare only because the Ancestral God School distributed their tokens indiscriminately among the races, rendering us at a disadvantage. Besides, the Hong Alliance wants only elites, and those within the alliance are either powerful races or subsidiaries thereof."

Luo Feng nodded. There were several powerful barbarian races within the Hong Alliance, and they all consisted of universe masters.

"We don't have lots of members in the Hong Alliance, and that's why we don't get lots of heirs," Li Li Emperor said.

"The beast god inheritance is only one of the many ways to become stronger," said Cha Man Emperor, shaking his head. "Humans are relatively weak within the Ancestral God School."

Li Li Emperor and Cha Man Emperor were both humans, and the halos on their heads were gone.

"What's most frustrating is that it's so difficult for us to earn glory points," Cha Man Emperor said, shaking his head a second time. "We humans have the virtual universe, which is envied by

countless other races, especially in the world of glory. Lots of barbarians won't even challenge us or accept our challenges. You can't earn glory points without enough battles. Thus, we don't have the opportunities to receive the inheritance."

Li Li Emperor brought his wine glass up and said, "We can only challenge others in the Hong Alliance. Few within our alliance share the same level of inheritance, however, and we all know each other pretty well, so we don't challenge those who can beat us."

"Challenge?" Luo Feng said, tilting his head.

He had read the rules in the black book and knew that the world of glory was divided between the open-air square and the world of battle. Glory points could be gained and lost in the world of battle. Each newcomer would have three glory points, and the smallest price to pay for each battle was one. An heir had to send a letter of invitation to battle first, then wait until for an affirmative response before he could engage in a fight. 100 glory points could be exchanged for one inheritance.

"Can you imagine how difficult it is to get 100 glory points without any challenges?" Cha Man Emperor said with a sigh. "Occasionally, there are some who challenge us, but they're ultra-powerful. If we answer to that, either we're at least at the same level, or we're just being stupid."

"It is so difficult to earn glory points," Li Li Emperor agreed.

Thousand Rain Emperor stood to the side, smiling as he said, "Compared to you humans, I'm lucky as I'm not so isolated. However, you can earn glory points only if you win a battle. Otherwise, you'll lose points. If you lose all your glory points, you have to wait for an era to get a new one. If you lose all of them three times, you have to wait for 10,000 eras for another chance. And if you lose them six times, you have to wait for 100,000 eras! So on and so forth! That's why everyone is very careful and will only make a large bet if they are certain they can win. Normally,

the wager is only for one glory point per battle, but larger bets will happen under only extreme cases."

Thousand Rain Emperor shook his head and added, "Although there are innumerable heirs here, it's almost impossible to get an extra inheritance through glory points."

"Don't gloat," Cha Man Emperor said. "At least you get challenged."

"Not very often," Thousand Rain Emperor replied. "And most of them are stronger than me."

Luo Feng quietly considered how difficult it was to exchange an inheritance with glory points.

Just then, many heirs of the other races began to notice Blade River Emperor's arrival—or, more specifically, the arrival of "Blade River." On the black book of the world of glory, an arrival time and name, along with a note, always appeared when a newcomer arrived.

Someone glanced at their book, saying, "It says here 'Blade River' is here. And it reads 'human' for the note. It must be Blade River Emperor."

"Hmm. Then that means he is here now."

The barbarians all looked from afar.

"It's impossible for a sector lord to kill an emperor limit only with the law comprehension," someone said. "He must possess invaluable treasures. However, in the world of glory, everyone has the same intensity of godly bodies. Even Zhu Chong emperor has the same constitution as we do. And we must use the weapons provided by the world of glory. Even Zhu Chong Emperor was defeated many times in the world of glory. This Blade River Emperor? A third-level heir?"

"I'll invite him to a battle!" someone spoke up.

"I'll do that too!" another cried out. "It'll be interesting to bully and humiliate this legendary Blade River Emperor!"

"I'll crush Blade River Emperor."

"I'll make him miserable!"

All at once, a plethora of talented heirs from every race were sending battle invitations to "Blade River."

As Luo Feng continued chatting with Thousand Rain Emperor, Cha Man Emperor, and Li Li emperor, he felt the trembling of his floating black book.

"Hold on," he said as he opened it up. His eyes went wide. "Um...?"

The number 10,232 filled the blank beside the "Invitations to Battle," line in the book, and the number was soaring.

Now 12000. 13000. 14000... Now 20000! And still rising rapidly.

Chapter 955: Accepting the Challenge?

Luo Feng was just listening to Cha Man Emperor and Li Li Emperor complain about how difficult it was to acquire challenges. However, in the blink of an eye, the invitations to battle sent to him had already skyrocketed. After only a few seconds, it reached 30,000!

"This... this is unbelievable," said Luo Feng, his heart pounding at sight of the number. "I hadn't received any invitations to battle last time I checked the black book. It happened so fast!"

Luo Feng had entered the World of Glory just now and had given himself the name "Blade River." Before that, even if other races had wanted to challenge Blade River Emperor, they couldn't find the target. But now, Luo Feng appeared in the open-air square, and almost all the heirs knew about it. As expected, many of them wanted to battle the legendary Blade River Emperor. Besides, Luo Feng was one of the third-level beast god heirs, and out of all seven levels, the third level contained the most heirs.

More than 100 million heirs were at the third level. There were only a few universe knights, whereas hundreds of millions of the heirs were emperors!

Almost all of the talented fighters who went through hundreds of millions of years of training reached the third level. A considerable number of them had completed the third level and started to comprehend the fourth level, like True Yan Emperor. Accordingly, the largest portion of the heirs belonged to the third level, followed by the fourth level. The rest, in descending order, were the second level, the fifth level, the sixth level, the seventh level, and the first level.

The Heaven Erosion Palace Leader represented the seventh-level heirs, who were almost as powerful as beast gods. As strong as they were, only a few dozen reached the seventh level. As for the first

level, even the newcomers had some foundation, so there was no one at the first level.

Thousand Rain Emperor, Li Li Emperor, and Cha Man Emperor all noticed that Luo Feng was staring at the black book.

"What are you looking at?" Thousand Rain Emperor shouted.

Hu.

Luo Feng looked at his three friends from the Hong Alliance, knowing he didn't need to hide the news that so many other races were challenging him. He whispered, "I've received tons of invitations to battle."

"Tons of invitations?" they said. All of them were dazed.

"How many have you received?" asked Li Li Emperor. "100?" Realizing something was wrong, he shook his head. "Blade River, you're too famous. You can kill a limit emperor as a sector lord. The heirs here are from hundreds of millions of races throughout the universe. They won't rest until they fight you in a battle, and many of them want to grasp this opportunity to crush you. Hmm... I bet you can receive lots of invitations. Perhaps thousands."

Both Cha Man Emperor and Thousand Rain Emperor looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng blocked the space around them to ensure that only they could hear him as he murmured, "More than 50,000 already."

"50,000?" Li Li Emperor said, opening his eyes wide.

"50,000..." Cha Man Emperor sighed. He had spent an eternity on Bauhinia Island, and he hadn't even taken part in 1,000 battles.

"It's been such a short time," Thousand Rain Emperor said, dazed.

Cha Man Emperor was a bit let down. "It seems," he said, "that I've underestimated how much those other races want to fight you. You're just too famous, and you're only a sector lord. Lots of the

treasures and true treasures were absent in the World of Glory. You'll be at a disadvantage when you're fighting them. Not only do they want to fight you; they want to crush you. They think they are superior to you."

Luo Feng glanced at the black book; he had already received more than 60,000 invitations. There were, indeed, lots of great beings from other races who wanted to fight him.

"Blade River Emperor, you're one of the third-level heirs," Thousand Rain Emperor said. "Third-level heirs and fourth-level heirs make up more than 99 percent of all the heirs here. And there are more than 90 million third-level heirs! You'll receive 900,000 invitations to battle even if only one percent of them challenge you."

Luo Feng nodded his head.

"You need to be careful," Thousand Rain Emperor continued. "Don't accept invitations without consideration. All the heirs use the same godly bodies during the battles in the World of Glory, and they're all 100,000 times stronger than the body of a sector lord. You can choose your own look and body type, but your constitution is the same. And you have to choose from weapons within the World of Glory, which are all ordinary weapons. The playing field is kept even. All the treasures you obtained outside and all the special skills you happen to have will disappear. When you're in battle, you can only use fusion laws. All other laws are useless in the World of Glory. Only fusion laws can generate power."

Luo Feng nodded, listening carefully.

"For example," Thousand Rain Emperor continued, "Zhu Chong Emperor is a special organism—unique in the universe. But in the World of Glory, he doesn't have the incredible godly body, the extraordinary techniques, or the true treasures. Thus, he becomes ordinary. He's only at the upper-middle tier of the third-level

heirs, and he will drop to one of the lower-middle ones when he becomes a fourth-level heir."

"Yes," Cha Man Emperor said with a frown. "Besides, sector lords' mind powers can't compare to that of an undying fighter. You'll be at a disadvantage."

"Blade River Emperor," Li Li Emperor said, "the powerful fighters are all peerless in their races. Quite a few have come up with their own pinnacle techniques, and several of them even came up with ultimate techniques! As for law comprehension, there are some at the third level that almost complete it. When it comes to body amplification, all of them have their own techniques, and their willpower is top-tier."

Luo Feng's heart skipped a beat. Ultimate techniques?

The Primal Chaos City Leader praised him after he created his own pinnacle techniques. In a place like Bauhinia Island, where hundreds of millions of peerless talented fighters lived, it was unsurprising that lots of them had created their own pinnacle techniques. However, Luo Feng was amazed that several had created ultimate techniques even though they had only completed the first few moves.

The Ancestral God School gathers talented fighters from all the races in the universe, thought Luo Feng. They have various talents and various life forms. Some have incredible godly bodies, and some of them have extraordinary techniques. It's conceivable that a few of them could come up with ultimate techniques.

"You have to think twice before you accept challenges, as a commitment is binding," Cha Man Emperor said. "They'll only be nullified after you lose all your glory points, so you need to be careful."

"Uh-huh," Luo Feng said, nodding.

Suddenly, several voices arose from afar.

"Blade River Emperor!" shouted a voice. "I, Tie Jing Emperor of the demon race, challenge you! Do you dare to accept it?"

"Blade River Emperor, you can name your bet!" another voice cried out. "But apparently, you only have three glory points, so I'll bet you three glory points! Do you have the guts to do so?"

"I highly doubt that Blade River Emperor is that powerful," another jeered. "Perhaps he got famous because he was lucky."

More voices flooded the area. All spoke in human languages. Some were high, and some were low. Some were squeaky, some were like thunder, and some were hoarse and echoing.

All the other races were provoking him. Yes—provoking him! They were all peerless talents within their own races, especially in the world of battle, where all the special effects were void. How could they possibly admit to the power of a sector lord?

******

"Do you think Blade River Emperor will accept the challenges?" asked a lanky powerful one with nine leaves on its head.

He stood with several others, all of whom were green and black with leaves on their heads. Their skin resembled bark. They were of the Fan Ling Clan and had no genders. All were descendants of the Fan Ling Tree.

"Maybe he will, at first," another replied. "However, he'll realize the powers of the other races after losing once or twice. There are many challenging him this time, and we might not have the chance to fight him. He has only three glory points, and he'll lose all of them in no time. He won't be able to fight after losing them all."

******

Luo Feng did, indeed, want to accept the challenges from the talented fighters of other races. However, he was still rational. He knew he shouldn't underestimate them. They were not just some

ordinary powerful fighters from the outer-domain battlefield. Many of them had created their own pinnacle techniques, not to mention those who had created ultimate techniques.

"The number's still increasing," said Luo Feng, looking at his black book. It had already hit 100,000. "Cha Man Emperor?"

"Yes, Blade River?" Cha Man Emperor said, looking at him.

"I've got an idea," said Luo Feng. "You give me the number of the virtual universe. I'll leave the World of Glory and enter the virtual universe to then connect you. Let's have a mock fight in the virtual universe. How does that sound?"

Cha Man Emperor's eyes gleamed. "Good!"

"Clever," Li Li Emperor said with a smile. "You'll have a mock fight in the virtual universe first so you can determine how powerful you actually are compared to other third-level heirs. After that, you'll know who to choose to fight. Cha Man Emperor and I are both upper-middle tier of the third-level heirs. I'll join, too. You can easily learn how powerful you are, relatively speaking, by fighting us."

"Count me in," Thousand Rain Emperor said. "I'm from the Hong Alliance and have the number of the virtual universe, too."

"Haha! Thank you all," Luo Feng said.

Luo Feng had a strong desire to fight after receiving so many challenges. How could he possibly let it go? He didn't know when or if he would receive so many invitation letters again.

After being given the number of the virtual universe, Luo Feng's mind left the World of Glory and connected to the virtual universe.

******

Inside one of the practice fields in the virtual universe.

A range of rocky cordilleras ran along the practice field. Luo Feng stood on one of the mountains while Thousand Rain Emperor, Li

Li Emperor, and Cha Man Emperor stood across from him.

"Blade River!" said Cha Man Emperor. "Let's at least make it a good fight!"

Their battle senses burned brightly—like Seven Blade Emperor and Meng Sui Emperor before, having been silent for a long time. But in terms of power, these fighters were stronger.

Chapter 956: Luo Feng's Strength

"Who would like to start?" Luo Feng asked, looking at the three strong beings in the distance.

"I am slightly weaker than Cha Man Emperor and Li Li Emperor," said Thousand Rain Emperor. "How about I take the first shot? Blade River Emperor, if you fight them first, you might lose pretty badly."

Both Cha Man Emperor and Li Li Emperor looked at Luo Feng, waiting for him to choose.

"If you want to fight, bring in the strongest one," Luo Feng said bluntly.

"Fair enough," said Thousand Rain Emperor.

Cha Man Emperor and Li Li Emperor looked at each other. And then, the world was filled with Cha Man Emperor's eerie voice. "Li Li Emperor and I are basically on the same level," he said. "I can fight first. However, Blade River... do not underestimate us just because we are low-keyed. There are only two to three Beast God-level emperors among humans who are stronger than us. Newcomers like Seven Blade Emperor are weaker than us."

"I surely won't underestimate you," said Luo Feng.

He knew very well that among humans, many of the older guys maintained low profiles. Although these guys had probably been stuck in the last step for an eternity, some of them possessed intimidating, tremendous strength. On the contrary, rising newcomers like Seven Blade Emperor and Dream Fire Emperor may have been enjoying great fame, but if they couldn't even break through 100 million eras, they would fade to obscurity in future generations. That was simply the cruel nature of time.

******

In midair, Luo Feng and Cha Man Emperor faced each other

across a distance.

"Familiarize yourself with your godly body," said Cha Man Emperor. "Let me remind you that we will be fighting in the virtual world. Hence, as soon as the fight begins, we will both burn our godly bodies and fight frantically. Do not be as reluctant to burn your godly body as you are in reality."

"Hmm," said Luo Feng, feeling his own virtual godly body.

Boom!

With vigorous power filling his body—his every cell comprised of unparalleled godly force—Luo Feng could, if he were willing, turn into an inexhaustible godly force in an instant. Even when his godly body was shattered to pieces, he could recover in the blink of an eye. His confidence in his own dominance and absolute control was much stronger than when he had been a sector lord. This was a godly body 100,000 times stronger than that of a sector lord!

"There are pros and cons," Luo Feng said, acclimating to this godly body. "In real life, even with the assistance of the general soul, my spiritual force is only on the low emperor level. Thanks to my willpower, which is more domineering than most of the universe knights, I can ultimately rival pinnacle emperors. But right now, even without the general soul, I have reached the pinnacle emperor realm with virtual godly force. Coupled with my willpower and consciousness, I will naturally grow stronger."

During his sector lord period, the primal force had combined with the spiritual force, becoming the strength of a world. During his undying period, they became an undying force. Now, with the virtualized undying godly force, he could strike a soul attack.

"Previously, in the real world," Luo Feng muttered, "my strength of a world was too weak. My soul was nothing compared to the general soul, even after my soul amplification using the techniques that I inherited from Demon Note God-General. But now... my virtualized godly force is amplifying completely once again."

From the aspects of godly force and amplification, Luo Feng had, indeed, improved a lot. But there was a weakness. The supreme treasure, the Star Map, was gone. The power of the Star Map could have helped Luo Feng skip two or even three levels.

"Weapon."

As he turned his palms over, 600 semi-transparent golden globes filled with mysterious engravings, which were the interpretations of Luo Feng's mightiest techniques, started to float above his hands. These were very common spiritual weapons Luo Feng made through the virtual universe. After all, only common weapons could be used during battles in the World of Glory.

"Have you gotten used to it?" said Cha Man Emperor.

Luo Feng laughed. "Cha Man Emperor," he said, "you'll have to exert your greatest effort to avoid a humiliating defeat."

With a booming sound, Luo Feng's breath intensified. His every cell started to burn completely, and his strength became 1,000 times stronger in a split second.

"How long have you been cultivating?" asked Cha Man Emperor. "A little friendly advice: Don't mess around with us old tough guys. I will defeat you within three moves."

Abruptly, two giant, blade-shaped claws appeared, covering Cha Man Emperor's fists.

Buzz.

The 600 golden globes floated as Luo Feng turned his hands over.

"Spirit reader?" said Cha Man Emperor. He frowned slightly, looking at Luo Feng in confusion. Before heading to the land of inheritance, spirit readers should have been told by the members within their races that they would be at a disadvantage if they were to take the beast god path. Why was Blade River Emperor still a spirit reader?

Luo Feng tossed the globes randomly. Through the intricate patterns on the 600 golden globes, the burning virtualized godly force activated the law of merging ultimate sources. Suddenly, an enormous Beast God appeared high in the air.

Since this move was unleashed by burning godly force, this Beast God was more real—so much so that its scaled tail had infinitely formidable power.

"Humph!" Cha Man Emperor snorted deeply.

Boom!

Cha Man Emperor transformed swiftly into a human-shaped Beast God with thick shoulders covered in scale armor. Behind him, a giant, semi-visible Beast God shadow also emerged. His eyes were fraught with madness. This powerful human being, quite genteel a moment before, had suddenly become insanely barbaric.

Cha Man Emperor became a beam of light and pounced at Luo Feng.

******

Thousand Rain Emperor and Li Li Emperor watched attentively from afar.

"Blade River Emperor is indeed impressive," said Thousand Rain Emperor, pleasantly surprised. "Though he is in a slightly unfavorable position, he has gotten used to Cha Man Emperor's fighting style in no time. They are running neck and neck."

"Hold on," Li Li Emperor said in a soft voice. "Cha Man Emperor thinks that Blade River Emperor is weak in techniques due to his short cultivation time. That's why Cha Man Emperor didn't use his most powerful secret technique from the start. Look, Blade River Emperor is losing out, isn't he? Humph. Now that their godly bodies are on the same level, it is the comprehension of laws, secret techniques, godly force amplification, experience, etc., that are at stake. Cha Man Emperor is perfect in those aspects. His

secret technique is a pinnacle technique, and his godly force amplification is inherited from the Demon Note God General."

Pinnacle techniques were not uncommon. Almost every universe knight could create pinnacle techniques, so those remarkable geniuses who had the potential to become universe knights would certainly put stricter demands on themselves. Particularly in the event that they couldn't break through the endless ages, those geniuses would put greater emphasis on the creation of pinnacle techniques. Under the instruction of good teachers, many talents from peak races had created pinnacle techniques over an extended time. Luo Feng had complimented simply because it had cost him a short time to invent his pinnacle techniques.

"It is not bad for Blade River Emperor to be on a par with Cha Man Emperor, who is..." Li Li Emperor trailed off, stunned. "What...?"

Thousand Rain Emperor was also stupefied. "Blade River Emperor, he—"

But he couldn't even finish his sentence. To their surprise, Blade River Emperor's energy suddenly burst. Previously, the two opponents had been equally matched. But now, Blade River Emperor's strength seemed to surge, suppressing Cha Man Emperor immediately.

******

In the air.

With his gaze burning crazily, Luo Feng maximized his willpower in an instant. "You shall lose," he said.

Boom!

With a rumbling sound that trembled the surrounding space, the scaled tail of the giant Beast God pushed through time and space like a steamroller. The thrashing of the scaled tail was terrifyingly fast and ferocious.

Bang!

Roaring, the human-shaped Beast God of Cha Man Emperor resisted the whipping of the scaled tail with his two claws.

Bang!

He was beaten so hard that his godly body deteriorated rapidly.

"Admit your defeat!" demanded Luo Feng.

Gaining momentum, Luo Feng attacked Cha Man Emperor repeatedly until the godly body of Cha Man Emperor vanished entirely. Luo Feng had won!

Standing in midair, Luo Feng gazed at the dumbfounded Thousand Rain Emperor and Li Li Emperor in the distance. In astonishment, he muttered to himself, "I can't believe that I am pushed to this extent to exert my own pinnacle techniques. Compared to them, I still have the advantage of the Beast God conception!"

While other heirs were arousing their pinnacle techniques using law comprehension, Luo Feng stimulated his by Beast God conception. In terms of the comprehension of the combination law, Luo Feng belonged to the intermediate level of the third stage, but his Beast God conception had already surpassed the third stage, reaching the threshold of the fourth stage! After all, Luo Feng's current Beast God conception was incredibly close to the 21st level of Heavenly Bridge.

Therefore, Luo Feng had great advantages with his Beast God conception! Besides, Luo Feng's spiritual force amplification was also very strong and couldn't be considered a shortcoming.

Still, Luo Feng couldn't help but sigh. At the beginning of the battle, before his willpower broke out completely, he had been at a slight disadvantage. In the end, his willpower—which was more incredible than most universe knights—had burst. If he were just a fighter, the benefits of strong willpower wouldn't have been

obvious, but things were different for a spirit reader.

Willpower was the commander in chief. Consciousness was the general. And spirit force was the soldier.

The might of Luo Feng's willpower made his ability to control his spiritual weapon upgrade two levels, turning his unfavorable position into complete suppression over Cha Man Emperor.

Cha Man Emperor flew over, looking at Luo Feng incredulously. "I have lost. Blade River, how did you...?"

"I admit defeat, too," said Li Li Emperor. "There's no need to compete." Li Li Emperor sighed, shaking his head. "Blade River, you truly live up to your fame. We are convinced by your treasures as well as your strength..."

They both felt rather bitter. As low-profile as they were, they were quite confident in their strengths, for they ranked on the middle-upper level in the land of inheritance, a place with numerous talents. It was obviously very difficult to improve once they had reached certain levels. In the aspects of willpower, consciousness, secret techniques, and godly force amplification, they had nearly achieved perfection.

Yet they had still lost. Luo Feng had won in a landslide.

It was only through the simultaneous outburst of two absolute advantages—my willpower and my Beast God conception—that I could overwhelm Cha Man Emperor, Luo Feng thought to himself.

******

On the distant Bauhinia Island, the core land of the Ancestral God School, the heirs who had sent Luo Feng invitations to fight were discussing this matter in small groups. They soon received their replies.

"Blade River Emperor is just a sector lord, after all," said one heir. "In the virtual world, he must abandon every treasure he owns in the real world and rely on his actual strength to fight. Humph. Zhu

Chong Emperor also yielded before, didn't he?"

"It is estimated that hundreds of thousands of challenges to fight have been sent to him," replied another.

"How many does he dare accept?"

"Haha..."

"Well—he has accepted mine."

"What? He accepted? Lucky you. Perhaps he chooses the weakest ones to battle. Haha. But alas! He has also accepted mine."

"I have also gotten his response. He has agreed to fight."

On the open-air square of the World of Glory, numerous strong beings of other races were flipping through their black books. Every one of them had received replies accepting their challenges!

"My challenge has been accepted," they said to one another.

"So has mine."

"Blade River Emperor has agreed to battle!"

Soon, frantic discussions were heard in every corner of the open-air square. The heirs of hundreds of millions of races of the universe were left in great astonishment.

"How many challenges has Blade River Emperor accepted? Probably tens of thousands!"

Chapter 957: 620,000 Battles???

Numerous colorful aurora surrounded Bauhinia Island, and the halos, displaying the mysteries of universe law, constantly diffused up in the sky.

Bauhinia Island was home to palaces of diverse races. In one of the palaces were plenty sculptures of ancient swords. Suddenly, the gate to this palace opened. Out walked out a figure. With eyes as sharp as blades and a mark of seven battle swords between his eyebrows, this man, dressed in purple armor, looked like a battle sword himself.

Shouted two chimpanzee-liked beings from another race shouted at the figure from afar.

"Seven Blade Emperor! Blade River Emperor from the human race is quite something."

"Seven Blade Emperor, did you invite him to fight?"

Seven Blade Emperor had gained a treasure from the Land of Valuables and as a result had become moderately famous on Bauhinia Island. Furthermore, the treasure had been found at a spot reserved by a super being of the Ancestral God School for its inheritors! Mediocre as Seven Blade Emperor might have been in the battles in the World of Glory, he could be very intimidating with his "Seven Blade Inheritance," "beast god great being inheritance," and formidable ability to survive in the real world. His good luck even invoked jealousy from numerous great beings among the human race.

Thanks to the Seven Blade Inheritance, Seven Blade Emperor and Dream Fire Emperor had become two undying-level talents of their generations to be trained intensively by the human race.

The "beast god great being inheritance" had made Seven Blade Emperor's status surpass that of Dream Fire Emperor among the

human race. However, many races had no idea what the treasure was, since Seven Blade Emperor had kept the secret to himself. Even the automaton race, a peak race, only knew that he had gained some sort of inheritance.

The Land of Valuables had numerous treasures left by the beast gods of the Ancestral God School, including school-guarding beast gods and beast-god cultivating great beings.

As for what the treasure was, it was difficult to tell. The treasure was not necessarily related to the beast god path. For example, if Luo Feng reached a high status in the future, he could also put some of the treasures he had acquired by chance—and didn't use—in the Land of Valuables for future generations.

Therefore, apart from Seven Blade Emperor and the senior staff of the human race at the Ancestral God School, none of the other factions knew the extent of how amazing Seven Blade Emperor's actual gains would be. Otherwise, no one would have tried to assassinate him.

Seven Blade Emperor laughed with blade-light flashing in his eyes. "Haha! He is also a human. Now that so many great beings of other races have challenged him, why would I invite him to fight? By the way, do you know how many challenges Blade River Emperor has accepted?"

"If you don't know, what makes you think we would? All we know is the number is over 10,000."

Then the two chimp-like beings each took a step greater than 600 miles and disappeared in the distance.

Standing in front of the palace, Seven Blade Emperor murmured to himself, "Over 10,000 battles? Blade River Emperor, the most incredible talent of the human race? I will never admit defeat to Blade River Emperor so easily."

Having acquired his new treasure, Seven Blade Emperor believed

that he had outclassed Dream Fire Emperor, thus becoming the best of his generation among humans. But now, Blade River Emperor was in his way.

"During the fight for Sealed Star in the battlefield of the outer regions, you were so insignificant that I barely noticed you," said Seven Blade Emperor. "What a surprise that you are a sector lord. I know that you are madly accepting challenges to fight. For the first time, you have my full attention. I want to see your strength, for you are such a talent of the human race that even my teacher believes you are better than me... I don't know if you are overly confident or just insane to agree to engage in over 10,000 battles. Soon, you will realize that all the heirs here are peerless talents. Even I am only considered mediocre in the World of Glory. You will soon come around to this cruel reality."

******

In the heartland of the Ancestral God School.

The Thunder Beast God Palace was one of the eight palaces for beast gods. The palace was magnificent in appearance, standing taller than 60 million miles. Inside the palace was a time-space containing picturesque scenery including rivers, mountains, deserts, ice fields, and snow.

Deep inside those endless ranges of mountains, a repetitive sound erupted like breathing.

Ha! Hoo!

Ha! Hoo!

The diameter of the time-space exceeded a light year, and every "ha" filled it with pounding thunderbolts. And every "hoo" filled it with roaring winds, destroying numerous mountains, drying up lakes and rivers, and swirling up sand from the deserts. Luckily, there were no other creatures in the whole time-space.

"Who dares interrupt my slumber?" echoed a rumbling voice.

Several peaks of those endless mountains were pushed upward. A gigantic, winged, three-hoofed beast god covered in green hair longer than 50,000 miles, stood up. With every step it took, the earth shook and mountains collapsed.

"Why does the Ancestral God make me manage the trivialities of the school?" it growled. "The other seven beast gods have slacked off and gone elsewhere while I am the only one who has had to stay here for 100 million eras. Alas! How long have I slept? Only 30 million eras. I can leave only after staying for 70 million more eras."

The time-space trembled as the hairy, giant beast god stepped forward.

"Come on in!" Thunder Beast God finally spoke up.

The time-space of the beast god palace opened, and the god-general that had been waiting outside entered the palace.

"Greetings, beast god," said a voice. "I am Blood Fire God-General."

Blood Fire God-General flew across the sky and landed on the peak of a mountain, looking at the beast god—which was much bigger than mountains—from afar.

"I told you not to disturb my sleep unless there was something truly important," said Thunder Beast God, and the airflow that spurted from his nostrils wiped out the surrounding mountains. In the sky, more thunderbolts generated out of nowhere, as if expressing the fury of Thunder Beast God.

Blood Fire God-General saluted the Thunder Beast God and said, "Beast God, this is an important matter."

The operating system of Ancestral God School left the Blood Fire God-General with no choice but to solve many problems himself. The beast gods were so lazy that they didn't even bother to connect their consciousnesses to the World of Glory. Apparently, sharing

their consciousnesses irritated the beast gods.

"Speak," Thunder Beast God demanded, looking down on the tiny Blood Fire God-General.

Having inherited the position of a god-general, Blood Fire God-General wielded strength that could rival common universe masters. As for Thunder Beast God, once it had inherited the supreme status of a beast god, its strength would become even greater.

"We have found a universe talent worthy of being trained by Ancestral God School," said Blood Fire God-General.

"A universe talent? You woke me up just for this?" Thunderbolts flashed in Thunder Beast God's eyes.

"He is only a sector lord, yet he can attack and kill an emperor limit," said Blood Fire God-General.

"Hmm?" said Thunder Beast God. "A powerful special organism?"

Thunder Beast God's eyes lit up. The Ancestral God School needed to cultivate great beings as well. For example, great emphasis was put on Zhu Chong Emperor for his cultivation. Once the Ancestral God School appreciated the great beings, things would turn out differently for them. But the issue was, the Ancestral God School was extremely picky. It didn't even care about the so-called peerless talents of the universe like Ke Di.

"No, he is a human," said Blood Fire God-General, "but he was capable of killing an emperor limit even during his sector lord period—even hitting and killing from the front."

Since he took the place of beast gods in managing Ancestral God School, Blood Fire God-General had extensive secret knowledge. When it came to the law of how the universe worked, the Ancestral God School undoubtedly held the most profound understanding.

"Kill from the front? This is against the law of the universe," said Thunder Beast God in a rumbling voice.

With some extremely powerful treasures, it would be possible for a sector lord to kill emperors at the limit level by waging sneak attacks. But from the front? Great beings of emperor limit level would defeat sector lords easily with their soul attacks and godly force attacks.

"According to the intelligence from the Ancestral God School, when he was in Ice Hell, he could conceal his breathing with an invaluable treasure, thus enabling him to fight with emperor limit," continued Blood Fire God-General. "And he could withstand soul attacks and substance attacks. His strength can even kill emperors at the limit level."

"Hmm." There was light in Thunder Beast God's enormous eyes. "He has received special treatment, enabling him to violate the laws of the universe in some respects without being suppressed by the law!"

Thunder Beast God knew very well what this meant.

The universe was fair; strength-enhancing armor such as general armor and king armor placed a great burden on one's body. For instance, only a body that was 10,000 times stronger than a sector lord force could put on the king armor. Even the golden-horned beast could only wear it after cultivating the Nine Volume Manual. Hence, without the incredible Nine Volume Manual, it would be impossible to use general armor, king armor, general soul, and the like.

Without these items, Luo Feng, as a sector lord, was just a common peerless talent who could, at best, rival Ke Di but couldn't kill an emperor limit.

"Violating the universe operation law without being suppressed by it?" said Thunder Beast God in a rumbling voice. "From now on, I will pay close attention to him."

"Thunder Beast God," said Blood Fire God-General. "Because he has killed emperors at the limit level as a sector lord, he enjoys

great fame in the universe. But he is a human, after all. What he has achieved is quite stunning, though no other factions understand the implications yet—except the Ancestral God School. Ever since he arrived in Land of Inheritance, many heirs have invited him to fight. Just now, this human accepted all the challenges."

"All of them?" Thunder Beast God was stupefied.

"Yes. All of them. Over 620,000 battles."

"620,000 battles?" said Thunder Beast God. "What's his name?"

"Blade River Emperor!" said Blood Fire God-General. "Apparently, his real name is Luo Feng."

"Let's wait and observe the outcomes of these 620,000 battles, said Thunder Beast God. "His opponents are peerless talents from all over the universe. I want to know how far this human being, who has run against the universe operation rule, can go."

******

In the battle world of the World of Glory, in the endless desert.

Luo Feng was dressed in black armor and a pair of black battle boots and a pair of wings with scales. Wings were the most convenient way for Luo Feng to fly and dodge.

"Though I have not become immortal, I have felt the powerful godly body that is 100,000 times stronger than the force of a sector lord," said Luo Feng, looking at a shadow in the distance.

A silver-gray snake-shaped monster was gradually rising from the desert. Its triangular-shaped head was high while its gigantic godly body appeared indistinct beneath the desert surface.

With a trace of a smile on his face, Luo Feng said, "The first of my 620,000 battles."

Chapter 958: Win! Win! Win!

The silver-gray, snake-shaped monster slowly arose from the desert. With its triangular head high, it stared coldly at Luo Feng from afar and squeaked in a voice millions of times jarring than scraping glass.

"Blade River Emperor!" it hissed. "How many glory points do you have? Do you dare to bet with me?" Like a shockwave, the voice stirred up vast quantities of sand.

"You should feel honored to be my first opponent in the World of Glory," Luo Feng said, smiling amid the swirling sand.

The silver-gray, snake-shaped creature glowered at Luo Feng. "Your first one? Haha! A pleasure for me, indeed. Three glory points. Do you dare?"

"I will choose one glory point to fight each of my rivals," said Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was daring, but he wasn't stupid. Judging by his fight against Cha Man Emperor, he estimated that he could become one of the best among the third stage inheritors with his beast god conception and mighty willpower. However, if he wagered high stakes and lost all of his glory points right at the beginning, he wouldn't be able to battle with other rivals.

After all, he had accepted over 620,000 battles; betting one glory point for each battle was surely enough.

"One point? Ha! What I want is to win and acquire all your glory points so that the inheritors of other races can't battle against you," said the snake complacently. "By then, all of Bauhinia Island will know that Blade River Emperor was defeated by me, King Serkaphinse."

Luo Feng chuckled. "Cut the nonsense. You're just my warm-up. Let's fight."

"Damn!"

With a jarring squeak, a stream of formidable current surged toward the sky, making the whole desert tremble.

"Very good," commented Luo Feng.

Boom!

With his eyes lit up, Luo Feng also augmented his breathing sharply and burned his undying godly body. Meanwhile, as his scaled wings fluttered, he turned into a beam of light and flew upward. As he flung his left hand fiercely, 600 golden beads flew across the sky. Simulated within the battle world of the World of Glory, the 600 golden beads were made from common materials that pinnacle-emperor-level spirit readers used for forging weapons.

As the beast god roared and King Serkaphinse screeched, the battle began.

Only seconds later, after a few dozen moves, the godly body of King Serkaphinse was annihilated.

"No...!" King Serkaphinse wailed.

Its cold, snake-like eyes were fraught with fury. It refused to recognize that it had lost to a sector lord, especially under the conditions that they both fought in godly bodies. And then, its figure blurred until it vanished. Obviously, it had been kicked out of the battle world. Luo Feng had moved on to his second battle.

During the interval between the two battles, Luo Feng looked at his black book. Indeed, one glory point had been added.

"Four glory points," he said. "The first rival that I chose just now ranked medium on the list of third-stage inheritors. Well, its strength was weaker than that of Cha Man Emperor."

Without being pushed to his limit, Luo Feng had defeated his opponent.

He still stood in the desert. Looking at his second rival in the distance, Luo Feng grinned. "Here comes another one to give me their glory points."

****

The battles continued.

The open-air square of the World of Glory had turned into a state of commotion. At the moment, at least 100 million heirs, including Seven Blade Emperor, were connected to the World of Glory, for they had received word that Blade River Emperor had commenced taking on his challengers nonstop.

"What?" one onlooker said to a defeated challenger. "You lost to that Blade River Emperor? A sector lord? He has no treasures to turn to in the battle world, and you still lost?"

"Haha! So useless to lose!" another added. "I hope Blade River Emperor doesn't lose all his glory points too soon. Watch me when it is my turn to fight him."

In the beginning, the three great beings who lost one after another became objects of ridicule within their respective factions. Although the rest of the heirs sneered, they also put their guards up because they knew the strengths of their partners.

Since the open-air square was large enough for nearly 100 million inheritors to gather there—forming smaller groups of hundreds of or thousands of heirs—the news that three heirs had lost consecutively spread quickly within their factions. But Luo Feng was fighting very quickly. Because his godly body fully recovered after each fight, he didn't need to rest at all.

Before long, he had fought 1,000 battles in succession!

After about eleven hours, Luo Feng paused his fighting and decided to take a break.

It took me about eleven hours to fight 1,000 battles, thought Luo Feng. Well, the actual time consumed by each battle averaged less

than 10 seconds. It was the launch of every fight in the battle world and the conversations with my rivals that wasted so much time.

Usually, Luo Feng didn't bother to speak too much except for some trash talk such as, "Give me your glory points!" or, "Die!" or, "Don't keep me waiting!"

******

Bauhinia Island. In front of Luo Feng's mansion.

"Blade River," said a voice from outside.

"Blade River!" said another.

After 1,000 battles, Luo Feng had left World of Glory temporally. He was about to rest when he heard his name called twice. He knew the voices belonged to Thousand Rain Emperor and Cha Man Emperor.

As Luo Feng took a step, he disappeared from the attic and arrived at the gate to his mansion, opening the door in person. It was Cha Man Emperor, Thousand Rain Emperor, and another human heir standing outside the door.

"Seven Blade Emperor?" Luo Feng said in shock.

Dumbfounded, Luo Feng looked at this great being of the human race who had come to visit him. He had met Seven Blade Emperor in the Star Tower before.

For the first time, the Seven Blade Emperor attentively observed Blade River Emperor, the mysterious fighter who had stunned the universe. At first glance, Blade River Emperor was very common. But if anyone paid attention to Blade River Emperor's eyes, they would have felt the formidable strength harbored in his heart. The strength was the confidence brought by mighty willpower, indicating that Luo Feng was extremely self-assured. After Sky Wolf had revealed his identity, Luo Feng had felt relieved, and he had stopped hiding. Instead, he had become more fearless, ready to confront any obstacle.

True gold feared no fire! And a blade became sharper after refining!

"Seven Blade Emperor, we meet a second time," Luo Feng said, with a trace of a smile at the corner of his mouth.

"Blade River Emperor, "Seven Blade Emperor said with a smile. "I didn't notice you last time because I only cared about the Sealed Star. Now, here I am to meet the legendary Blade River Emperor. I wonder if my visit is welcomed."

"Of course." Luo Feng smiled and moved aside. "Please come in, my three guests."

"Haha! I told you that Blade River Emperor is a very amiable friend," said Thousand Rain Emperor with a smile.

Cha Man Emperor, meanwhile, kept his cool.

Soon, the four of them entered the mansion together and arrived at the reception hall, where the garden style was that of Jiang Nan, China, Luo Feng's hometown. There were only old-fashioned wooden armchairs and a tea table in the reception hall. Luo Feng sat in the center. Though Seven Blade Emperor, Thousand Rain Emperor and Cha Man Emperor were confused about the layout, they noticed the three chairs alongside the table and sat down casually.

"Blade River," said Cha Man Emperor. "How many battles have you accepted?"

"I have accepted every challenge issued to me," said Luo Feng.

Seven Blade Emperor and Thousand Rain Emperor were slightly startled.

"How many is that?" asked Thousand Rain Emperor. "Moments after you entered the open-air square of the World of Glory, you had received tens of thousands of challenges. The number must have climbed up afterward. Besides, by consulting other factions, the great beings of various races in the World of Glory have

estimated that you must have accepted over 100,000 battles. It's hard to count the accurate number because there are too many camps, but the number should be clear in a few days."

Luo Feng smiled and said, "That's right. I didn't receive too many challenges when I was new to World of Glory, but the number snowballed later. In total, I have accepted over 620,000 challenges. Considering that there are over 90 million third-stage inheritors, the fact that less than 1 percent challenged me isn't surprising."

"6—620...?" Cha Man Emperor stammered in astonishment. "620,000?"

Thousand Rain Emperor's jaw dropped.

Even Seven Blade Emperor was speechless for an instant. The number was horrifying. Everyone knew Cha Man Emperor had been here a long time, and he had accepted less than 1,000 challenges in all. When it came to fighting, the human race had to be extremely careful, because humans had already made plenty of enemies among the other races in the universe.

"You can kill emperors at the limit level as a sector lord," Cha Man Emperor sighed, shaking his head. "You are so famous that it is believed that you are to be an unforgettable peerless talent. That is why those confident heirs of other races, no matter how cautious they are, want to fight you. Since the base number of total inheritors is over 90 million, it is to be expected that over 620,000 of them challenged you."

"We are here to congratulate you on your 989 victories during your 1,000 battles today," Thousand Rain Emperor said, laughing.

"Congratulations," said Cha Man Emperor.

"Earning over 900 glory points in one day," sighed the Seven Blade Emperor. "That's sufficient to exchange for nine inheritance opportunities. How I envy you. And this is only the first day of your battles."

Luo Feng grinned but said to himself, "I still lost 11 times."

Although his strength was at the peak, it didn't mean that he was the best of the third-stage inheritors! Among the 1,000 rivals Luo Feng had selected on his first day, there were stronger and weaker ones, but one should have known the different fighting styles or secret techniques that could restrain them. Usually, it was the great beings with confidence who would challenge Luo Feng, and almost every great being on the top level on Bauhinia Island had invited Luo Feng to fight. And Luo Feng had accepted every challenge.

Luo Feng's heart was filled with pride. "I don't care about losing a few glory points," he said. "After combating against so many heirs of other races, the losses are worthwhile."

******

The second day, Luo Feng continued fighting.

By reading their black books, the heirs of other races could see Luo Feng's battle records. On the ranking list of third-stage heirs, the numbers of wins and losses were clearly listed.

That day, Luo Feng fought another 1,000 battles. He did so again on the third day. 1,000 battles every day. Then Luo Feng would take a break after fighting and continue likewise the next day!

He kept fighting in this way, and thanks to his extremely high winning rates, Luo Feng's glory points skyrocketed, stunning numerous heirs of other races. Soon, it had been proven that Blade River Emperor was one of the best of all 90 million third-stage inheritors. As a result, many heirs who had wished to humiliate Blade River Emperor started to deeply regret their decision to challenge him. Unfortunately for them, they couldn't withdraw now that Luo Feng had accepted their challenges. Even if someone chose not to fight, one glory point would be deduced automatically.

Chapter 959: Astonishing the Universe

On the open-air square of the World of Glory, millions of heirs flipped through their black books frequently, viewing Luo Feng's combat records within the ranking of third-stage heirs. Today was the third day since Luo Feng commenced accepting his challenges. He had fought 2,700 battles. "2,682 wins, 18 losses" was his latest record.

"Why is this Blade River Emperor so powerful?" asked one challenger. "It seems I am going to lose one of my glory points. I have always been very cautious when it comes to inviting others to fight in the battle world. I never choose anyone who ranks higher than me. I have tried my best to choose the weaker ones or someone on essentially the same level as me, at best. Thanks to my caution, I have collected 51 glory points till this day. Now, I'm going to lose a point just like that? At this speed, the Blade River Emperor must have collected plenty of glory points."

"You don't say," said a great, sea-monster-looking being with dozens of tentacles. He seemed rather bitter. "I think I am going to lose my glory point to Luo Feng as well. Who would have known that this human was so strong? Alas!"

"The hundreds of thousands of inheritors that have challenged him to fight shall suffer great losses."

"Although I didn't challenge him, I could understand everyone's thinking," offered another. "How pleasant it would be to humiliate the legendary Blade River Emperor, who is such a powerful sector lord, even without any external assistance. He is absolute..."

Almost every conversation in the open-air square was about Blade River Emperor. The inheritors were incredibly irritated. Even as the heirs spoke, Luo Feng's winning rates went up sharply.

2,779 wins, 19 losses.

2,789 wins, 19 losses.

2,811 wins, 19 losses.

2,889 wins, 19 losses.

The heirs, who had to fight so hard to gain one glory point, now felt rather embarrassed. If the Blade River Emperor had shown his strength in the world of battle from the beginning, never would so many heirs have sacrificed their glory points to challenge him.

The heirs treasured their glory points dearly, but regret was futile.

"Perhaps Blade River Emperor is just an outlier," said one heir, sighing deeply. "It's unusual to collect glory points in such a great amount."

How could one ever hope to be like Luo Feng? Firstly, they would have to be famous among the billions of races in the universe. Few great beings had enjoyed fame to this extent. Secondly, they would have to be sector lords. Otherwise, the heirs of other races would not challenge them so readily. The heirs were not stupid; only when facing sector-lord-level heirs would these peerless talents believe they could win.

In the history of the Ancestral God School, Luo Feng was not the only sector lord who had arrived at the Land of Inheritance, but few sector lords had done this. Among these few sector lords, two were very famous, but neither had willpower as strong as Luo Feng's.

After these battles, Luo Feng's strength had convinced numerous heirs on Bauhinia Island. Without any external assistance, Luo Feng, as a sector lord, was able to stand on the peak of the third-stage fighters during combats in the battle world!

******

Some superpowers of the universe had noticed Luo Feng long ago. Once a large number of challenges began, many heirs sent the

information back to their clans.

In front of the magnificent Sky Wolf Palace, roaring sounds trembled the entire area, which was filled with flames as large as fixed stars.

"Kill! Kill! Kill!"

The Master of Sky Wolf's eyes were fraught with malice. "The human, Blade River Emperor, must not live!"

Lurking among the void before Sky Wolf Palace, the giant snake shadow was alarmed by Master of Sky Wolf's rage.

"His law comprehension is surprisingly strong to rank as one of the best among the third-stage heirs," Master of Sky Wolf roared. "He can compare himself with innumerable peerless talents of diverse races! He must be about to fulfill the third stage of beast god inheritance. And as far as law comprehension, he is also close to that of universe knights."

"As long as he wants to, he can become an undying fighter at any time," continued Master of Sky Wolf. "Once he has become undying, coupled with his plentiful glory points, his alarming amount of inheritance opportunities from the Ancestral God School—plus with his comprehension, which is very close to that of universe knights—it would be a simple matter for him to become a universe knight! Then it will be difficult to have him killed."

Master of Sky Wolf issued an order. "Hurry up. Devise a plan and report it to me. We must kill this human quickly."

"Right," the giant snake shadow bowed and said respectfully.

Suddenly, Master of Sky Wolf's green eyes shot out two green rays, landing on the giant snake shadow. "Go," he said.

Boom.

Removed from this time-space, the giant snake shadow arrived at

a time-space beyond Sky Wolf Palace's control. Then it teleported and vanished.

"Human..." grumbled Master of Sky Wolf as he stood before the palace. His green eyes were constantly flickering with the intention to kill. Among the universe masters of the demon clans, Master of Sky Wolf was surely one of the most cunning and cruel.

"When I saw Blade River Emperor before, I didn't take him seriously because he was just an insignificant sector lord. Unexpectedly, he can still defeat most of the heirs in the battle world, even without the help of many treasures from the outside world! His law comprehension is amazingly insightful! If he is assisted by a large number of inheritance opportunities..."

Master of Sky Wolf now deemed Blade River Emperor a major threat to demons in the future.

******

In the mysterious and desolate Star Domain.

In the void, a black ripple expanded outwards in concentric circles. At the core of the black ripple was an enormous black throne standing tens of thousands of miles tall. At the top of the back of the throne, 18 golden skulls of various races were embedded.

The black throne was at the core of the endless black ripple that covered billions of miles of the void. Anyone looking upon this throne might have mistaken it for an endless sea of blood, with its 18 embedded golden skulls howling at all times.

"Master."

A great being with nine scorpion tails lay on the verge of the ripple. Its voice penetrated the ripple.

"Here is the news from our clan's heirs in the Ancestral God School. The human, Blade River Emperor, has agreed to engage in hundreds of thousands of fights. Currently, he has only lost 19 out

of 2,781 battles. He is, without a doubt, the best of the best emperor-undying-level inheritors on Bauhinia Island. And it is predicted that he will be able to exchange his points for a surprising amount of inheritance opportunities. It is highly possible that he will become a universe knight in the future."

"Haha..."

Soul-penetrating laughter was heard from the black throne, causing the previously calm time-space to tremble and stirring up a black wave, as if innumerable black dragons were chasing one another and wandering in the void.

"A peerless talent has emerged from the human race," said the voice, "and he is about to become a peerless great being. It is not us, the prison clan, but the human race's neighbors—the automaton race, demon race and bug clan—who are most anxious about this situation. Haha! Just wait and see. The assassination attempts targeting this human peerless talent are about to begin. I look forward to seeing whether this human will become a peerless great being after the brutal obstacles... or fail miserably along the way. Haha! Go. Go."

The laughter from the black throne echoed in the time-space. At the end of the black wave, the great being with nine scorpion tails bowed and vanished.

The creatures of the "prison race," one of the six pinnacle races, had their roots in a peculiarly dangerous place of the universe, but they had survived the perilous place and made a name for themselves. The physiques, appearances, and the life essences of these prison race great beings varied; some were rock creatures while others were made of flesh and blood. But they shared one thing in common. They were all born in that peculiarly dangerous place. A place that they called "Prison," from which they took their name.

******

Forged by numerous crystals, a cluster of magnificent palaces covered a region in several light years. Within the cluster of crystal palaces, planets, fixed stars, and neutron stars were like ornaments embedded everywhere.

A high tower among the palaces stood 3.2 light years tall. Its razor-sharp spire shot a bright ray upward into the depths of the boundless, starry sky. Everywhere this ray traveled, a hole would be pierced on any planet or fixed star. The power of this ray could reach almost the entire starfield before it completely declined.

Many great beings resided within the cluster of palaces. In front of the tower, two universe knights stood guard. They had impeccable appearances and perfect bodies forged by crystals. Their heights were almost the same, and they both wore dark-green ancient armor that emitted formidable force. Between their eyebrows, they both had a golden eye issuing invisible waves in all directions and supervising the vast areas around the high tower.

Inside the tower.

"My lord, that is how the situation is," a great being said, kneeling in the hall.

Above the hall stood a great being with a gleaming, crystal-cast godly body, dressed in a resplendent golden robe. As the golden eye between his eyebrows gazed below, it seemed that the heart of the universe knight below was pierced through.

"How interesting," said the great being, and though the voice was gentle, it possessed a persuasive power. "The human race usually wins due to their large population, and every human possesses tremendous potential. How unexpected that such a talent has emerged among them. Issue my order that the human, Blade River Emperor, has been listed as an 'invincible' level creature of another race."

"Yes, my lord."

******

Powerhouses of the universe including as the six pinnacle races, the space beast alliances, and the northern border alliances had all received the news.

At the summit of Thunder Island in the virtual universe was the Palace of Primal Chaos Energy. A blurry phantom stood before the palace. And then, he walked into the center of the hall and said respectfully, "Primal Chaos City Leader, assassination attempts against Luo Feng are almost a certainty. How should we handle this operation? Please give us your instructions."

"Assassinations?" said the voice of the Primal Chaos City Leader. "Shadow, how can you be so sure?"

Startled, the blurry phantom said, "Blade River Emperor has agreed to fight over 620,000 battles. And don't you know about the results of his latest 3,000 battles? I sent you messages long ago."

"Luo Feng has accepted 620,000 battles?"

The figure dressed in golden globe walked out from the Primal Chaos Energy. It was the Primal Chaos City Leader. As he touched the void slightly, three messages fell one by one. Obviously, he had read none of the messages the Shadow Emperor had sent him.

Chapter 960: Kill Him!

Primal Chaos City Leader had an extremely high status both within the human race and the Hong Alliance, so lots of issues would go to the city leader directly through virtual messages. However, there were different classifications of mail, and the leader would only read the urgent mail. Under ordinary circumstances, the leader would read them when he was free.

Shadow Emperor was in charge of the intelligence department of the virtual universe company and the Hong Alliance. He was one of the universe overlords. The news of Luo Feng, as in Blade River Emperor, was known by the seniors of the human race. Shadow Emperor, of course, also knew about it.

"What?" Primal Chaos City Leader said in surprise, holding the messages. "He won 2,979 times out of 3,000 battles?"

"Yes, Primal Chaos City Leader," Shadow Emperor said with veneration.

"I didn't expect him to achieve that." Primal Chaos City Leader was indeed thrilled. The top ones out of the 90 million heirs were all equals. Luo Feng could either win or lose when he was fighting his rivals.

"Luo Feng has a bright future ahead of him." Shadow Emperor, who was in charge of Hong Alliance intelligence department and known for his indifference and eerie presence, smiled.

"Haha... More than 26,000 battles!" The Primal Chaos City Leader laughed, and his voice echoed in the palace. "If he keeps the winning rate, god knows how many glory points he will earn. He can trade 100 glory points for one inheritance, and he can get numerous inheritances. The Ancestral God School might cultivate a supreme being of our human race this time."

No one doubted that even the demon race, prison race, and other

superpowers in the universe thought that if nobody stopped Blade River Emperor, he would grow to be a supreme being of the human race! A terrifying creature! Nobody could tell how long that would take. That was why they needed to kill him before he reached that stage.

"Primal Chaos City Leader, not only could Luo Feng earn a great many inheritances with such a winning rate, but he also shows how deep his comprehension of laws is," Shadow Emperor said with a slight bow. "The bug race, the demon race, and the automaton race will no doubt try to assassinate him in the near future—before Luo Feng can become a universe knight. City Leader, what should we do about it?"

"Assassinate him?" Primal Chaos City Leader nodded and said, "The demon race, the bug race, and the automaton race have all sorts of methods to do that. However, my disciple is now in the Ancestral God School, and they can do virtually nothing about it. The only feasible way for them is to ask the powerful heirs to kill Luo Feng."

"Yes." Shadow Emperor nodded.

The Ancestral God School could not be infiltrated. Peak races like the demon race would rather Luo Feng became a supreme being than risk sending someone to trespass there.

"I'll deal with it," the Primal Chaos City Leader said. "And have some faith in my disciple."

"I'll leave now." Shadow Emperor bowed.

"Go." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded.

Shadow Emperor had become the person in charge of the intelligence department of the Hong Alliance because he was from the virtual universe company. The virtual universe's terrific efficiency of information sharing attracted the other races in the universe to place spies within it and classified communications

methods, even though they were often cracked and cost the other races dearly.

That was why he had become the person in charge of the intelligence department of the Hong Alliance so quickly after being in charge of the intelligence department of the virtual universe. His power was so enormous that it could rival the some of the palace leaders within the Hong Alliance.

******

The bug race, the demon race, and the automaton race had stopped observing. The bug race had already come up with a plan to commit the assassination of Luo Feng.

Inside the virtual universe of the bug race.

Surrounded the endless clouds and mist was a beautiful floating island. There lived one bug clan queen after another, all of them with beautiful wings resembling butterflies and transparent bodies like crystals. As they played, their figures were so breathtaking that other creatures could not help but want to protect them.

"Look, it's one of the other races," said one of the queens.

"It's Kong Wan clan from our bug race alliance," said another.

The bug clan queens looked at a figure with prominent cuticles wearing a mask. Dressed in ancient black armor, the powerful warrior from the Kong Wan clan arrived at the center of the island in no time. On the island stood a palace made of wood.

The door opened, and the masked warrior of the Kong Wan clan walked in without being stopped by the guards.

"Greetings, universe master, from Jue Guang of Kong Wan clan," said the masked figure with a bow.

On the wooden throne in the palace sat a beautiful creature that could mesmerize even the most powerful souls. A colorful mist surrounded her.

"Jue Guang Knight," she said. Her voice was clear and melodious. "Do you know what I want you to do for me?"

"I do," Jue Guang Knight answered with veneration.

"Do you have anything to say?" the one sitting on the throne asked.

"Universe master chose me because, firstly, I'm an heir," Jue Guang Knight said. "Secondly, I've decided to give up on the beast god path because I didn't make enough improvements, and I'm planning to follow the path of space and time. Thirdly, I have my alternative bodies. And finally, as one of the Kong Wan clan, I'm proficient in mind control. It'll be most cost effective for me to assassinate Blade River Emperor."

"Yes, you are indeed the most suitable one out of everyone in bug race alliance," said the creature on the throne. "However, you shall pay a huge price. Losing one of the bodies of a universe knight will cost you dearly. Besides, you'll lose the opportunity to inherit and step into the Ancestral God School forever."

Jue Guang Knight stood still, listening respectfully.

"The alliance will compensate you for everything you'll lose," the beautiful creature said. "Do you have any idea how you will assassinate him?"

"Based on what I know, Blade River Emperor has been accepting challenges, and he stays in his palace the rest of the time," Jue Guang Knight said. "An heir has absolute control over its own palace. If anyone dares to trespass, the five-color aurora lake will attack the trespasser and kill it instantly. I can only wait for the human to step out."

"Will you lure him out?" asked the creature on the throne.

"The most tedious way—but also the best way—is simply to wait for the human to step out," Jue Guang Knight said respectfully.

The beautiful creature looked down at Jue Guang Knight and

smiled. "You are calm. However, I have to remind you that you had better utilize mind control over Blade River Emperor. Once you take his mind, the humans might turn back time and resurrect him. Of course, you can also choose to kill him directly if you can't control his mind."

"Yes," Jue Guang Knight answered respectfully.

******

Bauhinia Island.

Jue Guang Knight walked slowly while all the other heirs tried to keep their distance from him, showing respect for a universe knight, who demanded deference. Jue Guang Knight was pleased by this. However, he frowned when he saw the distant palace resembling Earth's Jiang Nan.

"I'm a universe knight here," he said. "However, to creatures in my clan and the bug race alliance, I'm nothing compared to that human. The only way to kill Blade River Emperor is to allow myself to be killed by the five-color aurora lake. The most terrifying proposition is to then be confined to living a secret life ever after, or being confined only to the territory of bug race; otherwise, the human race will kill me to revenge their peerless talent... Pathetic!"

Jue Guang Knight felt helpless and hopeless. Even his clan couldn't resist the order of the bug race, let alone him. Perhaps he was indeed powerful on an individual level, but he was nothing compared to the peak creatures of the universe.

******

Two days later.

The shadowy, snake-like creature stood the peak of a mountain and looked down.

"Sacrifice myself to kill him... Master of Sky Wolf promised to bring me back by reserving the time. However, I will lose the

opportunity to follow the beast god path forever even if I'm resurrected. Also, I'll be hunted until the end of time by the human race."

He could practically still hear the roaring of the Master of Sky Wolf. "Kill him!"

The automaton race, the demon race, and the bug race had all sent their powerful ones. However, they had all sent knights of other races rather than those from their own races. They had to pay the other races rather than be too tyrannical in their demands. That was the price of preserving the alliance.

******

Time passed, and Luo Feng continued to fight 1,000 battles a day, as was his routine.

The demon race, the bug race, and the automaton race all awaiting the good news. They all knew that humans had already perceived that they would try to assassinate Luo Feng. However, they thought that unless Blade River Emperor hid in his palace or was guarded by a universe knight every time he stepped out of his palace, someone would surely make good on the first chance to kill him.

Rumble!

In the world of battle, Luo Feng, clothed in black armor, flew above a city in ruins. He had black wings on his back, and as he waved his hands, 600 golden balls flew back.

After almost two years and more than 620,000 battles, Luo Feng had finally finished them all.

"All the battles are finished," Luo Feng whispered as he looked at the waves of godly power afar.

Chapter 961: Ambush on All Sides

On Bauhinia Island, there were plenty of palaces for the heirs from different races. Several thousand miles away from Luo Feng's mansion, there was an ancient mansion like a massive dead tree, which was the residence for an emperor-level heir from the bug clan. On top of the manor, a universe knight stood silently.

"Orders from the alliance," said the Light Perception Knight to the emperor-level heir. "I am to stay at your palace temporarily, and you must not divulge this information."

"Yes," the heir replied respectfully. "Knight, if you want me to do anything for you, please tell me. I will be in the silent room."

"All right. Off you go." The Light Perception Knight nodded.

After the heir left, the Light Perception Knight was the only one on the top floor. Sitting with his legs crossed, he looked over the railings at the space before Blade River Emperor's mansion in the distance.

"Although the bug clan alliance has nearly 10,000 heirs on Bauhinia Island, only a few dozen of them can see Blade River Emperor's mansion clearly from their dwellings," Light Perception Knight said to himself. "This is the only way to watch over him. Once Blade River Emperor comes out, I can spot him. Today, his battles come to an end. He will probably come out."

Light Perception Knight stared at Luo Feng's mansion. In total, 626,183 heirs had challenged Luo Feng. Only days after Luo Feng commenced his battles, various clans had contacted each other and confirmed that this was the correct number. As Luo Feng fought 1,000 battles every day, today was the day he was scheduled to finish all the battles.

With a bit of his consciousness connecting to the World of Glory, Light Perception Knight looked at Luo Feng's ever-changing battle

records in the black book.

"The last 32 battles," he muttered.

At the thought of Luo Feng's formidable battle records, Light Perception Knight couldn't help but have mixed feelings. The tremendous number of glory points owned by Luo Feng was simply unbelievable, rendering Light Perception Knight envious. Prior to Blade River Emperor, no others had ever gained this many glory points.

"If the rest of the great beings knew that you were so powerful, they wouldn't challenge you unless they were confident enough to win," Light Perception Knight said to himself. "If I could possess these glory points, I might have the chance to become a Universe Overlord."

He checked the book again. "All the battles have concluded." With his eyes lit up, Light Perception Knight stared at Luo Feng's mansion more intensively.

******

Apart from the three knights sent from the automaton clan, the bug clan, and the demon clan, several great beings from other powerhouses were also watching silently. Though they did not step in, they didn't mind viewing a significant battle. Those powerhouses had already speculated that the three pinnacle races adjacent to the human race would not allow Blade River Emperor to continue growing stronger.

Only the toughest side would survive this battle.

Everyone was waiting silently. One hour went by. Then two hours. Then three hours...

Including the Light Perception Knight, the three knights were hidden in three different places where they could observe Blade River Emperor's mansion. All of them waited patiently, including the great beings of the other powerhouses.

"Perhaps Blade River Emperor is tired after fighting continuously for so long. He will probably come out soon."

A day went by. Then two days. Then three days...

Finally, the universe knights and emperor-level heirs that had been continuously staring at Luo Feng's mansion became a bit restless.

Is Blade River Emperor going to hide in his mansion forever? they wondered. But he must go out to accept his inheritances at the inheritance passageway before the Palace of Bauhinia Island, right?"

The other clans were quite bewildered. But the fact was, Luo Feng had never come out.

****

The Virtual Universe, the Nine Star Bay of Black Dragon Mountain.

For the past few days, Luo Feng had done nothing but spend time with his family. Although he was insanely persistent about his cultivation, he could not neglect his family, and he admitted that he owed them a lot.

"Dad, you know what?" said Luo Ping with a laugh. "Younger brother caused big troubles while adventuring in the universe. But what's amazing was that the sovereign of Ganwu, the most powerful being in the Ganwu universe, saved him!"

Xu Xin couldn't help but say, "Luo Feng, discipline your son. He indeed has made a mess this time."

"What's the matter?" Luo Feng looked at his son, Luo Hai, curiously.

"Nothing," said Luo Hai. "I just wanted to make a name for myself with my strength without showing off my identity while adventuring in the universe. And then I pissed someone off." Luo

Hai pursed his lips. "He was very arrogant because he had an undying-level emperor teacher. So what? My dad is the disciple of the Primal Chaos City Leader! Why should I be afraid of that douchebag?"

"So, you guys fought?" Luo Feng also smiled.

Luo Hai nodded. "Yes. That idiot was barely able to beat me, all right? However, his undying-level emperor teacher showed up in the end. Furiously, he attacked me, and the plants that I brought with me were no match for him. Because I was adventuring with my friends from Ganwu, the news that we got involved in a fight with that douchebag traveled back to Ganwu swiftly. Unexpectedly, the sovereign of Ganwu showed up in person and protected us."

Luo Feng was a bit surprised that, over the course of 10,000 years, his son had, for the first time, provoked a great being who was an undying-level emperor.

"Be more cautious next time," said Luo Feng.

Since his son Luo Hai wanted to follow his path and become a great being, it was expected that he would encounter some dangers and setbacks. All his son could do was remain alert.

"Luo Feng, the sovereign of Ganwu, has treated our family well," said Xu Xin. "Not only did he save Luo Hai a few years ago, but he also bestowed us a large patch of territories as big as 12 starfields a year ago. What's more, those territories were the 12 starfields around our hometown, Black Dragon Mountain Starfield. The royals of the Ganwu universe were the ones who had made such an arrangement to compensate the royals of those 12 starfields."

"A year ago?" Luo Feng was a bit startled. At that time, he had been halfway through his battles against the 620,000 heirs.

It seems that the sovereign of Ganwu is well-informed, said Luo Feng to himself.

Without visiting Luo Feng, the Ganwu Emperor had quietly helped the Luo family time and again, and had even saved Luo Feng's son Luo Hai. Usually, the Ganwu Emperor would not know about such a triviality as Luo Hai and his friends being in danger. Apparently, the Ganwu Emperor must have instructed that any information about Luo Hai be delivered to him directly. That was the only explanation for why the Ganwu Emperor could arrive at the battlefield so swiftly.

"Emperor of Ganwu, I will remember your favor," Luo Feng said to himself.

******

Nine days had passed since Luo Feng had finished his battles. On Bauhinia Island, the great beings of the various races that wanted to kill Luo Feng were still waiting patiently for him to come out.

Luo Feng's mansion, in a pavilion close to a lake.

Filled with enormous pride, Luo Feng held a wine glass and said to himself, "621,081 wins and 5,102 losses. Over 610,000 glory points. With every 100 glory points, I can exchange for one inheritance opportunity. Haha! Those heirs of other clans planned to humiliate me, but it is I who have benefited significantly. Every single one of my 620,000 or so rivals were peerless talents, but only six were undoubtedly stronger than me. Though plenty other rivals defeated me, they got lucky—just as I was lucky enough to beat other heirs."

In respect to accumulated points, Luo Feng ranked first! After all, his 621,081 wins were an impressive feat. The great being who ranked second only had 9,822 wins. In terms of win-loss ratio, this runner-up—who had won 9,822 times and lost only three times—was far better than Luo Feng.

In summary, six of the nine most potent third-stage heirs had battled against Luo Feng. Besides that, nearly 10,000 heirs whose power had been on the same level as Luo Feng had fought him.

"After so many battles, I have gained more comprehension about the Dao of Beast God. Nevertheless... There's no rush for me to accept my inheritances, for it's only been two years since my last inheritance. I need to concentrate on internalizing the experience I have gained from these 620,000 battles before I receive the inheritances. Through this opportunity, I should completely understand the third-stage inheritance. After that, I can set out to search for the special life suitable for my third body."

Luo Feng had made detailed plans a long time ago and couldn't afford any sloppiness. Without any hesitation, Luo Feng sat with his legs crossed and started to study the Dao of Beast God above the pavilion near a lake.

******

On Bauhinia Island, Light Perception Knight and the other two knights still waited anxiously for Luo Feng to appear. The heirs from other powerhouses had already given up. Many of them cursed Luo Feng secretly.

"He has been hiding in his house without going out," they said. "What a hideous and spineless human. But with so many glory points, how could you not go to the Land of Inheritance?"

One year past. Then two years. Three years...

100 years.

200 years.

300 years...

In the beginning, the Light Perception Knight observed Luo Feng's mansion with his full attention for three years. He also cursed him secretly. Later, as he started to cultivate, he only used a bit of his consciousness to watch over Luo Feng and didn't bother to curse the human anymore.

As time went by, the Light Perception Knight brought out an intelligent robot and opted to let the robot supervise Luo Feng's

mansion. He didn't want to watch Luo Feng's dwelling place any longer.

"Just wait," he muttered. "One day, you will go to receive inheritances, and I'll be waiting for you."

Light Perception Knight had no other option but to wait.

******

In a blink of an eye, 900 years had passed.

"Wow! 900 years of contemplation," Luo Feng said joyfully. "Those 620,000 battles were especially beneficial to me. I have achieved amazing progress in space law comprehension and beast god conception. And I am close to fulfilling the third stage of the Dao of Beast God."

Luo Feng had been cultivating the law of the fusion of space and gold. By comprehending fusion, Luo Feng had also gained more insights about space.

Now, both my original earthling body and my golden-horned beast second body can teleport, he thought. But I still need to comprehend the other two major aspects regarding space law.

Suddenly, Luo Feng stood up.

"Time to go out. If I go to receive inheritances now, I believe that I can fulfill my Third Volume right away."

Luo Feng looked at the gate to his mansion in the distance.

******

Moments later.

Amid the silence, Luo Feng pulled open his mansion's gate, which issued a squeaking sound, and walked out with a smile. At this time, no heirs were personally watching Luo Feng's residence; even the three universe knights had arranged robots or slaves to do their job, who now reported the news.

"My lord, the door is open."

"My lord, Blade River Emperor has come out."

"My lord, he is here."

With a great shudder, the three universe knights in three dwellings on Bauhinia Island woke up. In an instant, several other heirs who had also sent out slaves or robots to monitor Blade River Emperor's mansion were on the move as well!

Chapter 962: Assassinate! Luo Feng Died!

Light Perception Knight heard his intelligent robot servant scream eagerly. He opened his eyes and saw Luo Feng step out of the door.

"Blade River Emperor!"

Hostility flashed through Light Perception Knight's eyes, and murderous rage filled his heart. He had waited 900 years for this moment.

"A universe knight for a sector lord. You should be flattered, Blade River Emperor!"

Light Perception Knight suddenly disappeared.

******

The seniors from Northern Territory Alliance, Prison Race Alliance, and the Nine Territory Alliance stared at the palace of Blade River Emperor. The seniors had clear orders, and the demon race, the automaton race, and the bug race would send assassins to kill the human, Blade River Emperor.

"Do you think it will be the doom of Blade River Emperor or the loss of the three peak races?" they mused.

"How will they kill Blade River Emperor?"

Over 10,000 heirs were watching in secret, holding their breath.

******

Luo Feng walked out the door with a smile on his face. He waved his hands, and the door closed.

Without any warning, a huge figure appeared in front of Luo Feng. It was a beast from another race, and it was covered with mud. Its eyes looked misty but filled with aggressiveness.

Rumble!

The beast fluttered towards Luo Feng at an incredibly fast speed. Its body emanated an aura that could tremble the surroundings. Its godly body was burning.

"Um..." said Luo Feng.

Light Perception Knight witnessed the beast covered with mud appearing by teleportation. He was dazed. Mud Swallowing Knight!

Light Perception Knight was sharp enough to evade the scene by flying a thousand miles away.

"That Mud Swallowing Knight is trying to kill Blade River Emperor too?" Light Perception Knight was surprised. "I'll watch first. I only teleported nearby, without attacking him first, so the five-color aurora lake wouldn't I planned to kill Luo Feng. I'll see how this plays out."

******

Luo Feng was attacked by Mud Swallowing Knight's burning godly body the moment he stepped out of his palace.

"Shi Wu Wing!" Luo Feng shouted, his body trembling. Wings appeared at his back, and he tried to dodge the attack.

Rumble!

A beam of godly power drilled into Luo Feng's brain, trying to control Luo Feng.

"Trying to make me a slave?" said Luo Feng. "It won't be that easy!"

Luo Feng had an incredibly firm will. Under the attack of the godly power, Luo Feng's soul wasn't tempted at all.

"Went!"

Tower Pearl was guarding the beast god soul and defended it from that godly power. Mud Swallowing Knight, who had moved quite close to Luo Feng, was surprised to find that he had failed to

control Blade River Emperor's mind. He was a universe knight, and even burning his godly body wasn't enough to do it.

Rumble!

The five-color aurora lake, which was normally tranquil, started to vibrate fiercely. Traces of aurora dove toward Mud Swallowing Knight. However, Mud Swallowing knight was already burning his godly body before Luo Feng, and he was speedy. He didn't even glance at the terrifying five-color aurora.

"Die!" Mud Swallowing Knight opened his mouth.

Hua La!

His enormous tongue, covered with drops of muddy water, came at Luo Feng like a charging wall. This was one of his talent techniques. His tongue had tremendous eroding power. Even universe knights' godly bodies couldn't resist it.

Luo Feng's Shi Wu Wing was indeed fast, but it couldn't compare to a universe knight's burning godly body. Mud Swallowing Knight stuck out his tongue like a frog, and it struck fast as lightning. Luo Feng was captured before he could move a muscle.

Heng!

Luo Feng looked at Mud Swallowing Knight the second he was captured. Mud Swallowing Knight disregarded it.

The second that giant tongue entangled Luo Feng, the eroding power went to work. Shi Wu Wing wasn't eroded in the slightest, but Luo Feng's armor immediately started to crack. Holes were burned through it.

The tongue ate through the armor and lashed against Luo Feng's body like a whip. The eroding power didn't kill Luo Feng, but the force was extraordinary.

Rumble!

Even with Luo Feng's defending power, his body could not stand

up to the powerful attack. In an instant, he was annihilated—his body turned into nothing. All that was left was his broken armor, his complete wings, the tower pearl, the star map, a drop of general soul, and his solid world ring.

Hua! Hua! Hua! Hua! Hua! Hua!

Five color auroras dived. They were like beams of lightning arrows, and they locked the surrounding space, preventing Mud Swallowing from teleporting himself to freedom. He was within the range of five-color aurora lake.

"Haha..." Mud Swallowing Knight lifted his head and roared. He stared at the diving aurora. There was no shame in dying at the hands of the guarding true treasure of the Ancestral God School.

The auroras were over 10,000 kilometers long. However, they were shrinking as they fell, narrowing to the size of arrows.

Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu! Pu!

The arrows pierced through Mud Swallowing Knight's body. Instantly, most of the body vanished like foam. A moment after that, what little remained also disappeared while the auroras flew back.

Everything went silent.

The five auroras were still flying gradually. The damaged ground in front of Luo Feng's palace was suddenly fully repaired, as spotless as a snowfield in Ice Hell.

"Dead..." gasped Light Perception Knight.

He had watched from afar. The five-color aurora lake, ranked among the most powerful true treasures in the universe, was so mighty that it had annihilated a universe knight instantly. The five-color aurora lake was indeed terrifically forceful.

Light Perception Knight felt fortunate, scared, and regretful all at once.

Anyway, now that Blade River Emperor is dead, I'll report back to the bug race, Light Perception Knight thought.

******

The heirs watching the events from afar were all dazed.

"Blade River Emperor died? Just like that?"

"He's dead?"

"He was annihilated!"

And they began to spread the news.

******

Among the stars, Master of Sky Wolf received the news almost at the same time.

"Haha! Mud Swallowing Knight killed Blade River Emperor," he growled gleefully, surrounded by flames. "Haha! He's dead. That annoying little one is dead. I hope Mud Swallowing Knight managed to control his mind before he was killed. Either way, I've achieved my goal. The Primal Chaos City Leader was trying to protect that human all this time. What a shame. Even the Primal Chaos City Leader wouldn't dare trespass on the holy grounds of the Ancestral God School."

Master of Sky Wolf stood in front of Sky Wolf Palace and roared joyfully, shaking all of the surrounding space, exhilarated not only because the human genius had been destroyed, but because he had finally gained his revenge.

******

On Bauhinia Island, lots of flying shadows approached. Almost all the heirs from the various races came out of their palaces. The energy waves created by Mud Swallowing Knight's burning godly body had been massive, and the auroras from the five-color aurora lake had rocked the surrounding space. Everyone knew that something terrible had happened.

"What happened?" said Seven Blade Emperor as he arrived. He had teleported himself to Luo Feng's palace the second he sensed the waves caused by a universe knight's burning godly power. He had witnessed the auroras killing Mud Swallowing Knight, but Mud Swallowing Knight's tongue had shrouded Luo Feng's body by the time he'd made it there, so Seven Blade Emperor hadn't even seen Luo Feng.

"Who did Mud Swallowing Knight kill? Why did the auroras come down?" Seven Blade Emperor asked, confused.

"Seven Blade Emperor," answered several onlookers.

Cha Man Emperor, Li Li Emperor, and Thousand Rain Emperor all arrived via teleportation.

"Who died?" asked Thousand Rain Emperor. "Who did the five-color aurora lake kill?"

They were less informed than Seven Blade Emperor and hadn't even witnessed the death of Mud Swallowing Knight.

"It was Mud Swallowing Knight," said Seven Blade Emperor, "but I don't know who he killed—ah!"

Seven Blade Emperor's eyes went wide as he noticed the treasures scattered in front of the palace. They belonged to Mud Swallowing Knight and Luo Feng. Mud Swallowing Knight had known he was going to die. Hence, he had left his precious treasures elsewhere. Luo Feng, on the other hand, had left quite a few. The most eye-catching one was the set of giant silver wings. Blade River Emperor was known for those wings, and rumor had it that the wings were a true treasure.

"Those wings... it was Blade River Emperor!" Seven Blade Emperor was dazed. He had already made up his mind to surpass Blade River Emperor, never expecting that something like this would happen. "It was Blade River Emperor who died. Blade River Emperor was killed by Mud Swallowing Knight!"

The voices of discussions among the other races came from afar. The sector lord who had garnered widespread fame across the universe—the heir who had gone through 620,000 battles and won a considerable number of glory points only two years after stepping in the land of inheritance—had just died? The news shocked every race.

"That was the wing left by the late Blade River Emperor," the onlookers said.

"A true treasure, that wing."

"Yes, you're right. That wing is a true treasure."

Lots of the heirs from other races were stupefied by the news that Blade River Emperor had just been killed. However, lots of cheering was heard, and even those universe knights watching the fight from afar were staring at the objects in front of Luo Feng's palace, especially those huge silver wings. The temptation of a true treasure couldn't be overstated.

Chapter 963: Anyone Who Touches It Shall Be Killed

The numerous heirs and universe knights floating in midair all stared at the eye-catching, giant silver wings before the manor gate, all eager to claim them.

"That is a true treasure," said a universe knight. "If I could get one, it would be so valuable that I wouldn't need to come to the Land of Inheritance ever again."

A creaking sound.

Surprisingly, the closed gate to Luo Feng's mansion opened again, startling the numerous heirs in the distance. Wasn't Blade River Emperor dead? Why was his gate opening from the inside?

An emperor-level, undying great being, whose godly body seemed like being carved of diamonds, stood at the gate in green armor. It was Luo Feng's slave, Honed Heart Emperor.

"Heirs," said Honed Heart Emperor loudly. "Blade River Emperor is not dead. You are not permitted to touch his treasure. If any of you touches it, you are essentially stealing from Blade River Emperor. I believe that every heir present understands the rules of the Ancestral God School. The five-color aurora lake protects every heir. If any of you dares to kill another heir, you will be attacked and annihilated. Seizing the treasures from other heirs is just as grievous a crime as assailing and killing them. By doing so, you will also be destroyed."

Tens of millions of heirs looked at Honed Heart Emperor who dared not step out from the manor gate.

The rumbling voice of a demon clan heir spoke up. "Blade River Emperor is not dead? How do you know that? And who are you, anyway? I have never met you on Bauhinia Island before."

"I am Blade River Emperor's soul slave," said Honed Heart

Emperor. "I have never left this mansion. If my master Blade River Emperor is dead, then so am I. If I am alive, it means that my master is also alive. I say again, none of you shall touch my master's treasure. If you touch it, you will be stealing from a fellow heir, and the five-color aurora lake will kill you."

Honed Heart Emperor's voice echoed through the air of Bauhinia Island.

Tens of millions of heirs hesitated. If they stole a treasure from a living heir, they would certainly be killed. But if an heir was dead, his treasure would become ownerless and up for grabs to anyone.

Swish!

A figure dove at the silver wings. In the blink of an eye, a stream of black light had arrived at the mansion gate.

"I will make the most out of a bad situation," announced the black, shadowy figure. "Having been trapped in the last step for billions of years without achieving any results, I shall gamble for success this time! I saw with my own eyes that the Blade River Emperor was annihilated. How can I trust the words of someone I don't even know? Humph! As long as the Blade River Emperor is truly dead and I acquire this pair of valuable wings, no other heirs will dare attack me. Besides, my clan members and I can exchange this true treasure for plenty of resources. Perhaps I can even break through the last phase and become a universe knight!"

"Don't!" shouted Honed Heart Emperor.

Some greedy heirs were irritated. "We hesitated, and now he is a step ahead of us!" However, they dared not steal the treasure.

"It is mine!" said the black shadow as he grabbed the silver wings.

The moment his sharp claws touched the silver wings, an invisible force froze the area in a space ripple. Mud Swallowing Knight had not been able to escape from this very force last time; neither could the black shadow.

"No!" said the black shadow as he felt himself locked in the space ripple. He issued a shrill cry. He refused to accept his doom! If he died today, all the treasures he had accumulated over many years would be gone. Even if his clan members resurrected him in the future, he would have lost his opportunity for inheritance. It had already been difficult for him to break through to the last step. He would only be worse off after being resurrected.

Swoosh!

A streak of aurora fell swiftly from the sky. The black shadow dropped the silver wings in his hands, and flew across the sky, trying to escape.

Whiz!

In an instant, the aurora punched a hole through his godly body. And then, like a bubble that had been popped, his godly body vanished. The streak of aurora flew up high again, returning to the endless five-color aurora.

Silence filled all of Bauhinia Island!

"Dead?"

The tens of millions of heirs in midair were dumbfounded. These were the peerless talents of many races, highly confident in their knowledge and abilities. It was impossible for them to blindly believe Honed Heart Emperor's words. Yet they now saw the truth with their own eyes. The five-color aurora had killed an heir for touching the silver wings. That meant...

Blade River Emperor was still alive!

"Blade River Emperor is still alive?" muttered the Light Perception Knight, looking down at the mansion gate from afar. Eyes fraught with astonishment, he said, "How is this possible? He was obliterated! Does he have multiple bodies?"

It was very rare to possess more than one body in the universe. Though a second body could be created, the strength and

breathing of the second body would differ from the original. As a knight, Light Perception Knight would have quickly been able to tell a phony from the real thing. Apparently, it was the original body of Blade River Emperor, not his second body that had been destroyed.

Light Perception Knight had a hard time accepting the idea. "Multiple bodies? I am bestowed with this technique because I am the sacred son of the Kong Wan race. But he is just a human. How can he have that ability?" "What should I do, now that he is still alive?" Light Perception Knight was very anxious.

******

While the tens of millions of heirs in midair above Bauhinia Island looked at the treasure on the ground in astonishment, a formidable force arrived.

A dragon-like body covered over 6,000 miles. As a pair of giant wings unfolded, and the dragon head of the creature extended and looked downward. Suddenly, the tens of millions of heirs landed on the ground and bowed respectfully.

"Master of the island," they said in greeting.

It was the guarding beast god of Bauhinia Island who had arrived!

The guarding beast god's voice was a guttural rumble. "How dare that universe knight attempt to assassinate Blade River Emperor at the vital center of the Ancestral God School? For blatantly violating the rules of the Ancestral God School, he deserves to be dead—forever! Even if time and space were reversed, and Mud Swallowing Knight was resurrected, the Ancestral God School would hunt him down and kill him again!"

This formidable force terrified the heirs. How brutal the guarding beast god was!

The Ancestral God School would chase and kill the revived Mud Swallowing Knight? Since the guarding beast god delivered the

message, it must represent the opinions of the leaders of the Ancestral God School, thus frightening numerous heirs.

"Luckily for me, I didn't make a move first," said Light Perception Knight, shuddering at the thought.

"I can't believe other heirs would try to snatch Blade River Emperor's possession," the guarding beast god said, looking down with cold eyes. "Blade River Emperor's inheritance token is not broken! Of course he is still alive! Although the Ancestral God School is lenient, once a rule is set, it cannot be challenged. For seizing an item from an heir, that thief deserved to die."

******

Meanwhile, in a pavilion of Luo Feng's mansion. There was a cushion on the ground. The cushion had been transformed from the Mosha body and contained the World Ring. Inside the World Ring was Luo Feng's core.

In the vast internal world, a naked, black-haired youth hovered high in the upper at the center of the world.

"I did it again," chuckled Luo Feng. "I can't believe the other races tried to assassinate me at the cost of a universe knight—and the very moment I went out! They must indeed think highly of me. Too bad they failed; they have only wasted a bit of my energy."

A battle uniform condensed over the surface of Luo Feng's body.

After Luo Feng's 620,000 battles, the news that other races were going to assassinate him spread widely. If other heirs suspected an assassination attempt, how could Luo Feng not have known about it?

But he was very confident. Since he could have more than one body, he had nothing to worry about as long as he kept his core in his mansion, the safest place for him. Even if his original earthling body was destroyed, he could be revived. Furthermore, since his soul did not perish, his inheritance token would not be broken,

and the five-color aurora lake would know that he was still alive. In that case, he knew that only he could touch his treasure. If anyone tried to take it, they would be attacked and killed by the five-color aurora lake.

In other words, he had nothing to fear. That was why Luo Feng had exited his manor so intrepidly. Since the Tower Pearl guarded his soul, he was not intimidated by soul control. He had wanted to see what tricks the other races had up their sleeves.

"Apart from the universe knight who attacked me, there was another universe knight who appeared suddenly but withdrew at the last moment," said Luo Feng. He shook his head. "Regrettably, after this battle, I believe he will be too afraid to attack me. He now knows it is useless to attack me, and he might even get himself killed for his trouble."

Swish!

Luo Feng left the internal world and arrived at the pavilion of his manor.

******

The formidable guarding beast god silenced the heirs. Suddenly, they saw the silver wings and other treasures left by Blade River Emperor fly toward Luo Feng's manor.

These were the treasures melded by Luo Feng, meaning he could easily summon them. The reason his Mosha body did not gather his treasures was that the Mosha clan could not assemble the General Armor and the General Soul. Only a body with flesh and blood could wear the General Armor, and only the soul of an earthling could use the General Soul.

Of course, his golden-horned beast body could also summon his treasures. However, the golden-horned beast was so enormous that if it exited the internal world, it would fill the sky.

Numerous heirs watched the items fly toward Luo Feng's

mansion.

"What?" they said. "Why did the treasures fly inside?"

"Blade River Emperor is not dead," someone said. "Those are treasures melded by him, of course. He can summon them. But we saw him killed and annihilated, how could he...?"

Tens of millions of emperor-level, undying great beings, plenty of universe knights, and even Seven Blade Emperor stared at Luo Feng's residence attentively.

Honed Heart Emperor, who had been standing at the gate without stepping out, bowed with respect. "Master!"

A figure had come out of the mansion: a youth from the human race dressed in silver armor and a pair of silver battle boots. The Shi Wu Wings unfolded behind him. It was Blade River Emperor, back from the dead.

Stunned, the heirs from various races watched Luo Feng as he walked out from his manor. They murmured among themselves in hushed voices.

"It's him! It's the Blade River Emperor."

"He is surprisingly safe and sound."

"Does he have the legendary talent to have multiple bodies?"

Luo Feng bowed to the beast god in the air. "Master of the island," he greeted.

Looking downward, the guarding beast god answered, "Hmm."

The great beings who wanted to kill Luo Feng, Light Perception Knight included, were shocked to see Blade River Emperor die and reappear. They now realized that killing Blade River Emperor was thousands of times harder than they had imagined. Meanwhile, the great beings from the human race, such as Seven Blade Emperor and Cha Man Emperor, along with numerous heirs, now realized that Blade River Emperor was exceedingly strong and

mysterious.

Chapter 964: Only the Soul

"I shall take my leave," said the guarding beast god floating in the sky above Bauhinia Island, his voice spreading across the entire island. "Remember, Blade River Emperor is an heir of the Ancestral God School. You'll be hunted down by the Ancestral God School if you attempt to assassinate him."

"Yes," said the heirs, bowing as one.

The heirs held their breath didn't relax until the guarding beast god had disappeared.

"What's the meaning of this?" someone spoke up. "Throughout the history of the Ancestral God School, there have been killings between heirs, but the Ancestral God School never hunted them down! Why should Mud Swallowing Knight be hunted even after he's brought back? This is—"

"How silly are you that you can't even understand this?" someone else cut in. "Apparently, the Ancestral God School gives Blade River Emperor special treatment. Didn't you see how the Ancestral God School favored Zhu Chong Emperor? Now, they're favoring Blade River Emperor, too!"

"You mean Blade River Emperor is another Zhu Chong Emperor?"

"Humph! Based on his potential, he might not be inferior to Zhu Chong Emperor once he becomes an undying fighter."

"Hmm. Either way, the Ancestral God School treats him special."

The heirs from all the races in the universe continued talking while flying away like beams of light. Most of the heirs only justed, but some of the heirs—particularly those assigned with tasks from their own races—were a bit irritated.

"How am I supposed to kill him?" Light Perception Knight wondered, looking at Luo Feng who stood in front of the palace

from afar. He was terribly upset. "There's no way to kill him now."

Suddenly, Luo Feng looked up and smirked directly at Light Perception Knight. It was a look that said, "Come kill me if you dare!"

Light Perception Knight knew that the human had already discerned that he was a killer. He teleported himself and disappeared without saying a word.

******

Luo Feng stood in front of his palace and watched the countless heirs leave. Thoughts flooded his mind. The guarding beast god had said publicly before that Mud Swallowing Knight would be hunted down by the Ancestral God School even after he was brought back. Although Luo Feng's earthling body had still been in the World Ring at the time, his Mosha body had heard every word of it.

The Ancestral God School gave me special treatment, Luo Feng thought. But on second thought, it seems that I'm not as important as Zhu Chong Emperor in their minds. Zhu Chong Emperor was given two true treasures, whereas I was given none.

Luo Feng turned around and went back to his palace.

"Ai," said Honed Heart Emperor, and he closed the door.

"Although I was completely safe in the palace, my multi-body technique has now been exposed," said Luo Feng. "There must be a weakness to the multi-body technique. For safety reasons, my original body had better stay in the human territory."

Luo Feng walked to one of the side palaces, and the Mosha body had already gone back to the internal world. The ring fell back into Luo Feng's palms.

He was standing in the side palace when he saw a beam of blurry, golden light, and God Country Transportation was enacted. He saw the boundless God Country on the other side of the golden

aisle.

Sou!

The teleportation was over.

Five minutes later, the golden light was on again, and Luo Feng went back.

"Master," Honed Heart Emperor said, already waiting in the side palace.

Luo Feng laughed and smiled. As his multi-body technique had been exposed, he had sent his core to the primal secret region in the virtual universe. He had assigned Tian Chen Emperor to wear the ring, which held the golden-horned beast body and its core.

"Master," said another voice.

Luo Feng turned and saw 360 Cloud Contact Vines flying into the side palace. Luo Feng had known that he would be assassinated. Hence, he had chosen not to bring the cloud contact armor.

"I'll go and take another inheritance," Luo Feng said. "You, Cloud Contact, shall stay here with Honed Heart Emperor."

"Master, I'll go out with you," said Cloud Contact, vines swinging.

"Although it's highly unlikely that I'll be assassinated again, I need to be careful," Luo Feng said with a smile. "Rest assured I'll bring you out if I leave on an adventure."

"Yes," Cloud Contact answered, and the vines drooped.

Luo Feng walked out of his palace instead of teleporting himself. After a half-hour stroll across Bauhinia Island, he reached the palace of the guarding beast god. Luo Feng, of course, caught countless powerful ones' attention by walking in the open for so long, including two of the universe knights who had been ordered to kill him. However, they could do nothing about it.

Killing him wasn't the problem; if they managed to kill him, he would be resurrected again, and their deaths would be in vain. The

two universe knights were smart enough not to do that.

Sou!

Luo Feng stepped into the waterfall.

"Blade River Emperor went to take an inheritance," said one of the universe knights.

"He can take an inheritance whenever he wants," said the other. "After all, he has over 600,000 glory points. The land of Inheritance has become his territory."

The heirs of the other races brimmed with jealousy.

******

While Luo Feng was taking the inheritance, news spread, and all the superpowers of the universe already knew what had happened. The demon race, the bug race, and the automaton race were all infuriated. It was bad enough already that the human was so powerful. Now, he even had the multiple bodies technique! It was unfair that there was such a peerless talent in the human race.

The multiple bodies technique could not be gained by training. It was a technique owned by only some of the races and special organisms. Normally, it was extremely difficult to kill an undying fighter with the multi-body technique, as other bodies could be used to resurrect the killed fighter. The worst that could happen was to lose a great deal of energy in the process.

His adversaries adjusted their plans.

"Universe master, there are no other ways to kill Blade River Emperor except by controlling or eroding his soul. This is the only way to deal with a powerful one with the multi-body technique."

"Go and make a plan. His sector lord core must be hidden in the safest place of the human race. There's only one way to kill him, and that's to control his soul."

All the supreme beings and superpowers knew that the core was

Luo Feng's weakness as long as he was still a sector lord. However, if he became an undying fighter, the core would become a God Country, which would become his new weakness. A God Country, however, could be hidden in a remote area in an interlayer of space, which would make it almost impossible to find.

An undying fighter with the multi-body technique would usually leave a body in the God Country in case his other bodies were destroyed. In other words, the only way to kill an undying fighter with the multi-body technique was to control their souls.

The soul was the common element that connected different bodies. Different bodies though they were, they had the same will. All three of the bodies of Luo Feng were interconnected, and once one of the souls was controlled, the other two would be, too. If the soul was eroded, the other bodies would be likewise eroded. It worked like a virus.

******

The Master of Sky Wolf roared in fury. "Mud Swallowing Knight will be hunted by the Ancestral God School even after he's brought back! They fiercely demand more compensation from our demon race! I've already brought Mud Swallowing Knight back as a promise to compensate them. Now they want more?"

The demon race was the most enraged out of all the human race's enemies. The death of a universe knight had only consumed a fraction of Blade River Emperor's energy. And perhaps the strength of a world used to recover his body was worth less than a mixed element.

"Mud Swallowing Knight is in a pitiable state," said his shadowy, snake-like acolyte. "It's natural that his clan demands more. Master of Sky Wolf, if we refuse to do this, the other races in the alliance will be disappointed."

"Damn it!" Master of Sky Wolf shouted, furious. He was angry with the humans, particularly Primal Chaos City Leader and Blade

River Emperor. He stood in front of the Sky Wolf Palace and stared down at the snake-like acolyte. "You'll be in charge of the compensation. But now, let me ask you first. Do you have any idea how to kill Blade River Emperor?"

The snake-like acolyte groveled as it said, "The only way is to control his soul."

"And how can we do that?" Master of Sky Wolf said.

"Master of Sky Wolf, the most upsetting thing now is the order from the Ancestral God School. The school must value that human very much. It wants to train him as a second Zhu Chong Emperor. However, he's not powerful enough yet, so the Ancestral God School hasn't revealed how much it favors him. Regardless, the death mark on Mud Swallowing Emperor is already deterring universe knights in the Ancestral God School from killing Blade River Emperor. And besides, there are only a few universe knights of our demon race in the Ancestral God School. The only thing we can do now is wait."

"Wait? Till when?" Master of Sky Wolf roared.

The giant snake stopped talking.

When indeed. Who knew when? As long as Blade River Emperor remained within the domain of the Ancestral God School, it seemed there was nothing they could do about it. Even the universe knights who were proficient in soul control were afraid of being hunted down by the Ancestral God School as retribution for attacking him. After all, it was the mightiest power in the universe. The universe knights were not afraid of being hunted by the human race, but they were, indeed, afraid of being hunted by the Ancestral God School.

Master of Sky Wolf knew that his acolyte couldn't answer this question. "Go," he commanded. He turned around and walked into the Sky Wolf Palace.

******

Bauhinia Island, the secret land of beast god inheritance.

In a deep valley, Jiu Feng Knight looked at Luo Feng with a smile on his face.

"Congratulations, Blade River Emperor," he said. "Your name has already disappeared from the third-level heir ranking and has entered into that of a fourth-level heir. You've completed the third-level inheritance."

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded.

The 620,000 battles with all the talents from other races had helped him a lot, and together with the 900 years of comprehension and training, he had completed the third-level inheritance at one time. However, Luo Feng had barely gained anything.

"Work hard," Jiu Feng Knight told him. "All the supreme beings of our human race have high expectations for you. Although I did the same thing on Rong Jun, I have the same expectation for you, too."

Luo Feng smiled and went back to Bauhinia Island through the portal.

Chapter 965: Departure

The Virtual Universe, in a city of the Hong Alliance.

After receiving the inheritance, Luo Feng appeared at the booth of a restaurant on the same day. Luo Feng, Thousand Rain Emperor, Cha Man Emperor, and Li Li Emperor had gathered together.

"Blade River Emperor, why did you call us here?" Li Li Emperor asked bluntly. "Do you need to unwind after someone tried to assassinate you today?"

"You think Blade River Emperor is like you?" Cha Man Emperor ridiculed Li Li Emperor. "Didn't you see how he looked after the assassination? Under the eyes of millions of heirs, Blade River Emperor walked out from his mansion unflustered."

"It's hard to tell what he wants," Thousand Rain Emperor said jokingly, studying Luo Feng.

"Guys." Luo Feng held up a wine bottle and poured wine for his three guests. "I want to ask you for a favor."

"Even the most common wine becomes a rare vintage if Blade River Emperor serves it," Cha Man Emperor said, holding up his wine glass and taking a tiny sip. "Blade River, tell us, what can we do for you? We will try our best without hesitation."

For them, it would be an honor to help Blade River Emperor. It was well-known by now that as long as Blade River Emperor didn't die, he would attain remarkable heights in the future. It was challenging to build and maintain a friendship with such a great being. For example, the sovereign of Ganwu had taken an indirect approach; instead of visiting Luo Feng, he chose to help Luo Feng's family.

"Just say the word," said Thousand Rain Emperor.

"We will spare no effort to help you," added Li Li Emperor.

"I want to gather the detailed intelligence about the secret region of the Ancestral God School," said Luo Feng. "As far as I know, plenty of the heirs of the Ancestral God School head to the secret region through the transport passage in front of the palace of the master of Bauhinia Island. Many of them must have collected a great deal of information. I need the intelligence."

Holding his wine glass, Cha Man Emperor frowned. "The Ancestral God School has set up three passages, leading to the land of valuables, the land of inheritance, and the secret region, respectively. Apparently, the school wants the heirs to adventure in these places. Plenty of heirs have done so. They would team up and help each other. What's more, once the heirs apply to form a squad in the World of Glory, the squad members must not kill one another. In the secret region of the Ancestral God School, the heirs' consciousnesses can always be linked and sent simultaneously to the World of Glory. If anyone dares to kill their partners, they will be expelled and hunted down by the Ancestral God School."

Both Thousand Rain Emperor and Li Li Emperor looked at Luo Feng. They were speculating whether Blade River Emperor was going to the secret region.

"If you are going, you'd better join a team," said Cha Man Emperor.

"I need the intelligence," said Luo Feng. "Just tell me if you can get it."

"No problem," Cha Man Emperor said, nodding. "Plenty of heirs have been to the secret region, and there are many bits of intelligence within the Hong Alliance. Besides, information is frequently shared among different groups. Give us some time, and we will collect the detailed intelligence about the secret region of the Ancestral God School."

"Blade River Emperor, if you must go to the secret region, you

should be careful," said Thousand Rain Emperor. "That place is so dangerous that even the detailed information and the strength of the undying level aren't enough for you. I know that you have multiple bodies and can revive even if you die there, but the adventure would be for naught if you lost your treasures in that perilous place. You'd better join an adventure team with universe knights. For example, universe knights from the Hong Alliance, or knights from other races that have good relationships with Hong Alliance."

"Come on, then," said Luo Feng, raising his glass. "Let's drink."

Since Luo Feng didn't want to say more, his three guests stopped talking and enjoyed drinking with Luo Feng.

The banquet didn't end until much later. As they watched Luo Feng leave, the three guests stood in front of the restaurant and looked at each other.

"It seems like he is very interested in the secret region of Ancestral God School," Cha Man Emperor said.

Thousand Rain Emperor frowned. "Who isn't? It's the most magical and advanced secret region. But I have the feeling that Blade River Emperor wants to go there alone."

"No worries," Li Li Emperor said. "Blade River Emperor's methods are beyond our imagination. It's a rare opportunity that he asks us for a favor, so let's gather the intelligence quickly."

In an instant, the three emperors left the virtual universe and headed to the World of Glory.

******

Bauhinia Island. Luo Feng's mansion.

"The secret region of the Ancestral God School," muttered Luo Feng. "The most advanced secret region of the universe. It harbors the most treasures and special organisms. Hence, it is also the best place for me to search for my third body."

Hands on the railings, Luo Feng looked at the sky in the distance. The halos containing numerous law engravings enlarged, faded, and revived in the air.

"Now that I have fulfilled the third volume of Nan Shen Seven Forms, I can access the second pattern of Shi Wu Wings, which can form spatial turbulence. My ability to escape will be 100 times stronger than it is now. Fulfilling the third volume also means that my law comprehension has reached the limit of the 20th level of Heavenly Bridge. I can't delay anymore. It's time to choose my third body."

Luo Feng's blood was burning with anticipation and desire. Right after the inheritance was concluded in the land of inheritance, the first idea that came to Luo Feng's mind was to find a unique life form suitable for incubating his third body. And then, he could step into the undying level.

"The universe has known my name," he said, "and the three pinnacle races have decided to murder me. I must improve my strength as soon as possible. When I become undying, I believe my genes will be essentially the same as Zhu Chong Emperor. By then, I will possess the strength of a universe knight, and no ordinary universe knights can be my rivals. Now, I should wait patiently for my third body. It is crucially important for my growth in the future."

******

Luo Feng was physically present in his mansion, waiting for Cha Man Emperor's intelligence, but his heart had floated into the mysterious secret region, where he was sure to find a special organism suitable for his third body. He waited for 16 days.

Virtual Universe. In a city of Hong Alliance.

On the 16th day, in the same restaurant, Luo Feng, Thousand Rain Emperor, Cha Man Emperor, and Li Li Emperor sat around a table containing cuisine from throughout the universe. As Luo

Feng clicked the air, a screen occurred and floated in the air. He clicked open the mailbox and read the message content.

In the long history of Ancestral God School, an array of heirs who didn't think they could make a breakthrough on their own efforts had ventured into the secret region early. They traveled in groups and were extremely cautious. Some received special treatment and thus became successful. Their experiences had left behind a high amount of intelligence for the generations to come.

"What do you think?" said Thousand Rain Emperor jokingly.

Staring at the screen, Luo Feng nodded several times. "Very good. Better than I imagined. The intelligence is very detailed and has recorded many dangerous places and special organisms."

"Blade River," said Cha Man Emperor, "because we are friends, I want to tell you something, though it might upset you. Even with this intelligence, many heirs have died in the secret region. It is so large that nobody has fully explored it since the dawn of the universe. As detailed as this intelligence is, it has recorded only a small part of the secret region. You might want to think twice before going there alone."

"I see." Luo Feng turned off the screen. He would study the intelligence carefully on his own later. "Relax. I won't do anything stupid."

It was a promise given to reassure his friends.

But Luo Feng was not so easily swayed.

******

The day he got the intelligence, Luo Feng left Bauhinia Island through the God Country Transportation and arrived at the Star Tower of the outer region wars.

At the center hall of Star Tower.

Since Luo Feng had already left letters in the Star Tower, they

could be delivered to the center hall at any time.

"I have only 100 stars in my Star Map," he said. "52 stars have been consumed in my second move. I'm afraid the stars won't be enough for me in the future."

Luo Feng came to the edge of the center hall. As he flipped his hands, an enormous floating scroll appeared. Meanwhile, Luo Feng controlled the stars around the center hall and made them fly toward him.

These were the temporarily unused stars in the Star Tower.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

Like raining hail, one after another star shrank and blended into the scroll swiftly. Moments later, 1,700 stars were integrated into the parchment. The Star Map now contained as many as 1,800 stars. Luo Feng extended his left hand, and the large scroll in the air shrank rapidly into his palm.

Looking at this scroll, Luo Feng felt that the star-dotted map was just like the sky full of stars. As he counted, he found out there were 1,800 stars in total.

"The Star Map feels different after integrating 1,800 stars."

On the surface, the Star Map was not different from before. However, since Luo Feng's consciousness was connected to the scroll, he could sense the massive, formidable power contained by the giant stars inside it.

"By the time I can rouse these 1,800 stars, I'll probably be a universe knight," Luo Feng said to himself. "With these 1,800 stars, the Star Map is sufficient for me to use for a long time." Luo Feng smiled and added, "Star Tower! When I come back next time, I can control you completely!"

And then, rays of golden light appeared in front of him.

Swish!

Luo Feng left through God Country Transportation.

******

After carefully studying the intelligence about the secret region of the Ancestral God School, Luo Feng purchased some treasures that he could carry from the human race's domain. Later, he returned to Bauhinia Island.

Luo Feng stood in his mansion and said, "I have a Mosha clan body, so I can send it to explore many dangerous places. How could I possibly be suitable company for other heirs now that numerous groups are trying to assassinate me? Adventuring with other heirs would only complicate matters."

"Honed Heart Emperor," he instructed. "Stay and guard the mansion. Remember: Never set foot outside the mansion."

"Understood," Honed Heart Emperor said respectfully.

In the blink of an eye, Luo Feng had entered the World Ring. At the same time, the Luo Feng's Mosha body appeared.

"Aha!" As the Luo Feng in black clothes grinned, he stirred up the air flow. By copying the talents and techniques of the original Luo Feng, Mosha Luo Feng turned himself into an heir of a different race, but his breathing was still the same as Luo Feng's. Since Bauhinia Island was within the five-color aurora lake, everything that happened on the island was supervised. As a result, the five-color aurora lake was aware that the transformed heir was Luo Feng.

"Go!"

Luo Feng's Mosha body teleported himself.

At the same time, he appeared at the square in front of the palace for the master of Bauhinia Island. He took a step forward and entered the water curtain of the spring at the right side of the square.

Swish!

He vanished and was sent to the secret region.

Chapter 966: World Tree

The Ancestral God secret region was boundless.

Inside floated a beautiful spring, and the spring water doused the surroundings again and again. A figure walked out of the spring—Luo Feng's Mosha body.

The Mosha body looked around and saw only the floating spring. There were no guards here.

"The Ancestral God School is so confident that it placed the portal here without worrying about it being vandalized by others," he said. "But, on second thought, it seems right. The secret region is the property of the Ancestral God School, after all... Transform."

His bodies changed, and the original earthling body came out while the Mosha body went back inside the World Ring. The original earthling body was much more powerful, especially after completing the third volume. He was able to practice the second form of Shi Wu Wings, which gave him a much higher chance of survival.

"Detector."

Luo Feng turned on both the micro and macro-detectors. Detectors were designed for adventuring in secret regions of the universe instead of the outer-region warzone. Macro-detectors were designed for those hurrying in their journeys through secret regions of the universe. Macro-detectors could identify some celestial bodies afar and remind users to dodge them, making movements much safer. As for micro-detectors, they were used for precise exploring in dangerous places.

Sou!

Luo Feng flew away like a flash of light. After finding that it was temporarily safe ahead, he teleported himself.

He dodged the hazards cautiously. The celestial bodies inside the

Ancestral God School's secret region were peculiar. Some of the colossal ones looked odd. In the normal regions of the universe, most of the celestial bodies were spherical—planets, stars, white dwarfs, neutron stars, and even black holes—but in the Ancestral God secret region, the celestial bodies took on irregular forms. Some of them were like enormous continents. Some were gigantic lakes in space, possibly containing islands. From time to time, Luo Feng could also see floating mountain ranges with waterfalls running over them. It all looked so beautiful and magical, but in reality, it was full of danger.

Luo Feng saw one waterfall whose water could freeze even universe knights and crush their life marks, which could lead to their demise. The water was a rare substance called "Cold Whale Nine-Colored Water." It would be lucky for someone if they could use a treasure like the purple clock or other items to take some of the water. The water could be used in battle and wielded enormous power.

Unfortunately, beneath the Cold Whale Nine-Colored Water lived a terrifying special organism called the Cold Whale. Cold Whale Nine-Colored Water appeared as different colors from different angles—nine colors in total. Some great beings had discovered the nine-colored water when the universe was young and had tried to collect some. However, they had been attacked by the Cold Whale before they could even touch the water, thus losing their lives.

There was only a short description of Cold Whales in the information Luo Feng collected. Only universe masters were their rivals.

******

Heirs were transported directly to the deepest area of the Ancestral God secret region, which was the least dangerous. It was the place where the Ancestral God School trained their heirs. Of course, there would be dangerous if there were some precious of

the universe.

On the ninth day of Luo Feng's journey, a beam of light suddenly stopped in the space outside the border of a mountain that was thousands of light years long.

"I'll rest first after nine days of the journey." Luo Feng stood in the space and looked around, spotting the massive mountain. "The celestial bodies in the Ancestral God secret region are indeed very weird. This mountain is more than six thousand light years long, and it's perilous. According to the information I have, there are 201 of them."

Lots of heirs had tried to explore the mountain before. However, only a small part of it was mapped, as it was far too dangerous.

"It should take me around 32 days to arrive and see the World Tree at my speed," said Luo Feng.

Expectation flashed in Luo Feng's eyes. World Tree! The third body of his plan!

Luo Feng had high access authority in the human race and had collected a great deal of information about special organisms. He had researched them, and he had to admit that the Ancestral God secret region had the most special organisms in the universe.

Many mystical and powerful organisms lived in the Ancestral God secret region, such as Cold Whales, the Back Mountain Tremble, and World Trees. They were all special organisms that could rival universe masters. After careful screening and filtering, Luo Feng had decided that he would choose World Tree as his third body. Although there existed some other organisms that would be more beneficial to him, only special organisms at the sector-lord level could suffice. So, Luo Feng had chosen the World Tree.

There were nine World Trees, in total, in the universe. The most powerful one was a universe knight. Its trunk was 7 million miles wide, and it was 370 million miles tall. The tree's canopy had a

diameter of over half a billion miles. It was the largest tree-typed special organism in the universe.

There were three undying-level trees, which were only slightly smaller than the one at the universe knight level, at heights of 75 million miles. Below those were five sector-lord-level World Trees, which were 40 million miles tall.

Luo Feng chose World Trees as his third body firstly because of their abilities. World Trees had the ability of manipulation of space and time. They could control the space and time within a set range. Although it couldn't compare to that of universe masters, the power surged as their strength grew. Rumor had it that the universe knight World Tree could manipulate space and time as skillfully as a universe master.

As for the undying-level and sector-lord-level ones, they were much more inferior. However, they could crush those at the same level as them. World Trees had genes that were thousands of times superior to humans. Thanks to their size, they had overwhelmingly mighty godly bodies with terrific amounts of godly power. Only a few creatures dared to engage in combat with World Trees.

Their manipulation of space and time and their enormous size were only two of the advantages. There was a third advantage. A World Tree could amplify and solidify God Country. Luo Feng hadn't managed to find anyone with a World Tree body. However, he had found that Man Tuo General of the Ancestral God School had once taken a twig from the universe knight World Tree and had planted it in his own God Country. The twig had grown into a giant holy tree named Live Tree.

Live Tree could stabilize God Country. The stabler God Country was, the most pressure it could impose on the enemies trespassing in the God Country. Man Tuo General had used it to lure enemies into his God Country. He'd killed many; it was no secret.

Normally, undying fighters in God Country used the pressure to suppress enemies and make themselves several times stronger. With the Live Tree planted in God Country, however, it could make an undying fighter 100 times more powerful and more efficient in stifling enemies.

The Live Tree is indeed magical, thought Luo Feng. World Trees must be a great deal more magical and would further strengthen God Country.

How could Luo Feng not be tempted?

Besides, World Trees can give me an edge in both space and time. Although I'm following the beast god path, I'll need a breakthrough when I actually become one. Also, I might not even finish on the path of beast god. I'll have the opportunity to follow the path of time with a World Tree.

The idea was to follow the path of time and space and became a universe master.

******

Luo Feng pondered his future beside the gigantic mountain. Although his aim was a World Tree, Luo Feng was also worried. No one had ever done this before, according to the intelligence he'd gathered. But it was possible that someone had hidden the information.

Primal Chaos City Leader once said that there was a limit to my internal world, Luo Feng thought. I can't hold the unique organism in my internal world. The World Tree I chose is at the sector lord level—the weakest one.

A species without a breakthrough in its genes hit its limit in size when it became a peak sector lord. Golden-horned beasts were more than a 600 miles long, and they would remain so even when they became undying fighters, universe knights, and even universe masters. The size would only change if the genes were improved.

Luo Feng's body didn't change after practicing the Nine Volume Manual with his original earthling body; he remained less than six feet tall.

However, the nine World Trees varied in size. The most powerful one had genes thousands of times superior to those of humans, and it was a top-tier special organism. The three undying World Trees were inferior, followed by the five sector lord World Trees.

Even the sector lord World Trees are better than a twig. The twig became a Live Tree, which is not even a World Tree. I'm just not sure whether I can breed that sector lord World Tree or not.

"Eh, it should be okay," Luo Feng told himself.

He was perturbed, but he also had a strong desire. The manipulation of space and time! A 37-million-mile trunk! How mighty that godly power was!

God Country was the core of an undying fighter. How could Luo Feng not covet the World Tree with all its advantages?

Chapter 967: Space Whirlpool

The Nine World Trees are living here together, which makes this a bit tricky, thought Luo Feng. But I only need a leaf of the World Tree. It shouldn't be that big of a problem.

Actually, Luo Feng was also worried about another issue. The dwelling place of those World Trees was as strange and exotic as the mountain beside him. It was a place called Nine Remoteness Space.

Nine Remoteness Space was 12 light years long—apparently not as large as the mountain beside him. However, it was one of the most dangerous areas in the Ancestral God secret region. Luo Feng had already known of several creatures that could rival universe masters. The nine World Trees occupied only a corner of that space, but a few other powerful special organisms lived there as well. That was all the information the intelligence had revealed.

The Ancestral God School instructed the heirs about the eight most dangerous places, and Nine Remoteness Space was one of them. These were the places that could trap even a universe master. Creatures that could rival universe masters, which had been discovered by unlucky heirs, might only be the surface of it.

"I need to be careful," Luo Feng reminded himself. "Even universe knights can be trapped in Nine Remoteness Space forever. I need to step lightly and maintain a low profile. I'll let the Mosha body do the work if I run into dangers because my internal world can recover it even if it is destroyed. However, if my original earthling body is damaged and trapped in one of those dangerous places, I might never recover my true treasures."

Luo Feng was indeed a bit nervous, which was perfectly normal given the reputation of Nine Remoteness Space.

"No risk, no reward," he said. "I need to be cautious. But surely I can get a leaf of the World Tree with my multiple bodies

technique."

Nine Remoteness Space was extremely dangerous, whereas it was visited the most by the heirs. Why was that? Because they were not afraid of death. Throughout history, heirs who couldn't achieve their breakthroughs had resorted to venturing into this dangerous place. Nine Remoteness Space was indeed dangerous, but it contained the most treasures. Even though many heirs met their demise there, many others gained a lot. A random precious object obtained in Nine Remoteness Space could be a true treasure, which was tempting even to universe knights.

There were many more heirs in ages past. Now, there only around 100 million. Of those who had died in other places, most had died in the secret region.

Luo Feng ate something and relaxed. After half an hour, he flew into the depths of the space alongside the mountain. Sometimes he flew, and sometimes he teleported himself. Always, he was careful.

*****

Inside the palace at the peak of Thunder Island.

Primal Chaos City Leader, dressed in a golden cape, stood in front of his palace overlooking the vast Thunder Island. Below was one palace after another. Countless undying gods lived there, and the undying fighters lived at the bottom. There was a mountain in the middle of the island, and along the hillside lived universe knights. Universe masters lived on the top of the mountain. The summit was surrounded by mist, shrouding the peak from those living below.

The palace of Primal Chaos City Leader was at the peak of the mountain. Standing at the top, Primal Chaos City Leader could see all of Thunder Island, including Yu Xiang Mountain floating afar, where his students were being trained and instructed by the powerful ones.

"Can my student acquire part of a World Tree...?" Chaos City Leader mumbled to himself. "He's bold enough to choose the World Tree as his third body. But, on second thought, everyone who wants to be a supreme being is bold. Although it's dangerous, he has the multi-body technique. I don't need to worry about him falling."

"Nine Remoteness Space," he mused. "Even I haven't been there. That place belongs to the Ancestral God School, and many of the places of that school are off-limits to the six major races. The treasures can only be obtained by the heirs of the Ancestral God School."

Nine Remoteness Space was famously dangerous. However, this was not the case for Gigantic Axe Founder.

Gigantic Axe Founder could, by all means, go in and take all the treasures there, which would have infuriated the three ancestral gods. The Ancestral God secret region belonged to the ancestral gods, and many special organisms were owned by the Ancestral God School, along with other treasures. The ancestral gods could certainly have taken them all; instead, they left them there for the students. After all, such treasures were of no use to them.

The heirs were cultivated by the Ancestral God School and were given some special treatment. They would become sub-members of the school. As for the six major races, the Space Beast Alliance, and the Northern Territory Alliance, they were given no chance of getting in.

"Luo Feng," he said. "It all depends on you now. You need power, brains, and luck. Let's see whether your internal world is strong enough to breed the World Tree body."

Primal Chaos City Leader knew that a result would come in a month or two. He wasn't sure if Luo Feng's internal world could breed the World Tree body. The internal world of the golden-horned beast could breed a body that was 100 times stronger than

their original bodies. As for the World Trees at the sector lord level, they were two levels lower than the most powerful one. Perhaps it was just within the limit of Luo Feng's internal world.

"Luck..." said Primal Chaos City Leader. "We shall see whether he has the luck of breeding a World Tree."

Expectations flashed through Primal Chaos City Leader's eyes.

******

Luo Feng was going forward carefully and trying to dodge all the dangerous places. He wouldn't even go to places he thought might hold treasures, as his only target was the World Tree in Nine Remoteness Space. He didn't want to trouble himself. In the Ancestral God secret region, where there were treasures, there was danger.

Sou!

Luo Feng sped up like a flash of light, followed by his macro-detector and micro-detector, constantly scanning for danger around him. He teleported himself only in some safe areas.

0.8 light years away from Luo Feng, there was an area without any celestial bodies. Luo Feng arrived there after flying and teleporting himself for an hour.

"According to my information, there were hidden dangers in this information." Luo Feng looked at the boundless space. "But, alas, this is the safest route, to my knowledge. I still need to pass 12 dangerous areas to arrive at Nine Remoteness Space."

It was impossible to find an absolutely safe route to Nine Remoteness Space. Luo Feng was, after all, still very weak. Many areas that would have been safe for universe knights were hazardous for him. This area was one of them. Universe knights might have flown across it or teleported through it instantly, whereas the farthest Luo Feng could teleport was one lightyear away.

"Careful..." Luo Feng told himself. He used World Projection, which helped him detect the danger around.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

Every time, Luo Feng teleported within the range of World Projection, and each teleportation was tens of millions of miles away. Luo Feng teleported hundreds of times. After teleporting a lightyear away, Luo Feng stopped and started to rest.

"Such short-distance teleportation," Luo Feng said, shaking his head. Ahead of him was still the boundless space.

Weng!

Without warning, a space whirlpool with a diameter of about six thousand miles came into being around Luo Feng. The pressure from the space whirlpool was unbreakable for him.

"Shi Wu Wings!"

Luo Feng opened the wings and tried to drive. With the help of his current level of law comprehension, the complicated Shi Wu Wings were connected by countless threads.

Before, in the outer-region warzone, Luo Feng could only carry out the first form of transformation of Shi Wu Wings. Now, with more and more law threads utilized by Luo Feng, all the edges of the Shi Wu Wings were lengthened and turned golden. The feathers on the wings had previously looked like ordinary feathers with sharp edges. Now, they were long and sharp, like miniature sabers—silver wings with golden edges.

Hua La!

The Shi Wu Wings swung, and the saber-shaped feathers on its edge cut through space. Under the space energy of the Shi Wu Wings, a windy turbulence was formed.

"Break!" Luo Feng shouted.

Trapped in the space whirlpool, Luo Feng struggled to get out.

The space whirlpool was blocked entirely from the outside, and he couldn't teleport himself. His only recourse was to damage the space whirlpool with his Shi Wu Wings.

Peng!

After only two seconds, the space whirlpool faded like smoke. Luo Feng was relieved. However, he was dazed at the sight of his surroundings.

"Where... where am I?"

Luo Feng was surrounded by solid ground covered by all sorts of plants and trees. They all had different colors, and a flowery fragrance drifted through the air. A mountain blocked his view in the distance. The sky above the ground was filled with blue air.

"Better check the universe coordinates," Luo Feng said. He was astonished after checking the coordinates. "I—I'm 300 light years away from the space I just left? That space whirlpool must be a natural portal."

Luo Feng frowned and looked around. That whirlpool had disrupted his plan. Fortunately, according to the coordinates, he was actually closer to Nine Remoteness Space, now. As long as he could get out, it would only take him ten days to arrive at Nine Remoteness Space.

"What is this?" he wondered. "I have no information that describes this place."

He looked around, alert. It was an unidentified area, and he had been transferred here by a space whirlpool that had come out of nowhere. Surely, that had been no accident. It was highly likely that there was danger lurking here.

Both the macro-detector and the micro-detector started to scan the surroundings.

"The space ripple here was completely separated from the outside world," he said, "and that blue air seems to be responsible. I can't

feel any space ripple outside that layer of blue air."

Luo Feng looked up. It was common for certain districts in the secret regions of the universe that could block teleportation.

"Now I'm in trouble."

Chapter 968: Wormhole

While the detector rapidly searched for hidden dangers, Luo Feng stood still, making no reckless movements.

I have two options, thought Luo Feng. First, I can explore this unknown place and find a way out. Second, through the God Country Transportation, I can be sent back to the human race's domain, then to Bauhinia Island, then back to Nine Remoteness Space.

Eyes as sharp as blades, Luo Feng examined his surroundings. It was quiet here. Apart from the beautiful plants, there were no other creatures.

"I'm getting out on my own!" he said. "I can make it if I'm careful. According to the Ancestral God School's briefing for the heirs, this place is not listed as dangerous. I don't want to waste a dozen of days by departing from Bauhinia Island again. By then, I'm afraid I'll need to go through that void area again. What if I were sent to this place a second time?"

Soon, a plethora of data appeared on the screen on Luo Feng's protective sleeve. Luo Feng lowered his head to look at it.

"Everything looks normal," Luo Feng said. He frowned slightly. "Then I'm leaving."

Luo Feng chose a direction and flew across the sky.

******

"A natural wormhole is found," the detector suddenly alerted Luo Feng.

"A natural wormhole?" said Luo Feng.

He had been flying as a beam of light, but he slowed down immediately. He looked at the map displayed on the detector to verify the location and rushed toward the wormhole. After flying

for tens of millions of miles, Luo Feng arrived at a mountain. He stared at the slightly distorted space in front of him.

"A wormhole, here?" he said.

Wormholes were common throughout the universe. Each one connected two places, sometimes spanning vast distances. If one were to step into a wormhole, they would instantly reappear at the opposite end.

For a wormhole to be found in deep space was normal, but it was unusual to see one in the secret region.

"Where does this wormhole lead to?" Luo Feng wondered.

He considered, then came up with an idea. A streak of black air flow flew up and condensed into a muscular man—Luo Feng's Mosha clan body.

"Even if this Mosha body is destroyed," he said, "I can condense another one and send him here via God Country Transportation."

Since Luo Feng was a token gatherer, his soul slaves could easily sense him telekinetically.

The Mosha body was cautious at first, but then he flew into the wormhole.

******

The moment the Mosha body crossed the wormhole, he instantly arrived at another place.

"What?" Mosha body said, gazing at an enormous basin in front of him.

Among the basin was a lake with over 6,000 miles in width. Above the lake floated a cone-shaped peak over 600 miles high.

"A lake? And a floating peak?" Mosha body said. He was a bit surprised to find that he could easily sense the location of his earthling deity. "My earthling deity is probably less than 6 billion miles from here."

The distance between them was so short that Mosha body could reach his earthling deity by teleportation.

******

The deity of Luo Feng continued flying. He had learned about the situations on the other end of the wormhole, but he hadn't rushed to investigate. There were other matters to attend to.

Moments later, the detector alerted him, "Another natural wormhole is found."

"Another one?" Luo Feng was stunned.

He flew toward the location indicated by the detector. This wormhole was in a river. Luo Feng dared not enter the stream recklessly. Instead, he summoned his Mosha body and let him try.

Mosha body dove into the river.

"Nothing special about the water other than its high density," Mosha body quickly confirmed.

Using his strength of a world, Luo Feng condensed a large clay pot and filled it with the water of the river.

"I will study it after leaving this place," he told himself.

His Mosha Body went into the wormhole in the river.

******

The other end of the wormhole was also underwater. Mosha body was stupefied as he rose to the surface of the water and looked around.

"My gosh..."

A cone-shaped peak floated above the vast lake, which was contained within a crater-like basin.

"The first wormhole ended on the shore of the lake," said Mosha body, "while the second ended in the lake. The two wormholes lead to the same place."

Mosha body was at a loss.

******

Bewildered by Mosha body's findings, Luo Feng continued moving ahead and soon found a third wormhole. This time, Mosha body went through the wormhole and discovered that it led to another bank of the lake.

As Luo Feng continued, another wormhole appeared, which led to the surface of the lake. One after another, nine wormholes were discovered. Eventually, the impatient Luo Feng stopped flying. He teleported himself to the lakeside.

"How weird," he said. Standing beside the lake, he surveyed the floating, cone-shaped peak before him. "The nine wormholes all lead here. Maybe this is what makes the dangerous place special."

"10,081 wormholes are found," the detector said.

Luo Feng looked down at the screen on his protective sleeve, wide-eyed. "What?"

The screen indicated the positions of the wormholes. What gave him chills was that the 10,081 wormholes seemed to be arranged like a giant beehive that completely covered the cone-shaped peak. They formed a pattern similar to his Mosha body's life core, which had 10,081 cut surfaces spread with very intricate law engravings that represented the space laws.

"The more unique a place is," said Luo Feng, "the greater the possibility that it contains treasures. And vice versa; a place with treasures is naturally dangerous."

Numerous heirs over time had encountered the same experience. If anyone found treasures at a place without encountering any danger, it was only because great beings of the past had already tackled the hazards.

Luo Feng looked at the cone-shaped peak. He felt that it was the most suspicious, but he couldn't afford to go in by himself. What if

a dangerous and unique life form like the cold whale lived inside the peak, and Luo Feng's trespassing alarmed it? If it swallowed Luo Feng's earthling body, it would be difficult for him to retrieve his Shi Wu Wings and Tower Pearl.

Luo Feng said, "Go find out where these 10,081 wormholes lead to."

Swish!

His Mosha body immediately flew toward one wormhole in the air.

******

After entering the wormhole, Mosha body arrived on the other end swiftly. It was a silent desert about 19 billion miles away from the lake.

Mosha body returned to the lake and went into another wormhole.

As his Mosha body rapidly explored the wormholes, Luo Feng gradually got more familiar with the situation in this mysterious place. All these wormholes led to numerous locations within this strange place. The furthest one was about 75 billion miles away from here. What startled Luo Feng the most was that in three areas, he had found some shattered armor and broken weapons, but no treasures.

"Heirs have special status," he said, holding a piece of broken armor. "They are very likely to possess treasures. These broken and worthless pieces of armor indicate that some life forms, probably heirs, have been here. However, not a single valuable treasure—not even a World Ring—has been left behind... Perhaps some survivors or the natives of this mysterious place have taken away the treasures. I doubt many heirs have been here. If they had been, the information about this place would have been more substantial. If survivors do exist, why don't they send out the

intelligence about this mysterious place?"

Luo Feng considered the matter.

Swish!

Luo Feng drew back hastily. Through a spatial wormhole, he retreated to a location over 6 billion miles away.

"My earthling deity should stay away from this," he concluded. "I will send my Mosha body to explore the place."

******

Mosha body flew toward the cone-shaped peak floating in the air and observed it. According to the detector, there were 10,081 caves densely distributed on the mountain. Since every cave was only 10 or 12 feet high, these caves seemed insignificant compared to the peak.

Swoosh.

Mosha body flew inside one cave.

"Nothing but stones," he said.

As Mosha body grabbed one of the stones, the wall of the cave suddenly filled with streaks of silver light. Mosha body felt like a formidable force had attacked him so fiercely that his body had been shattered to pieces. And then, as black airflow circulated, Mosha body recovered.

"What the heck?" he shouted.Stupefied, Mosha body gazed at the seemingly normal wall. "Every stone is integral to the wall. It's like the wall is... alive. My sector-lord pinnacle energy is somewhat weak. I wonder what would happen if my earthling deity came and picked up the stones."

Mosha body kept moving ahead carefully.

The cave was very serene and deep, and the spatial ripple here felt somewhat unusual. There were no plants to be seen. Just the empty wall within the cave.

After walking for hundreds of miles, Mosha body finally arrived at the central region of the cone-shaped peak. In the middle was a pool divided into five smaller pools. The color of the water in every pool was different, and every pool produced powerful but unique auras, such as the aura of flames and the aura as sharp as gold. Above the five-colored pool were numerous spatial cracks that repeatedly appeared and disappeared.

Enclosed within the spatial cracks—which were arranged like a gigantic, stunning beehive—was a globe-shaped crystal suspended in the air. It had 10,081 cut surfaces, some of which appeared to flow like water while others leapt up like transparent flames or grew like plants.

"Treasure," Mosha body said, staring at the globe-shaped crystal attentively. "But where are the dangers?"

Even an idiot could tell that this atypical crystal was a treasure, and the five-colored pool beneath it was extraordinary. But Mosha body dared not approach the crystal recklessly. It was clear that this mysterious place was unstable; the globe-shaped crystal had created numerous cracks in the area, and if its energy exploded completely, it would destroy Mosha body in an instant.

According to Luo Feng's understanding of the secret region, apart from the danger of the treasure itself, there were usually additional hazards. Cautiously, Mosha body observed the five-colored pool, the crystal globe, the tranquil environment around him, and the entire peak, which seemed to be alive.

Chapter 969: Original Real Treasures

Mosha body observed the five-colored pool and the floating crystal ball. At the same time, inside a canyon 10 billion kilometers away, Luo Feng hid in a cave of the cliff wall, sitting with his legs crossed.

"I'll check where the five-colored pool and crystal ball come from first," said Luo Feng, connected to the virtual universe with his mind.

******

Inside the study room of Luo Feng's manor in Yu Xiang Mountain.

Luo Feng turned on the laptop on the desk and started to search. He uploaded the picture to the internet with his mind.

This was an advantage only humans possessed—the ability to search in the virtual universe whenever they came across danger or unknown treasures. Of course, different humans had different clearance levels. The more mystical the treasures were, the higher the clearance level required. Ever since Luo Feng had become famous under the name of Blade River Emperor, his clearance level had increased higher than the average universe knight.

"Luo Feng! Luo Feng, I've found it!" shouted Babata on Luo Feng's shoulder.

"Huh?" Luo Feng frowned and stared at the screen. He clicked the link on the top, and the virtual universe provided a precise answer to Luo Feng's question.

The five-colored pool, called Five-Colored Abyss Flower, only looked like a pool. However, there was no water inside, and it was composed of five portals leading to the origin point of the universe. It absorbed the five-element original powers and gathered them here. There was normally a "Space Heart" inside the Five-Colored

Abyss Flower.

The crystal ball was the Space Heart and could only be formed after an eternity within Five-Colored Abyss Flower. It had 10,081 facets when it became spherical and required a longer time for it to become solid. When it was becoming solid, there would be an evolution of the five elements on its surface. Only after it became a solid and stable crystal without any space cracks would the crystal be completely matured. The Space Heart was only useful after that.

The Five-Colored Abyss Flower was actually five portals—a special phenomenon in the universe—and it couldn't be moved or taken from its current location. As for the Space Heart, it was one of the ingredients for making original true treasures.

"Original true treasures?" Luo Feng was stupefied, as this was another term he'd never heard of.

It certainly couldn't be considered mediocre if it was a true treasure. His star map, tower pearl, and Shi Wu Wings barely crossed the threshold of true treasures, and they were almost useless to universe masters.

I got lucky, thought Luo Feng. No wonder the Ancestral God Secret Region is considered the most magical secret region.

He immediately ran a virtual search for "original true treasures" and "Space Heart," and a plethora of information was soon displayed. Luo Feng scrolled down.

Original true treasures were original-type true treasures. Great beings could be injected with their energies and transform their bodies into godly bodies, but only after they became undying fighters and triggered the law ocean. It was a once-in-a-lifetime opportunity. With proper training and enhanced power, great beings could also trigger the law ocean and absorb energies.

However, it was far too slow if they did it after becoming undying

fighters. Lots of great beings spent millions of or even hundreds of millions of years to make their breakthrough. Although they could only absorb the energies slowly, they could improve their godly bodies continuously.

Nevertheless, it was common for great beings to burn their undying powers while fighting, especially when the fights were matters of life and death. Once the undying power was burned, it would take a long time to recover, given that they had cultivated for hundreds of millions of years. Fortunately, there were multitudes of treasures in the universe that could help them quickly gain back the undying power, and they might even revive the undying fighters and restore their strengths.

The treasures were useful for undying fighters. Universe knights, however, had unrelenting godly bodies, and once 30 percent or 50 percent was gone, it a huge number of treasures were required for them to recover, which could be tens of thousands of times more than for undying fighters—if not more. Some universe knights spent their entire fortunes and still failed to buy enough treasures.

In the case of battles waged between races and universe masters, it was even more terrifying. A 50 percent loss of a universe master's godly body was a loss for the entire race, even for a peak race like the human race. If Primal Chaos City Leader lost one of his bodies, it would break humanity's heart, given how much energy was required to restore a body belonging to the Primal Chaos City Leader.

Few treasures could restore a universe knight's power. For some universe overlords and universe masters, a specific type of true treasures was exceptionally important: original true treasures.

These treasures were called original true treasures because they were valued by universe overlords and universe masters. They were not used for defense or attack. Instead, they were used by great beings to trigger the law ocean. It was 1,000 times, 10,000 times or even 1 million times faster for great beings to prime the

energies in the law ocean, and different levels of original true treasures improved the efficiency at different degrees.

It would take 1 million years for a universe master to fully recover if he was severely injured. An original true treasure, however, could make the energy-absorbing process 100,000 times faster, meaning it would only take a universe master ten years to recover. Ten years was a blink of an eye for a universe master.

Even lower-tier original true treasures, which could only make the process thousands of times faster, were highly desired by the universe overlords. With this type of treasure, burning 10 percent of the godly bodies during a fight was nothing, as it would take a short time to recover if only a small portion of the godly body was turned. With the help of an original true treasure, the body could be restored in no time. These treasures allowed great beings to burn their undying power without worries.

It was clear how valuable these treasures were, but the ingredients required to make them were scarce. Each ingredient could only originate under certain conditions and in special environments throughout the universe, and it took a long time for them to develop and form.

The core ingredients required to make an original true treasure could be divided into several tiers. The lower tier included gold, wood, water, fire, ground, wind, thunder and light, while the upper-tier included time and space. The top-tier included fusion of space and gold and fusion of wood and sky.

Space Heart was one of the high-level ingredients that connected the space law ocean. A Space Heart, together with some additional ingredients, could produce an original true treasure.

******

Inside the floating mountain.

Mosha body stared at the crystal ball, thinking, Original true

treasures are normally in the hands of universe overlords and universe masters. This Space Heart is more deluxe, and it might be as valuable as my Shi Wu Wings.

Original true treasures were demanded by the more powerful beings, as the weaker ones could only absorb undying power slowly. As for universe matters, they could absorb undying power terrifically fast, a bit like a whale swallowing everything in its path. However, compared to their unrelenting godly bodies, the average absorbing speed was mediocre. With original true treasures, they could increase their amplification by thousands of times. It was like recklessly robbing energies from the law ocean.

Mosha body shook its head. "I never expected the five-colored pool to not be a real pool at all. I can't get anything out of that. But that crystal ball is a Space Heart."

Mosha body looked at the crystal ball surrounded by space cracks and saw blurry flames and flowing currents of water on it.

"According to the description, it hasn't matured yet," said Mosha body. "It should be completely solidified after maturing. Then the cracks will disappear. I can only take it after it matures."

Mosha body was worried.

How long should I wait? Should I just give it up and move on?

This was a core ingredient of an original true treasure. It was as priceless as the Shi Wu Wings or the star map. How could he give it up?

******

As Mosha body anxiously wondered when the Space Heart would mature...

Sou!

A towering figure appeared on the lake below the floating mountain. It had a huge snake tail and the upper body of a human

being. However, its head was shaped like a triangular prism and bore three faces—all of them hideous by human standards. It had two muscular arms covered in scales, one of which held a black scepter.

"It's been 3,000 eras since I discovered the Five-Colored Abyss Flower, and the Space Heart is already formed. Many whirlpools have been formed in the surrounding space, and scores of heirs have tried to get in. But all were killed... by me."

"I need to be careful," said the towering figure. "I must come here for an inspection every day and kill any heir to make sure the news won't be leaked. Although most heirs wouldn't recognize a Space Heart even if they saw one, words would still spread. They might attract some universe overlords and even guarding beast gods. After all, with the chance of acquiring an original true treasure, everyone would want to come here. But it belongs to me and me only. My surviving abilities and fighting power will be largely increased after I harvest it. I won't need to worry about burning my godly body anymore."

It checked the cone-shaped mountain first, then used its undying power to probe all 10,081 wormholes. If it found any heirs, it would kill them.

"Time to see if my Space Heart has matured yet."

Black specter in hand, the towering figure flew to the floating, cone-shaped mountain.

Chapter 970: Sudden Changes

In the central region of the floating cone-shaped mountain, Mosha body stared at the Space Heart, a crystal ball—an ingredient for original true treasures—and had a value comparable to such low-level true treasures as the Shi Wu Wings. However, because the crystal's surfaces were still displaying the five elements and the surrounding spatial cracks came into being and vanished continuously, it meant that the crystal ball hadn't fully matured yet.

"When on earth will it mature?" Mosha body wondered aloud, a bit apprehensive.

It was difficult for him to give up, but it might take as long as 1,000 years for it to mature.

"Waiting here for 1,000 years would be a small price to pay if I could obtain such a true treasure material," Mosha body said to himself. "Or I could head to Nine Remoteness Space and arrange for a soul slave to watch the crystal here."

******

While Luo Feng hesitated, the towering, three-faced figure flew into one of the 10,081 caves. The deep, dark, quiet cave meandered for hundreds of miles. Shrinking his godly body and shaking his snake-tail, the great being flew into the depths of the cave.

The great being's three ferocious faces were full of anticipation. "I can't wait any longer," he said. "My Space Heart... please mature quickly."

Swish!

The great being dove into the central region of the mountain. The moment his godly body enlarged to its original size, the great being's three faces gaped in astonishment at the sight of an undying-level-heir from the Ancestral God School standing beside

the five-colored pool. At a glance, the knight of another race recognized this as one of the heirs of Bauhinia Island.

"Heir!" it bellowed.

Mosha body had assumed the appearance and simulated the breathing rhythm of one of the heirs. The knight of another race couldn't tell that Mosha body had shapeshifted into an heir.

"What?" said Mosha body, then turned around and looked. His eyes widened, dumbfounded. "A universe knight!"

Because the universe knight had concealed its breathing, Mosha body hadn't noticed his presence until the knight had reached the mountain center.

The knight's three faces grew more savage as Mosha body looked at him. The knight was furious to see an heir in the cone-shaped mountain. Had the heir conveyed the information to anyone? Usually, heirs wouldn't divulge the location of such a unique treasure, but there was the risk that even after he killed the heir in front of him, the news could be disclosed if the heir was revived.

"Die!" the universe knight roared. "Soul control! Destroy and kill him!"

The knight turned his head fiercely. Among his three faces, a single green face stared at Mosha body and deployed the soul control technique. By doing this, the knight could completely eradicate the chance of the information being leaked.

A virtualized godly force attacked Mosha body. Unaffected, Mosha body flew toward the five-colored pool like a gust of wind. In an instant, he had arrived at the space between the five-colored pond and the Space Heart above it. Standing there, Mosha body felt the essences of metal, wood, water, fire, and earth springing upward and converging into the Space Heart over his head.

"If you try to kill me, I will self-destruct," Mosha body roared furiously at the knight. "Surely you realize what will happen if I

explode above the Five-Colored Abyss Flower."

"Stop!" The knight grew so frightened that the eyes of his three faces widened in anxiety. He knew the situation was dire. Usually, heirs at the undying level would not know the secrets of original true treasures, yet he had encountered an heir that was aware of the mysteries of the Five-Colored Abyss Flower and the Space Heart.

"Do not self-destruct!" said the knight anxiously.

Previously, the knight had only exerted soul control upon Mosha body to prevent him from leaking information. He hadn't tried to kill him with godly force for fear that the dominant godly force would affect the Five-Colored Abyss Flower.

The environment around the Five-Colored Abyss Flower was unique, but the self-detonation of an emperor-level-undying would be enough to lacerate the space, thus damaging the Five-Colored Abyss Flower. Although it would recover gradually over a long time, the Space Heart it had been creating would no longer be able to absorb energy.

"How is this possible?" said the knight. "He is unaffected by my soul control. How is he unaffected?"

The knight was vexed. When ordinary heirs dared to threaten him, he killed them by using soul attack. But since the heir in front of him could completely withstand his soul control, perhaps an attack from his godly force would also be futile.

******

As his Mosha body confronted the universe knight, Luo Feng's earthling deity, lurking in a cave 6 billion miles away, was stunned.

"A knight from another race," Luo Feng said, frowning. "I'm going to leave some tokens here and depart from this place for the moment."

Without hesitation, Luo Feng threw a Spatial Ring, which had been disguised as a stone, amid the many rocks in the cave. Then he immediately flew downward, isolated an energy ripple through the micro-detector, and had his slaves boot the God Country Transportation.

As the vague golden rays lit up, God Country Transportation was ready. Luo Feng stepped into it and was shuttled to the distant God Country.

******

In the central region of the floating cone-shaped mountain.

Hovering between the five-colored pool and the Space Heart, Mosha body looked at the knight who stood beside the five-colored pool.

Boom!

Suddenly, the optical computer on the protective sleeve of Mosha body's right arm exploded. Meanwhile, a dominant godly force suppressed Mosha body.

"Heir!" Instead of being anxious or furious, the knight had grown unconcerned. Looking at Mosha body, the knight said, "As an undying fighter, you can resist my soul control. Good for you. But, you are too stupid. You think you can threaten me by blowing yourself up? That might have worked while I was unprepared, but you won't be able to fight back now that I've had a bit more time!"

Buzz!

A membrane-like guarding shield, composed of and containing mighty godly force, coagulated above the five-colored pool.

"Do you think your self-destruction can destroy my godly-force protection?" The knight was very confident. "Besides, the receiver of your optical computer on your protective sleeve has been ruined by me. Hah! An heir probably has only one receiver bestowed by the guarding beast god. Unless you have a backup receiver, you

won't be able to enter the World of Glory. The moment I found you, I went into World of Glory to supervise you, for fear that you might disseminate the news about this place immediately. But you didn't. I'm not sure whether you are stupid or kind."

Despite the fact that he was being constrained by the formidable force, Mosha body was not flustered. "You destroyed my World of Glory receiver, then guarded the Five-Colored Abyss Flower." Mosha body flashed a smile. "But do you think I am that witless?"

The knight was stupefied. Indeed, the heir's behaviors seemed unwise. Every heir was a talented fighter. How could this one have made such rookie mistakes?

"But you didn't connect to the World of Glory, nor did you send out the information," said the knight. "If you were connected to the World of Glory, I would have spotted you once you appeared in the open air square."

"You may have ruined my World of Glory receiver," said Mosha body, "but I still have a virtual universe receiver."

"Virtual universe?" The knight was stunned. "The virtual universe of the humans?"

"Very good." Mosha body smiled. "The instant I found you, I had left behind numerous messages in the virtual universe and set up the conditions to send. The messages will send the moment I become disconnected from the virtual universe. In that case, my friends and the super beings of my race will become aware of my disconnection."

The three faces of the knight were growing increasingly ferocious. He gritted his teeth.

Although Mosha body had shapeshifted into an heir of a race different from the human race, he could still possess a virtual universe receiver.

No matter how high the costs were, many other races had placed

information networks within the virtual universe. That was because only messages from the virtual universe could be sent to any domain in the universe. Therefore, it was entirely reasonable for a peerless talent from another race—probably controlling a human slave—to carry an anonymous account receiver.

The knight glared at Mosha body. "What do you want? Tell me."

"My life is in your hands," said Mosha body, stalling for time. "Even if you give me some treasures, you will kill me immediately by the time you get the Space Heart. How can I trust you?"

******

In fact, when Mosha body found the knight, he planned to dive into the five-colored pool to escape. Thanks to his research in the virtual universe, Luo Feng had uncovered some secrets of the Five-Colored Abyss

Flower. There were five abysses in the Five-Colored Abyss Flower. If Mosha body dove into them, the abysses would transport him. However, since the Land of Origin would reject Luo Feng, his Mosha body could leave this place via the abysses. Normally, no universe knights—not even this knight of another race—would know the secrets behind the Five-Colored Abyss Flower.

But just as Luo Feng was about to execute his plan, he had changed his mind. For just as his Mosha body had flown into the space between the Five-Colored Abyss Flower and the Space Heart, Luo Feng had discovered something astonishing... and exhilarating!

The Life Crystal inside his Mosha body began emitting buzzing sounds.

The Life Crystal also had 10,081 surfaces, which had intricate space law engravings. The Life Crystal seemed to be resonating with the Space Heart above it as another bizarre form of energy

transmitted into the Life Crystal and slowly transformed it.

Luo Feng had never heard of such a circumstance before, but it seemed beneficial to him. Both the Life Crystal and the Space Heart had 10,081 surfaces. They could both resonate with the Land of Origin and the law ocean, though the powers they contained were different. The resonance of the Life Crystal could make Mosha body's space law comprehension dozens of times stronger than it currently was. As a high-level material, the legendary Space Heart—once shaped into an original true treasure—could absorb the godly force 10,000 times faster than it could now.

Apart from their size differences, they were distinct in quality. A sector-lord-level Life Crystal could be easily destroyed by an undying fighter, while the Space Heart indestructible.

However, peculiar changes started to occur as Mosha body appeared beneath the Space Heart. Under the resonance between the Life Crystal and the Space Heart, energy was continuously transmitted into the Life Crystal. It was because of these changes that Mosha body talked to the knight to buy himself some time.

The knight opened his three mouths and roared ferociously. Three voices echoed in the mountain. "Damn it! Tell me, heir! What exactly do you want?"

"Let me think," Mosha body said with a frown.

Chapter 971: Birth

"I know my power very well," Mosha body told the knight from another race standing beside the five-colored pool. "I don't intend to take the Space Heart by force, and I don't want to die, either. But how can I be sure you're not going to kill me?"

The knight's faces were a bit twisted. Suddenly, it said, "We can form an adventure team. As long as we're in the same team, we can't kill each other. Otherwise, we will be hunted down by the Ancestral God School."

"Did you forget that my sensor for the World of Glory is already broken?" Mosha body said. "No."

"Damn it!" the knight bellowed in spite of itself.

Nothing could work. What could it possibly do?

"Knight, give me a plan that can guarantee my survival, and I won't say anything to anyone," Mosha body said. "I'll even volunteer to guard the Space Heart until it matures."

Mosha body kept talking to the knight while thinking about his internal world. The Life Crystal and the Space Heart... One was small while the other was huge. One had the energy of a peak sector lord while the other was powerful enough to be the core of a true treasure. One was only an ordinary creature of the Mosha clan while the other only formed after the Five-Colored Abyss Flower absorbed the energy from the land of origin.

Weng! Weng!

The energies resonated as they were transferred into the Life Crystal. These energies were the essence of the Space Heart, the essence that had been cultivated for a long time, and the root of a core of a true treasure. However, they were now continuously being transferred into the Life Crystal, and growing with each passing second. The Life Crystal expanded, shrank, expanded, and

shrank again. Each time, it was fundamentally, radically changed.

The root of Mosha body was the Life Crystal. Normally, one couldn't go further after becoming a peak sector lord unless it became an undying fighter. However, its Life Crystal kept changing, resulting in a leap of life level—just as Luo Feng practiced the Nine-Volume Manual, which improved both his original earthling body and the golden-horned beast body even after they had reached peak sector-lord level.

Humans had their own ways to improve their genes, like using blood river crystals. Similarly, Mosha lives had their own ways of improving their genes. However, it was more demanding, and thus more difficult for them to do it. Besides, Mosha creatures were rare in the universe, and the secret to change was only known to the seniors of the Mosha clan. Few supreme beings of the other races knew about it.

Hua! Hua! Hua!

Hong! Hong! Hong!

Like waves crashing against a shoreline, the energies stored in the Space Heart continued transferring. And as the Life Crystal transformed, the amount of energy it could hold increased as well.

Gradually, after repeated expanding and shrinking, a golden engraving appeared on the Life Crystal, and slowly, more engravings appeared as if gracefully painted by an artist's practiced hand. The more energies it absorbed, the more engravings came into being. There were already engravings on the Life Crystal, and the second set was more intricate than the previous set.

Mosha body tried to hide his joy, feeling himself evolving. Externally, he was still talking to the universe knight from another race.

"Okay, how about this—?" the knight started to say, but it didn't finish the thought. It looked up in shock.

Mosha body felt something weird on top of his head. He looked up too and saw the 10,081 space cracks surrounding the Space Heart suddenly wink out and disappear forever.

"Huh?" said the knight.

From a distance, Luo Feng saw the energies in the Space Heart simmering. It had been stable for hundreds of millions of years, but now it was starting to destabilize after losing most of its energy. It looked deadlier now than before.

"The space cracks have disappeared?" The knight looked at the Space Heart with energies simmering inside. "It must have matured. Finally, it's matured! The Space Heart is mine now! I don't need to talk with this goddamn heir anymore!"

Sou!

The knight flew toward the Space Heart and tried to grab it.

Ka!

The Space Heart trembled, and a crack showed up on its surface, which dazed the knight. He looked at the Space Heart, stupefied.

"What's happening?" the knight said, staring at the Space Heart.

His knowledge of the Space Heart was based purely on research; he had never seen a real one other than this one, let alone one that was maturing. He had seen the space cracks disappear, which should have been an indication of its maturity. He was perplexed, but he suspected that a mature Space Heart wasn't supposed to be this way.

Kakakaka—!

More and more cracks appeared on the crystal.

"No, no!" The knight grew concerned, but he could do nothing about it.

Soon, the crystal ball and its 10,081 sections were covered with cracks. And then, energies from the Space Heart gushed out. It

shone upon the entire mountain like a sun.

The knight was bewildered but still had hope. "Maybe it is going to die first—before it can be reborn. The energies are so extraordinary that they tremble the very space around us! The Space Heart is indeed powerful."

On the contrary, Mosha body could feel the Life Crystal in its body morphing, and new engravings were carved on the Life Crystal more and more rapidly. While the Space Heart was covered with cracks, a complete and complex set of engravings was already formed on the Life Crystal. The engravings gave out a golden light.

There were two sets of engravings on Mosha body. One set was natural, and the other set was newly formed.

Just when the Life Crystal in Mosha body couldn't evolve any further, and the set of engravings was complete, the energies from the Space Heart stopped transferring. The last remaining energies gushed out of the Space Heart. This both perplexed and lifted the spirits of the three-faced knight.

"It looks like it has reached its terminal power, and this is its last ray!" said the knight joyfully. "The evolution is complete!"

But Mosha body knew exactly what had happened. He could feel the full weight of the substantial energy had been transferred to him in that short period of time. Mosha body felt transformed—at once with his surroundings. Before, the relationship between Mosha body and the surrounding space was like a fish in a river. Now, he had become a drop of water in an ocean; he had become a part of the space.

I must study into the secret of this body, thought Luo Feng, controlling Mosha body from a distance. It seems that the Space Heart is going to crumble.

Luo Feng didn't dare to stay longer. "Guard the Space Heart as long as you want," said Mosha, gazing at the Five-Colored Abyss

Flower below. "I'll leave you alone now."

The three-faced knight had already been guarding the Five-Colored Abyss Flower with his undying power, as he was afraid that the heir would self-destruct and damage it. However, he stopped caring about it after the cracks disappeared and seemed to mature.

Sou!

Mosha body dove into one of the golden ponds and vanished.

"Huh?" The knight from another race was stunned, glancing at the spot where Mosha body had disappeared. "He... vanished? Right in the middle of the Five-Colored Abyss Flower? Did he die or just flee?"

His information was not as nearly as detailed as Luo Feng's. The knight only knew that the Five-Colored Abyss Flower provided energies to the Space Heart. Little did he know was that it was actually five portals.

"Whatever," the knight said. "The Space Heart has already matured."

The knight looked at the Space Heart that was emanating forceful energies with hope.

The Space Heart! It shone so brilliantly!

Peng!

Suddenly, the Space Heart burst like glass, and the fragments vanished.

"What—how? How?" the three-faced knight stammered in disbelief. "How is it possible? How could it break?"

Surely that heir had nothing to do with it. He had been watching him the whole time, and the heir hadn't even touched the Space Heart.

"I didn't know a Space Heart will break!" the knight said. "Was it

because the heir dove into the Five-Colored Abyss Flower, causing a reaction?"

The knight looked down at Five-colored Abyss Flower. He couldn't think of any other reason.

"No, no..." he said sorrowfully. "How could this happen?"

The knight didn't want to believe it. He had been waiting for 3,000 eras for the Space Heart to mature. During the latest era, he had found that the Space Heart was formed. Since then, he had come here every day and inspected the mountain to make sure no other great beings would steal it.

After all, a Space Heart was a core ingredient to make an original true treasure, and it was as valuable as some other true treasures. Any true treasure—or any core ingredient to make one—was highly sought after by universe knights. He had been waiting for it for such a long time but had gotten nothing in the end.

"The heir did rush into the Five-Colored Abyss Flower," said the knight, "but that was after the cracks had already disappeared. The Space Heart had matured!" The knight shook his head. "Why? What caused it to break?"

The knight's pain and exasperation were too much. Its three faces roared simultaneously.

"Howl!"

The forceful undying power burst out of the caves in the mountain, and countless pillars of light erupted outward.

Chapter 972: Talent Techniques

The jubilant Mosha body didn't bother to care about the knight's reaction.

Swoosh!

The instant Mosha body dove into the golden pool, he sensed the distortion in space. He had entered an abysmal passage filled with dominant Godly Force of Gold and leading him rapidly to the Land of Origin—the Ocean of Gold Laws.

Boom!

As Mosha body was about to reach the Land of Origin, an irresistible power from the universe suppressed him and "kicked" him out of the passage.

******

Mosha body rolled, then stood in the air. He was in a void. In the distance were some irregular astronomical objects, including some giant, desolate meteorites and floating pieces of broken continents.

"Where am I?"

Mosha body immediately checked the universe coordinates and was pleasantly surprised when he saw the data. He had been ejected while on his way to the Land of Origin and had instead arrived at a void only a few light years away from the place that had been breeding the Space Heart.

"I'm several light years away from that mysterious place," he said, "but luckily, this is close to Nine Remoteness Space. Ha! Not only did I waste no time, but I actually saved a lot of time. Now, regarding this transformation..."

Mosha body was filled with joy. He couldn't wait any longer and began to examine the changes in himself carefully. Even if he could somehow acquire the Space Heart itself, he still wouldn't have

been as exhilarating as he was at this moment. After all, the applications of Space Heart would have been limited until Luo Feng's strength reached a certain level. But as Mosha body clenched his fists, the formidable power it produced trembled the void.

"Break!"

Mosha body casually swung his right hand, which formed a claw shape, and tore through the void.

"Haha! This power is mighty..." he said. "And awesome!"

Previously, Mosha body had only had the strength of a pinnacle sector lord. His strength was so weak that he could only fight against official-level undying fighters with the help of his profound law comprehension.

"I am 100 times more precise than before!" Mosha body said, his eyes bright with excitement.

What was the reaction accuracy of a great being? Mosha body was sure that his strength had reached a stage 100 times stronger than the force of a sector lord. Among the billions of lineages in the universe, even the space beasts from the Twelve Pinnacle Lineages, like the golden-horned beast, were only ten times stronger than the force of a sector lord. Now that Mosha body had gained power 100 times stronger than that of a sector lord, he had reached the level of an average special organism.

The Space Heart had elevated him to the level a special organism. Of course, such a transformation could be attributed to Mosha body's life characteristics. The weaker the Mosha body was, the greater the effect the Space Heart could exert upon him during his transformation.

"As far as I know, it is complicated to enhance the life gene level," Mosha body said to himself. "Even by using all kinds of treasures, few great beings from the human race can improve ten times. The

same probably applies to the Mosha clan. I can't believe my Mosha body has enhanced 100 times. But perhaps this should come as no surprise. A Space Heart is, after all, the core of original true treasures."

In fact, within the Mosha clan, the great beings on the senior level would use such life gene level enhancing treasures as the Space Heart to improve themselves. The effects on them, however, were not as pronounced as they were on Luo Feng. Perhaps only a once-in-a-billion-year, incredibly talented sector lord would be eligible to use such treasures.

Mosha body deployed his teleportation.

Swish!

Mosha body blended into the void and reappeared 60 million miles away.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

He kept teleporting himself to different places.

"Wow! My teleportation doesn't induce changes in space ripples? Hah!"

As soon as Mosha body stopped, he couldn't help but laugh heartily within the void. World level teleportation was normally like diving into space ripples rigidly and reappearing in the distance. Other great beings could easily sense the unusual changes of the space ripples. For instance, world levels were easy to be found once they teleported within the Ice Hell. However, things worked differently for universe knights. With thorough control of space laws, they could blend into space ripples seamlessly without causing any unusual changes. And when they reappeared in the distance, the space ripples would remain as expected. For example, when Luo Feng had stolen the black metal board and the Purple Knight appeared behind him via teleportation, Luo Feng hadn't been able to notice his presence. A universe knight could teleport

over 1,000 light years without causing the slightest fluctuation, whereas world level teleportation would induce abnormal changes by teleporting one light year or so. This was the distinction between the two kinds of teleportation!

"My teleportation no longer invokes changes in the space ripples," Mosha body said, delighted. "I have never felt so closely connected to space as I do now. I felt like I was integral to space when I was in the central region of the cone-shaped mountain, but that intimate feeling has become clearer as I teleport at this moment."

Mosha body integrated himself entirely into the space ripples and reappeared in the distance. If Mosha body had been favored by space before, he was now what would be considered a "space special organism," who could seamlessly integrate himself into space 10,000 times better than before.

"The distance of the space ripples that I can sense has also changed," said Mosha body joyfully. "I feel like I can teleport over 100 light years without causing the slightest fluctuations. Haha!"

Mosha body was exuberant. But he also knew what he had achieved was to be expected, for he had completely absorbed the essence of the Space Heart, thus becoming an incredible special organism. Special organisms like Silver Eyes were not only enormous in size but had numerous fascinating methods.

"Let me see the last method," said Mosha body with a bit of anticipation in his eyes.

When the Life Crystal imprinted the second set of law engravings, Mosha body realized that he had gained another talent technique. Since he had never exerted this talent technique before and was not clear on its true power, but the talent techniques of special organisms were unique and dominant. If Luo Feng's gene-level transformation—a result of cultivating from the Nine Volume Manual—could be considered artificial transmutation, then Mosha

body's conversion was more like natural evolution, which fit more comfortably within universe law!

No matter how much Luo Feng's earthling deity and the golden-horned beast improved themselves, they would not attain another talent technique. But since Mosha body's life crystal had been imprinted with a set of law engravings, he had gained one more talent technique.

"Begin," said Mosha body and activated the new set of law engravings inside himself.

Buzz!

Instantly, everything within 6,000 miles of Mosha body was controlled by him. How fascinating it was to have absolute control over the surrounding space.

Eyes filled with excitement, Mosha body said in a low voice, "I am space... Space is me... This is my domain!"

The moment he deployed this talent technique, a large number of messages sent from the law engravings appeared in his head. This new talent technique was called "Domain!"

"Deity," Mosha body said.

Buzz!

Suddenly, vague golden lights appeared in the void. Amid the golden lights stepped a figure. It was Luo Feng in silver armor and silver wings. Mosha body and Luo Feng looked at each other and smiled.

The deity of Luo Feng brought out Ji Hong Emperor from the World Ring.

"Greetings, my lords," Ji Hong Emperor greeted Luo Feng's deity and Mosha body. Due to the connection of their souls, he felt that both of them were his masters.

"Lock down the surrounding space within one million miles," Luo

Feng's deity commanded.

"Yes," Ji Hong Emperor answered respectfully.

As the godly force diffused, the surrounding space locked swiftly. The regular space ripples had paused.

"My lord, the space ripples within one million miles have been locked," said Ji Hong Emperor with respect. "Teleportation is prohibited within this range."

The deity of Luo Feng looked at his Mosha body and laughed.

Eyes closed, Mosha body once again enjoyed deploying his newly-gained talent technique, "domain." Once he exerted domain, he could thoroughly dominate the space 6,000 miles around him.

Mosha body revealed a smile.

Swish!

He vanished and reappeared 3,000 miles away.

"What?!" Ji Hong Emperor stared at him with surprise.

As Mosha body flickered, he appeared 6,000 miles away.

Swish! Swish! Swish!

Mosha body shifted his locations continuously, moving freely—as if the space lockdown didn't exist.

"How is he able to teleport?" Ji Hong Emperor asked, utterly bewildered.

The principle of teleportation was to blend into space ripples and reappear in a far-off location via the space ripples. Once space ripples were locked, it meant that no one could teleport. Not even universe knights could violate this law. Before using this talent technique, Mosha body could easily integrate himself into space ripples without causing any fluctuations, but it had been impossible for him to vanish under the circumstances of space lockdown.

"This is domain," said Mosha body. "In domain, space is me, and I am space. I am integral to space. By blending into space, I can instantly turn into space anywhere within 6,000 miles, then reappear."

Mosha body was full of joy. It was not teleportation that he had just displayed, but a new, two-step transportation process. Firstly, he turned himself into the space with a range of 6,000 miles! Secondly, he changed himself back into Mosha body, with the ability to choose any spot within the 6,000-mile range to reappear. Domain was an incredible method that was unrestricted by any lockdown. Within the domain, Mosha body could be anywhere.

"The Talent Techniques of special organisms are marvelous," mused Luo Feng. "Like the 'endless reincarnation' of Silver Eyes. Once glared at by his eyes, many great beings would die. Another example is Zhu Chong Emperor, a unique organism that has even destroyed universe knights. His talent techniques must be even more terrifying." Luo Feng nodded. "Mosha body's new talent, 'domain,' is not a method for striking attacks directly. If he wants to attack, he still needs to rely on law comprehension and creating techniques. But domain is, indeed, a top-notched method for assassination, escape, and adventure. Tut. With this talent technique, Mosha body is bound to be an assassin!"

Chapter 973: Nine Remoteness Space

Mosha body was not as skilled in attacking as some special organisms like Silver Eye. However, it excelled at assassinating and ambushing.

Sou!

Mosha body disappeared instantly, becoming a metal sheet within the interlayer of Luo Feng armor.

"I can now go anywhere with my Mosha body," said Luo Feng.

The prospect was exhilarating. After all, Mosha body was almost as good at teleportation as ordinary universe knights, and "domain" was a technique that couldn't be gained through training.

"It would have taken me roughly ten days to arrive at Nine Remoteness Space before, whereas now I can arrive there in half a day. My Mosha body can teleport 100 light years away and bypass the dangerous places."

Luo Feng waved his hand and took Ji Hong Emperor back into his World Ring. Then he vanished into space.

Few dangerous places were 100 light years long, even in the Ancestral God Secret Region. Even if there were, Luo Feng could easily dodge them.

******

After half a day.

Luo Feng appeared, opened his silver wing, and looked upon the area before him. On the surface, Nine Remoteness Space looked like a boundless water world.

"Nine Remoteness Space," Luo Feng murmured. "Hard to imagine that several creatures with universe-master-level power are living in this 12-lightyear-diameter region—in addition to the

innumerable valuables that have been attracting heirs here for generations. Unfortunately, most of them failed and died. I hope fortune will be with me in my quest for the World Tree."

Desire and aggression filled Luo Feng's heart. He would have a much brighter future if he could have a World Tree as his third body.

The technique known as "manipulation of time and space," the stabilization of God Country, and the enormous godly power... all of which, Luo Feng craved.

Sou.

Luo Feng vanished and teleported into Nine Remoteness Space.

******

It was quiet and dark in the mountainous valley. There were no plants or trees on the mountains, only rocks. The only thing that brightened the mountains was a waterfall flowing all the way from the top of the mountain to the lake. There, the water flowed outward in different directions via babbling creeks and streams.

Sou!

Luo Feng appeared in his silver armor.

"Finally, I've arrived," Luo Feng said, looked around. He saw the desolate rocks and smiled. "It's Rock Island!"

Although Nine Remoteness Space was filled with danger, there were some safe places where heirs could land without concern, and Rock Island was one of them. Nobody had ever found any danger on the island, and no one had ever been attacked by the terrifying beings of Nine Remoteness Space there.

"Desolation implies safety," he muttered, "and there's nothing but water and rocks here."

Sou!

Luo Feng flew up like a flash of silver light. As he flew, he looked

down and spotted pieces of broken armor and scattered bodies.

"Remains of heirs," he whispered. He shook his head and sighed. "I presume that the heirs who died here were killed by other heirs."

Although Rock Island was the safest place in Nine Remoteness Space, it did not offer protection against fellow heirs; heirs killing each other for valuables was common.

Luo Feng flew more than 60 million miles. Flying over the tallest mountain, he took in the mesmerizing view from afar.

"Breathtaking," Luo Feng gasped.

He landed and stood on the top of the mountain's peak, surveying the boundless ocean around the island. The water in the ocean was sometimes blue and sometimes purple. Suddenly, it became red, then transparent. As he watched, it turned golden, silver, grey, and blue, in that order. The color was constantly changing, giving it a magical appearance.

"Nine Remoteness Ocean," Luo Feng said.

Nine Remoteness Space was mainly a limitless ocean containing islands of varying size. Some aboriginal residents lived on these landforms, and fearsome beings like World Trees inhabited others. One island, in particular, was colossal and had been named "Tree Island" by the heirs.

Rock Island was tiny and one of the most commonly visited islands on Nine Remoteness Ocean. Tree Island was much larger and was ranked among the top ten largest islands of Nine Remoteness Ocean.

Nine Remoteness Ocean is enormous but perilous, Luo Feng thought. The islands notwithstanding, even the ocean itself is terrifying. Especially the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. Rumor has it that there's almost no way to get out if one becomes trapped in the whirlpool.

Luo Feng gazed afar. Based on the coordinates, Tree Island lay in

that direction. However, it was too distant to see from here.

"I need to use my Mosha body again." Luo Feng nodded and smiled. "Even if my Mosha body fails, I can breed it again."

Sou!

Mosha body appeared, and Luo Feng teleported himself, following Mosha body. They crossed Nine Remoteness Ocean without difficulty and soon reached Tree Island.

"I'll just wait here." Luo Feng's original body nodded and flew into one of the caves in the mountain. He turned on the micro-detector and hid himself.

******

In the sky.

Mosha body stood in the air and stared at the massive island hundreds of millions of miles away.

"Beautiful," he said. "Rock Island is ugly by comparison. What a pity. So magnificent, yet so dangerous."

Mosha body squinted to look at the awesome scenery on the island. There were plants and trees of all sorts, and flowers of all colors were blossoming. The view was spectacular.

The most eye-catching object was an emerald-colored tree whose crown was a vast, luxurious canopy. Its leaves sparkled like delicately carved jades. It was incredibly vivid and dominated the plants around it.

"The most powerful World Tree," said Mosha body. "A universe-knight-level special organism that can rival a universe master. There are nine World Trees in total. He is the most powerful one."

It was 360 million miles tall, and its crown had a diameter of over half a billion miles. Its crown alone was larger than Rock Island, and together with its glowing, jade-like trunk, it was a sight to behold.

"Three undying World Trees, and five sector-lord-level World Trees," muttered Mosha body, surveying the eight World Trees that surrounded the most powerful one.

The taller ones were at the undying level, and the short ones were at the sector lord level. Even the sector-lord-level trees were 40 million miles tall—much taller than any other known creatures.

"There seem to be many typical flowers and grasses on Tree Island, but there are also lots of trees." Mosha body frowned. "The strongest ones are the World Trees, but there are also some other undying-level trees here. According to my information, some universe-knight-level trees are of different types from the World Trees. It's not just the World Trees I need to worry about if I land on Tree Island. I need to dodge other trees first."

Mosha body stopped hesitating.

Sou!

He teleported and landed on Tree Island.

******

The World Trees were the kings of Tree Island, and many other botanical life forms lived there. Most of the plants on the island were quite ordinary, but a few of them were special organisms. Most of those special organisms could pose a threat to Mosha body.

I can't let them see me or notice me, thought Luo Feng.

Mosha body disguised himself in the façade of a floating cluster of seeds on the wind—like the tuft of a dandelion seed floating in the air. Luo Feng couldn't think of anything safer. A moving plant would have drawn attention, but a seed on the wind would hopefully go unnoticed.

Some of the powerful trees were intelligent, especially the undying-level ones, and they were not inferior to humans. As such, Luo Feng didn't dare teleport himself directly to the most powerful World Tree. Teleporting would certainly draw that World Tree's

attention.

I'll just flutter and flutter until I reach the World Tree, he thought.

The seed cluster kept fluttering slowly in the air.

Too slow...

The seed cluster was already approaching the World Trees as quickly as possible. He couldn't alter its course or increase its speed without giving himself away. If it flew against the wind or at a different speed, it would be noticed, and there would be no hope after that.

I must be patient, Mosha body told himself. I'm in no rush. As long as I can fly near the World Trees, I can just take a leaf. If there are some leaves on the ground, that'll work even better. I'll just take a single leaf. I'm not greedy.

The seed cluster kept floating.

Tree Island was like the Arcadia of ancient myth—a land of beautiful, unspoiled wilderness. Countless seeds floated in the air, and Mosha body's seed cluster was inconspicuous among them. But after three months of aimless floating, Mosha body was growing impatient.

Gazing at the World Trees still so far away, he shouted in his mind, Too slow!

Chapter 974: Bomb It

The seed cluster containing Mosha body still hadn't reached the periphery of where World Trees lived, even after more than five months of floating. At the center was the most powerful World Tree, and the other eight trees surrounded it. The nine World Trees occupied about a quarter of the island. The other trees, which were at the undying level and universe knight level, all avoided the World Trees.

Weng!

The nine jade-like World Trees were glowing. Each had a halo surrounding it, and none of the floating seeds could penetrate those halos.

The seed cluster containing Mosha body landed silently. A sector-lord-level World Tree with a thick trunk was tens of millions of miles away.

I'm now at the closest spot to the World Trees, and the closest one is a sector-lord-level World Tree, thought Mosha body. Unbelievable! There are no fallen leaves!

Mosha body was raging and roaring inside. If there had been some fallen leaves of the sector-lord-level World Tree, he could have simply stolen a fallen leaf quickly and fled. And with his current teleportation proficiency, even universe knights would be able to find out where he had gone.

There's no other way but to take a leaf by force.

Mosha body immediately made a decision. The hair on its seed cluster sensed the luxuriant leaves above. Although it was still tens of million miles away from the trunk. The leaves were like exquisitely carved jades, and each of them was sparkling.

Leaves fall only if they wither, thought Mosha body. But there's so much energy in these leaves, how could they ever wither?

The hair on the seed cluster swayed with eagerness.

******

On Rock Island, in the distance, Luo Feng's original body was looking forward to it.

"Please," he urged. "You must succeed. With that leaf, I'll have my third body!"

******

That seed cluster rolled over the ground under the wind. Even when it occasionally touched the halo and bounced back, it would be blown toward the World Tree again. By all appearances, it rolled on the ground randomly.

Sou!

The seemingly ordinary seed cluster suddenly vanished, and a blurry figure appeared beside an arm-sized branch at the edge of the crown of the sector lord World Tree.

Mosha body grabbed a leaf the moment it appeared and tried to tear it down. He was mighty—100 times stronger than a sector lord—but under the force of his pull, the thick twig of the sector lord World Tree only bent. The entire canopy trembled.

"Damn other races!" a shrill, angry voice said from the leaves.

"I... didn't get it?" Mosha body was dazed.

Suddenly, all the surrounding leaves that had been swaying in the wind converged on Mosha body and entwined it.

Peng!

Mosha body was dismantled like a crushed egg—including his life core.

Mosha body was dead!

"So weak!" the World Tree scoffed. "Is this what passes for an undying fighter? How could he just die like that?"

The sector lord World Tree was perplexed. Other heirs had tried to steal its twigs before, as a twig of a World Tree could grow into a fully formed tree and stabilize a God Country. However, it was only a sector lord World Tree, so a single leaf couldn't help much. Usually, one needed a whole branch! And every World Tree would strive to protect itself in the face of a threat.

******

On Rock Island.

"So powerful!" Luo Feng was stupefied. "Mosha body died before a fight could even begin. Based on what just happened, there's no way it's a sector lord. I'm sure it's at the emperor level."

Luo Feng was certain. All the twigs and leaves had instantly come down on Mosha body when he failed to break the leave, and his body had been crushed instantly.

"Then again, maybe the genes of a sector lord World Tree are 1,000 times stronger than those of humans," said Luo Feng. "Besides, it's instructed by that universe-master-level World Tree, so it must know amplification. That makes it dozens of times stronger. Altogether, that's tens of thousands of times stronger than a sector lord, added to some natural skills for attack."

Luo Feng nodded. It was an emperor level one. It was not surprising that Mosha body had been killed instantly

"The other World Trees didn't even react when Mosha body died." Luo Feng smiled. "Exactly as I expected. This kind of threat is nothing to the other World Trees, especially the most powerful one, who might only strike if the lives of the sector lord World Trees were in danger. I should learn from my mistakes."

Luo Feng began planning his next move.

******

After a long while.

A blurry, golden light glowed in the cave. A figure appeared in the light. It was Mosha body.

"That just cost me some energy," said Luo Feng.

Mosha body extended his hands to Luo Feng. Luo Feng turned his hands around, and a forceful flame god crystal started to dim on his palm. Mosha body took the crystal and teleported himself.

"I don't believe I'll fail again," said Luo Feng, hostility flashing in his eyes. "The flame god crystal is not very powerful, but it's enough to kill an official-level undying fighter, like a strike from a pinnacle emperor. That World Tree is only a sector level, and it can't burn its body. It won't be able to defend itself against that. And besides, it's so large. Only a few hundred thousand square miles will be injured. It's not a serious enough threat for most powerful World Tree to interfere."

Luo Feng nodded. After all, if his own student were under a threat that was not overly serious, he wouldn't intervene.

"I only need to bomb it once," he said. "Leaves and twigs will fly around after that! I'll teleport myself and flee after getting a leaf."

Luo Feng was looking forward to the result. He sensed Mosha body's location.

"He's arrived. He can definitely succeed this time!"

******

Mosha body first teleported himself above the ocean to a point distant from Tree Island.

"It wasn't that far, and I can still accurately sense that position." Mosha body looked afar, and aggression flashed upon his eyes. "Begin!"

Sou!

Mosha body teleported and appeared under the crown of the same sector lord World Tree.

"Explode!"

Mosha body threw the flame god crystal and teleported himself at the same time.

Sou!

It had disappeared.

Boom!

The flame god crystal exploded under the crown of the sector lord World Tree with a force that could kill an official-level undying fighter and rival a strike from a pinnacle emperor. Immediately, 30,000 square feet around the crystal disintegrated into nothing. The surrounding 1 million square feet was blasted to ruins, and farther away from the crystal lay some twigs and leaves. Still, it was nothing to a sector lord World Tree with a diameter of over 60 million miles. Besides, the explosion took place tens of millions of miles away from the trunk; the energy ripple couldn't even shake the trunk.

"Return," said the World Tree.

The emerald leaves that had been scattered by the explosion flew back to the crown, automatically merging with the original body, quickly recovering with the help of the Tree's energies.

As it was recovering, a figure appeared. Mosha body flew toward the twigs and leaves that were in the process of returning to the tree. He grabbed a broken twig with several leaves on it. Each of the leaves was broken.

"Got it! Go!"

Mosha body teleported and tried to get away.

Weng!

Destructive energy met Mosha body as soon as he grabbed the twig. Mosha body trembled and was paralyzed. A strong wind pressed down on it, and it turned to dust and vanished into thin

air.

"Damn other races! Damn other races!" The entire crown of the sector-lord-level World Tree was trembling. It roared, "Father, father! Let me kill him!"

"How unfortunate you are, Seven," said another World Tree. "You've lost so many leaves."

"Haha!" laughed another. "Seven, if it weren't for our father, that thing would get away with it."

The other World Trees all began laughing in different sounds—some hoarse and some clear, all mocking.

"Shut up, all of you!" yelled the World Tree that had been bombed, shaking its branches.

"Little Seven, that creature of another race is indeed very good at fleeing," a soft and gentle voice echoed through the domain of the World Trees. "It can teleport without even causing a space ripple. If he gets away, it'll be almost impossible to find him. I just punished him for wronging you. Isn't that nice?"

"No, it's not! It's not!" The twigs and leaves on the sector lord World Tree were shaking crazily.

"Then make an effort to become an undying fighter like your brothers," the gentle voice continued. "Then you won't need to be scared of the other races."

Heng!

The sector lord World Tree fully recovered from its injury after a short conversation, and all the leaves and twigs grew back. There was not a single leaf on the ground. It seemed entirely unharmed.

As the nine World Trees spoke, all the other life forms on Tree Island went silent.

Chapter 975: Bark Mirror Emperor

Inside a remote, quiet cave on Rock Island, shock filled Luo Feng's eyes.

"It must be the most powerful World Tree!" he said.

Luo Feng could completely empathize with the terrible attack Mosha body had suffered and the desperation he felt. It was like an almighty being killing an ant, and Mosha body was the ant. It had to be the most powerful World Tree. Only it was capable of doing this.

"He attacked me," said Luo Feng. "Although he's only a universe knight, he has the power of a universe master with its identity as a special organism. Plus, there's his colossal size. He attacked Mosha body."

Luo Feng found it difficult to believe. His original plan was for Mosha body to show up instantly, grab a leaf, and teleport himself to escape. The time that elapsed was only a blink of an eye. Even undying World Trees shouldn't have been able to stop him.

"All I took was a twig and a leaf, and that explosion only caused a minor injury to that World Tree. Was it really necessary to kill me? And for the World Tree to intervene personally?"

Luo Feng was full of grievances. He had finally, almost, had the twig and the leaf that would make it possible for him to breed his third body, after which he could have his breakthrough and immediately become an undying fighter. However, he seemed to have run into a major obstacle!

"I never expected the most powerful World Tree to meddle. My Mosha body has already been killed twice. That World Tree must be alert, now. What should I do?"

Luo Feng was anxious. He started to contemplate this problem, and the more he thought about it, the angrier he got.

"Why didn't you just let me have that twig and leaf?" he muttered. "That World Tree has a crown 60 million miles wide. A single leaf is nothing to it. Do you really think it's worth it?"

Luo Feng was mainly worried about the most powerful World Tree now—a creature that could rival a universe master! It had the talent technique of "manipulation of space and time," and with the most powerful World Tree's strength, it could control sky and land just as well as a real universe master. It must have also excelled at "time pause," and perhaps it could even reverse time.

As long as the most powerful World Tree was in his way, Mosha body didn't stand a chance of breaking free. Not if time was completely stopped.

"What should I do?" wondered Luo Feng.

******

Little did Luo Feng know, the most powerful World Tree was a father, and the other eight World Trees surrounding it were its sons. Like any ordinary tree planted in the soil, as time passed, saplings would naturally begin growing around it.

The most powerful World Tree, as a special organism, allowed some saplings to grow around it. A single twig could grow into a powerful Life Tree. As the most powerful World Tree, with endless life force, it had a mighty life origin. It grew eight saplings around it because it felt lonely, and it gave a portion of its essence from its life origin to the eight saplings, a bit like the Space Heart giving its essence to Mosha body.

The most powerful World Tree would rather give up some of its potential to nurture its eight saplings. It was like a father taking care of and cultivating its eight children. And since, like most trees, World Trees innately didn't like to move, they had spent an eternity together. It was far more caring for its eight children than fathers of other races in the universe.

In this way, it was understandable that it was so protective of its children.

******

In the cave of Rock Island.

Several plans that had entered Luo Feng's mind had a chance to succeed, but none offered guaranteed success.

"Mosha body has been successfully bred," he said, sensing—in the Primal Secret Region of the Human Territory far away—his internal world had successfully bred Mosha body.

After only a few seconds, a blurry golden light flashed from God Country Transportation. It spent only a few seconds traveling from the Human Territory to the Ancestral God Secret Region.

Sou!

Mosha body stepped out and landed in the cave.

"Go."

Mosha body teleported himself and disappeared again. He showed up in the sky of Nine Remoteness Ocean and could see Tree Island in the distance.

"I'll choose the most conservative approach, with the highest chance to succeed."

Mosha body disappeared again.

******

Among the seeds floating on Tree Island, another seed had joined in silence.

The seed cluster slowly floated toward the World Trees.

"I'll spend another five months getting there, and I'll land beside World Trees again," Mosha body murmured. "Then I'll let a pinnacle emperor slave throw a flame origin crystal and grab a twig and leaf. The pinnacle emperor might be killed in the end!

However, those World Trees will regard my pinnacle emperor slave as the head. After the fight, there'll be twigs and leaves flying everywhere, and lots of them will be outside the halo. That's when my seed cluster will land on one of the leaves. Then I'll teleport myself with a leaf. Ha! Even the most powerful World Tree with the power of a universe master can't do anything because it can't identify the special seed cluster."

This was the new plan. Using a pinnacle emperor slave as a distraction to blast away a great number of twigs and leaves.

******

Time passed, and the seed cluster containing Mosha body floated along with the wind.

To the superior, most powerful World Tree, what had just happened was nothing but a brief interlude. After all, many heirs adventured in Nine Remoteness Space, and Mosha body trying to snatch a twig was hardly a threat. And many heirs had the power to kill his sector-lord offspring.

The most powerful World Tree's only priority was to protect its children's trunks. As long as the trunks were safe, twigs and leaves could be quickly recovered.

"I'll just go with the wind, and I'll arrive there in a month or so."

The seed cluster floated with the wind, hiding among other floating seeds on the beautiful Tree Island.

******

In the area outside Nine Remoteness Space.

Sou!

Seven great beings from different races and suddenly showed up. One was crawling, with a godly body of 6 miles. It was the largest. The smallest one was less than two feet tall, including its wings.

"It's Nine Remoteness Space," said the first.

"We've arrived!" said the small one.

All seven great beings from other races looked at Nine Remoteness Space, all filled with great expectations.

"So fast. It only took us the time of a meal to arrive here."

"And it's all thanks to Here Crow Knight's teleportation. Each time, he can teleport hundreds of or even thousands of light years farther, and we jumped over countless dangerous areas. Without Here Crow Knight, it would have taken a much longer time to arrive at Nine Remoteness Space, and we may have run into danger."

"Yes, it was all thanks to Here Crow Knight."

Suddenly, a piercing voice rang out, "Yes, we all need to thank Here Crow Knight."

The other great beings went quiet upon hearing the voice. The great being who had spoken was covered in scales full of engravings. He stood there, slightly arching his back. His hands and feet were hooked claws. His hair and eyes were golden, and his voice was enough to shut the other great beings up.

"Am I correct, Here Crow Knight?" the great being asked, looking at Here Crow Knight.

Here Crow Knight was twenty feet tall with six pairs of black-feathered wings. There was a blood-red light dimming on his body; his mouth was like a blade, and his eyes were crimson. He was the same Here Crow Knight of the 100 million heirs on Bauhinia Island.

Here Crow Knight grinned. "I can only help on our way here. Now, we depend on you, Bark Mirror Emperor."

"Nine Remoteness Space is filled with dangerous places," said the largest one. "We'll have a higher chance of surviving with you by our side, Bark Mirror Emperor."

"Yes!" said the tiny one. "We've been stuck in an eternal loop! Lots of heirs wanted to go with you when they knew you were coming to Nine Remoteness Space. If we're lucky enough to discover some valuables, you and Here Crow Knight should select first."

"Depending on our contributions, Bark Mirror Emperor should pick first," another spoke up.

Of the seven great beings, one was a universe knight and the other six were undying heirs. Here Crow Knight was the universe knight, and Bark Mirror Emperor was one of the undying heirs.

"Haha! Relax," Bark Mirror Emperor laughed. "It shall be determined by our contributions respectively. I won't take what should belong to you."

Here Crow Knight laughed, too, as did the other five great beings.

Bark Mirror Emperor is famous for his insanity, ruthlessness, and greed, Here Crow Knight thought. If it weren't for his incredible inspection skill, I wouldn't have brought him here. As for the other five undying heirs? How can I let true treasures fall into their hands? But I do need to be careful of this Bark Mirror Emperor. I don't want to become a stepping stone beneath his foot.

Here Crow Knight dreaded Bark Mirror Emperor. Bark Mirror Emperor was ranked in the top ten among all the undying heirs!

Since the beginning of the universe, there had been heirs arriving and being eliminated on Bauhinia Island. As time went by, the vast majority of them were at the normal level, whereas those ranked in the top ten were the best of the best. Zhu Chong Emperor, as a special organism, was only ranked third.

Bark Mirror Emperor was also a special organism, with its life level 2,000 times more powerful than ordinary life forms! Plus, he had two distinctive talent techniques. He had been admitted to one of the superpowers in the universe, the Northern Territory

Alliance, and had been given a true treasure and a treasure. He was relatively weaker than Zhu Chong Emperor, but he was powerful enough to fight many universe knights.

"Let's go into Nine Remoteness Space," Bark Mirror Emperor said. "Let's go to the safest place, Rock Island, first."

"Okay, let's go."

Here Crow Knight cast teleportation, and they arrived at Rock Island instantly.

Chapter 976: Universe Mirror

In the sky of Rock Island, seven figures appeared. It was the group of Here Crow Knight and Bark Mirror Emperor.

"The desolate Rock Island," said Here Crow Knight. "It perfectly matches the description in our information."

The seven great beings looked around sharply. They had remained cautious since stepping into Nine Remoteness Space.

"It's safe on Rock Island, but there are no valuables," Bark Mirror Emperor said. He had been born with an unusually squeaky voice. "Besides, it's a small island, and it will be dangerous if we step off it." He glanced the other great beings and added, "I was ready to take my chances in Nine Remoteness Ocean and look for the valuables in that ocean. It is the most dangerous place in all of Nine Remoteness Space. You can choose whether to come with me or not."

The other five undying fighters were shocked.

"Nine Remoteness Ocean?"

"Bark Mirror Emperor, are you really going to Nine Remoteness Ocean?"

Bark Mirror Emperor smirked. The other five were all from the Northern Territory Alliance like he was, which was why he had brought them here. However, it would be ridiculous for him to help the other five to search for valuables. He didn't have enough time.

"How about going to other islands first?" one of them asked.

Bark Mirror Emperor snorted, then looked at Here Crow Knight and asked, "What about you, Here Crow Knight?"

Although all of these great beings were his companions, Here Crow Knight was the only one he valued. After all, he was a

universe knight as well as his rival. Nine Remoteness Ocean was a place filled with real danger, and it would be much safer for him to go with someone else.

The five undying heirs couldn't be blamed for not daring to go. Nine Remoteness Ocean was an endless ocean containing thousands of islands. Most of the heirs went there for valuables, whereas only a few of them had the guts to go to Nine Remoteness Ocean. Although the ocean was boundless—and there might be more valuables hidden there than on all the other islands combined—it was also more hazardous than all the other islands combined.

The most dangerous thing in the Nine Remoteness Ocean was the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool in the core of the ocean. Once someone was trapped in it, it would be almost impossible to survive even for a universe knight.

Here Crow Knight was worried. "If you want to go to Nine Remoteness Ocean, I'll come with you. But I need to make sure of one thing. You're not going to the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool, are you?"

Bark Mirror Emperor shook his head. "Of course not. I'm confident, not reckless. There is danger everywhere in Nine Remoteness Ocean. I might dare to venture into other places, but I'll avoid the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool at all costs."

Here Crow Knight was relieved. "Fine," he said. "I'll come with you and explore Nine Remoteness Ocean."

"Haha!" Bark Mirror Emperor's squeaky voice gave him a shrill laugh.

Here Crow Knight laughed along with him.

The other five great beings looked at each other and consulted with one another telepathically.

What're we supposed to do? Here Crow Knight and Bark Mirror

Emperor are both going to the Nine Remoteness Ocean. What should we do?

Without them, our chance of surviving on the other islands is small. But if we follow them, we might be able to arrive at some magical places and get some treasures by luck. We're their teammates. They won't attack us.

We've been trapped at this stage for an eternity. I'll take my chances. Let's go.

I'll follow.

Nine Remoteness Ocean is arguably the most dangerous place here. It'll be worth it even if we die there.

The five undying heirs had made their decisions.

"Here Crow Knight, Bark Mirror Emperor, we'll follow you."

"Yeah. Any island in Nine Remoteness Space is dangerous. We'd rather go with you guys."

"We'll all come with you."

Bark Mirror Emperor and Here Crow Knight were glad to bring them along.

"Let me search for any danger within the one billion square miles around us first," Bark Mirror Emperor said.

"Please do, Bark Mirror Emperor."

The other six, including Here Crow Knight, all stepped back. Bark Mirror Emperor had the best probing skills in the universe. He stepped forward and concentrated. The intricate engravings on his scales started to glow, and his golden eyes emanated an illusion that seemed to be a reflection of the surrounding space.

"Ahead of us..." said Bark Mirror Emperor, looking ahead. He said calmly and confidently, "There's no danger on the island. When we cross the island, we'll arrive at Nine Remoteness Ocean. The danger within 20 million miles of Rock Island can be ignored. The

deeper into the ocean, the more dangerous it is. I've already discovered a universe-knight-level creature."

Bark Mirror Emperor looked in another direction.

He claimed to be looking. Actually, it was his talent technique known as "Universe Mirror," which could inspect everything within one billion square miles by reflecting it in the mirror. All the danger was visible on the mirror, unless it was a universe master who could completely manipulate the time and space of an area. Otherwise, nothing could evade the Universe Mirror. Other great beings wouldn't even realize that they were being probed.

"I've found an undying-level special organism," he said. He looked to his left and was momentarily dazed. "Huh?" Then he gave a weird smile.

"Bark Mirror Emperor, what did you find?" Here Crow Knight couldn't help asking after seeing him smile like that.

"Haha... Take a guess!" Bark Mirror Emperor's look was perplexing, which confused Here Crow Knight and the other five undying heirs. "It's the famous Blade River Emperor."

Here Crow Knight and the five undying heirs were all stunned.

"Blade River Emperor?"

"Interesting that Blade River Emperor has the guts to come to Nine Remoteness Space," said Bark Mirror Knight. "I've heard that he has a set of wings that help him fly away. It's a true treasure. I didn't have the chance to kill him on Bauhinia Island, but now is a great opportunity." He stuck out his thick, red tongue and licked his fangs.

"Bark Mirror Emperor, are you serious?" Here Crow Knight was shocked.

"Humph!" said Black Mirror Emperor. "You might not dare to act, but I'm from the Northern Territory Alliance, and we're not afraid of that human alliance. You don't need to be a part of it if you don't

want to, Here Crow Knight. Just behave yourself and don't reveal my intentions to Blade River Emperor. Otherwise, you'll make yourself my enemy."

"Rest assured, I won't meddle," Here Crow Knight said, nodding.

Northern Territory Alliance was the alliance with the most members, and it was also one of the superpowers of the universe. It could rival the alliances of the peak races like the human race, the demon race, and the bug race.

"Let's go."

Bark Mirror Emperor smirked and flew away slowly. He didn't dare to go too fast, as he didn't want Luo Feng to notice him.

Greed filled Bark Mirror Emperor's golden eyes. "It'll be worth it for me to come to Nine Remoteness Space if I can get those wings. I won't even need to risk going to Nine Remoteness Ocean after I succeed." He was a special organism and was naturally greedy and ruthless. However, instead of being ashamed of how he was, he chose to be proud of it.

******

In the cave of the mountain.

Luo Feng used the micro-detector to conceal himself as he sat with his legs crossed. He had no idea that Bark Mirror Emperor had used Universe Mirror to detect him. Obviously, Bark Mirror Emperor was skilled enough not to be found by the micro-detector.

"One month left," said Luo Feng. "After a month, I can get the World Tree's twigs and leaves and breed my third body. After which, I can be an undying fighter."

Luo Feng was looking forward to what was going to happen without realizing that seven great beings had already arrived at the mountain.

******

"Stop," Bark Mirror Emperor said.

Here Crow Knight and the other five followed.

"That human has a micro-detector." Bark Mirror Emperor sniggered. "Unfortunately, those detectors are useless. Even the top-tier detectors from the automaton race can't compare with my techniques."

"Seal!"

Bark Mirror Emperor looked at the mountain in front of him and used Space Seal. Suddenly, the space ripple in almost half the Rock Island stopped.

"Go in," he said.

Sou!

Bark Mirror Emperor rushed into the mountain.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

The other six followed him.

******

"Something's wrong," Luo Feng said, glancing at some of the gravel in the cave as he sensed Space Seal. One of the gravels was a keepsake, and there was a second one hidden in another cave. They were used by his servants to position God Country Transportation.

"Even if I leave temporarily, I can still transport myself here directly."

Sou!

Luo Feng opened his wings and flew out of the cave instantly. He felt a remarkable source of strength storming toward him the moment he rushed out of the cave a saw a great being that looked like a werewolf flying toward him. He had golden hair and golden eyes and was covered in scales, which were filled with engravings.

"Bark Mirror Emperor!" Luo Feng said.

He was startled. Dealing with one of the most famous special organisms on Bauhinia Island would be a handful. Bark Mirror Emperor was proficient in tracking and hunting, and he was greedy and merciless. Luo Feng shook his wings and sped up.

Sou!

"Haha, Blade River Emperor, are you really trying to flee from me?" laughed Bark Mirror Emperor. "I'm known for my tracking skills, and I aced space law. Besides, I'm innately fast and have a godly body much better than yours. So, let's see who's faster, you or me!"

Bark Mirror Emperor sped up, chasing after Luo Feng.

Bark Mirror Emperor had a mighty godly body, and his constitution was 2,000 times better than that of normal great beings. Human emperor limits were 100,000 times stronger than sector lords, whereas Bark Mirror Emperor was 200,000 times stronger, which made him equal to a universe knight—a powerful godly body with a natural gift for speed.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Bark Mirror Emperor was speeding up. Luo Feng sped up too but was astonished to see that Bark Mirror Emperor was gaining on him.

"What?" he said. "Second form!"

Luo Feng had to admit that he had underestimated Bark Mirror Emperor. He didn't have time to think of anything else. Instead, he initiated the second form, and the plumes on that wings became sharp like sabers.

Hua, hua!

The wings tore the surrounding space apart, resulting in significant space turbulence. His body appeared blurry within the turbulence.

Chapter 977: Fight

Bark Mirror Emperor, chasing Luo Feng, was also trapped in the space turbulence, where there were all kinds of space fragments. Each space fragment was as enormous as a planet, which slowed him down as he rampaged among the fragments. He couldn't concentrate on chasing Luo Feng anymore. However, instead of becoming upset, Bark Mirror Emperor grew joyful.

"True treasures are indeed impressive!" he shouted. "But you, as a mere human, are not qualified for such true treasures. As a special organism, only I am good enough for them! Give me the true treasures, and I'll spare your life."

Hong!

Bark Mirror Emperor's force surged; he was already burning his godly body. For true treasures, he was willing to burn his godly body. Besides, the Northern Territory Alliance provided him with endless resources just to attract him, and he had abundant valuables to use to recover his godly body.

Hong!

Bark Mirror Emperor had a godly body that was more powerful than that of an ordinary knight, and once he started to burn it, his power soared.

Hong, long, long!

Bark Mirror Emperor sped up again, opening a wide portal among the space turbulence and crushing all the space fragments in his way.

Luo Feng sensed Bark Mirror Emperor's speed skyrocket, nearly catching up to him.

"I'm slower than him...!" Luo Feng realized. He shook his wings.

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

He started to change directions continuously like a butterfly, pausing, darting, then zigzagging back and forth. Sometimes he rushed forward, sometimes he flew to his left, and sometimes he made a sharp turn. Generally, the faster one went, the more difficult it was to change directions. It was just like a sports car—the greater the speed, the higher the risk of rolling the vehicle while trying to navigate a turn.

Bark Mirror Emperor was unprepared for this. "He's quite maneuverable!"

Bark Mirror Emperor was following Luo Feng as his directions changed. When flying straight, Luo Feng couldn't match Bark Mirror Emperor's speed, even he performed the second form of Shi Wu Wing and caused space turbulence. However, Bark Mirror Emperor panicked as he attempted to quickly change direction.

"Seal!" Bark Mirror Emperor got furious and used his undying power to suppress Luo Feng, but it was torn by Luo Feng's Shi Wu Wings.

"Bark Mirror Emperor, why are you coming after me?" Luo Feng said. "My wings were given to me by a universe master. Even if you take them, they will be taken back in the future."

"Haha! Don't scare me with universe masters," said Bark Mirror Emperor excitedly. "The Northern Territory Alliance has universe masters, too! No wonder it's a true treasure. My constitution is way better than yours, and I'm faster than you. But I'm not as maneuverable. I can only speed up again and again to make sure you can't get away."

******

Here Crow Knight and the other five undying heirs flew in the sky above the Nine Remoteness Ocean as they watched Bark Mirror Emperor hunt Blade River Emperor.

"Bark Mirror Emperor can't catch up with Blade River Emperor

even after burning his godly body? Those wings really must be a true treasure."

"Burning his godly body can speed him up, but the faster he gets, the more difficult it is for him to change his directions," Here Crow Knight said. "Bark Mirror Emperor can only guarantee that he's not left far behind. He should be attacking now."

******

Bark Mirror Emperor couldn't catch up. After a while, a purple crystal ball showed up in front of him.

Sou!

The purple crystal ball flew above Luo Feng much faster than Bark Mirror Emperor under his undying power. It quickly expanded and turned into a huge purple star with a diameter of thousands of miles, and a massive hole appeared under it.

Hong, long, long!

A whirlpool formed in the hole, and a forceful, swallowing power dashed Luo Feng. Under its effects, Luo Feng couldn't maintain his balance.

"This is my sealing treasure," Bark Mirror Emperor said with a laugh. "Though I can't comprehend all of space law, with this treasure and my burning godly body, my sealing skills are better than that of a universe knight. Let's see you break free of that!"

Luo Feng was trapped within an endless swallowing force.

Usually, creatures attack their enemies first and then seal an enemy when they are severely injured and can't put up a fight anymore, Luo Feng roared in his heart. Yet you attempt to seal me first? Not possible!

"Shi Wu Wing, break it!"

Suddenly, the edges of his Shi Wu Wings sliced the surrounding space into pieces.

Of the many different kinds of treasures, sealing treasures were effective for sealing, but they had weak attacking power. Unless the great being was significantly inferior to the treasure, it was impossible for a sealing treasure to swallow a great being.

Chi, chi, chi, chi!

Shi Wu Wing kept slicing the space, and Luo Feng finally broke out.

"Huh?" Bark Mirror Emperor was dazed, but then he smirked. "True treasures are indeed impressive. Blade River Emperor, I didn't want to kill you in the first place, but now, you brought this upon yourself."

Bark Mirror Emperor opened his mouth...

"Silence!"

Everything turned quiet in the sky and land as Bark Mirror Emperor opened his mouth incredibly wide.

Here Crow Knight and the other five undying heirs were terrified and began murmuring to each other.

"If Bark Mirror Emperor howls, Blade River Emperor won't survive it!"

"But Blade River Emperor has clone technique."

"Either way, this body is not going to survive it, and his true treasures will fall into the hands of Bark Mirror Emperor."

Here Crow Knight had the same thought, as Bark Mirror Emperor's two talent techniques were distinctive in the universe. One of them was inspection, and the other was attack. He could see everything with his inspection technique... but he could crush a soul with his attacking technique.

The moment Bark Mirror Emperor opened his mouth, Luo Feng felt an invisible force.

"Howl!"

Even Luo Feng was knocked unconscious by this attack's immensely powerful will. The soul roar was trying to annihilate his very soul.

Meanwhile, Tower Pearl, which guarded the core of Luo Feng's soul, suddenly appeared, started to shine, and surrounded his soul. The roaring continued.

In front of Luo Feng's soul, Bark Mirror Emperor's head appeared, its phantom image opening its bloody mouth and bellowing at Luo Feng.

Weng-weng-weng!

The Tower Pearl started to tremble.

Luo Feng's soul shook. The willpower around his soul had been destroyed. Only his core, which was being protected by Tower Pearl, resisted the force.

"Howl!"

Weng!

Tower Pearl strived to protect the soul.

Luo Feng regained consciousness. "How terrifying!" he mumbled, startled by the realization of what had just happened. "Before the Tower Pearl showed up, that attack knocked me unconscious. Apparently, I can't resist it in the slightest. If it weren't for the Tower Pearl, I would've been crushed. Even the Tower Pearl had a hard time resisting it."

The more powerful the special organisms were, the more incredible their talent techniques were. Silver Eye was merely mediocre. Special organisms like Bark Mirror Emperor and Zhu Chong Emperor were the real talents.

"Time to run...!"

Luo Feng dove toward the Nine Remoteness Ocean, knowing he couldn't get away no matter how skillfully he changed directions.

Nine Remoteness Ocean was the largest and most dangerous place in Nine Remoteness Space, especially with considering the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool, but Luo Feng couldn't worry about that right now.

Peng!

Water in the ocean was blasted away as Luo Feng traveled down into the Nine Remoteness Ocean.

"Impossible!" Bark Mirror Emperor said, blown away by what he had just seen. He couldn't believe Blade River Emperor could resist the attack he was proudest of. His face was twitching as he dove into Nine Remoteness Ocean.

******

In the sky above the ocean.

Here Crow Knight and the other five undying heirs were dazed.

"He resisted it?"

"He didn't die?"

They found it unbelievable.

Here Crow Knight kept shaking his head. "Bark Mirror Emperor's godly body is so powerful that he can rival universe knights. Now that he's burning his undying power to perform his talent technique, that attack can rival that of a universe overlord. How could the human, Blade River Emperor, withstand that?"

"Here Crow Knight," said another heir, "Bark Mirror Emperor has the power of a universe knight, and he just burned his power to use his talent technique. How could Blade River Emperor repel that power? Unless... he has another true treasure used to protect his soul!"

"A true treasure to protect his soul?" The other heirs were dazed.

"That's right, a true treasure," Here Crow Knight said, nodding. "He has a soul, and he himself can't defend against that attack. It

had to be the true treasure—a true treasure used to protect his soul! Bark Mirror Emperor has two true treasures. The humans value Blade River Emperor so much that it's certainly possible he has two true treasures."

"Two true treasures!" Other five heirs couldn't believe it.

"This is insane," said Here Crow Knight, incredibly jealous. He was a universe knight, yet he didn't have even one.

Bark Mirror Emperor and Zhu Chong Emperor both had two true treasures, and so did Blade River Emperor.

"If I'm lucky enough to have it, I'll just hide," said Here Crow Knight. "Two treasures, one used to flee and the other used to protect my soul."

Aggression flashed across Here Crow Knight's eyes. He dove toward the ocean, too.

******

In the cold, oppressive ocean, the water emanated a heart-stopping force.

Hong, long, long!

Bark Mirror Emperor kept chasing Luo Feng and kept and space sealed. At the same time, he roared, "Human, there's no way you can escape. You could withstand my talent technique attack, which means you have a real treasure to protect your soul! It has to be! They're both mine! Mine!"

Bark Mirror Emperor had gone crazy. A true treasure to protect souls was much rarer and much more precious than a flying true treasure.

Sou!

Luo Feng kept changing his direction in Nine Remoteness Ocean and dove deeper and deeper into this deadly area.

Chapter 978: Nine Remoteness Whirlpool

Deep in Nine Remoteness Ocean, each drop of water was as heavy as a mountain, but Luo Feng and Bark Mirror Emperor shot like missiles through the depths.

"Blade River Emperor, there's no way you can escape!" Bark Mirror Emperor roared insanely. "Haha! You're good at escaping and resisting soul attacks, but unless you have a flying-palace true treasure, I refuse to believe you can defend yourself against my material strike! Die!"

Hong!

Bark Mirror Emperor waved his paws, and a stream of terrifying undying power manifested as a blurry gray beam that shot toward Luo Feng, still trying to escape by changing his directions irregularly.

Luo Feng was startled. "Damn it...!"

Although Bark Mirror Emperor followed the warrior path, releasing undying power was a rather easy way to attack. Normally, it was relatively weak, but Bark Mirror Emperor had extraordinary undying power, which he was currently burning. Even this weak tactic would be enough to kill Luo Feng if he was hit.

There were many kinds of true treasures. Sky Wolf Palace and Star Tower belonged to the "flying palace" category of true treasures.

When it came to avoiding a fight, such true treasures would come in handy. If Luo Feng were able to hide inside Sky Wolf Palace, enemies couldn't hurt him even if they bombed Sky Wolf Palace continuously.

Unfortunately, I don't have that kind of true treasure, thought Luo Feng.

He maintained his high speed, and each time his Shi Wu Wings shook, the shockwave resulted in great space turbulence.

Hong!

A pillar of undying power cut through the ocean. Space turbulence and erupted to Luo Feng's right.

"I've dodged it," Luo Feng thought, relieved. His high-speed changes of direction made him difficult to hit.

"Haha!" Bark Mirror Emperor laughed. "I was right. You don't have flying palace-type true treasures. Blade River Emperor, you're relying on your wings to escape and your soul true treasure to resist soul attacks. Unfortunately, you don't have a true treasure to defend yourself against a material strike. You're doomed. Let's see how many more times you can dodge it!"

Hong! Hong!

Two pillars of undying power were fired at Luo Feng. There was no law comprehension in them; on the contrary, they depended on burning, undying power that could rival universe knights.

Madness filled Bark Mirror Emperor's eyes. "I can't catch up with you, but my undying power can!"

He was far stronger than Luo Feng and chased him as if trying to swat a troublesome insect. The insect may have been agile and armed with soul true treasures, but if Bark Mirror Emperor used pure undying power to crush him...

Unless Luo Feng had a true treasure like Sky Wolf Palace, he would have no chance of survival!

Should I summon Mosha body back? Luo Feng wondered, still changing his directions irregularly.

A pillar of undying power flashed beside him while the following one clipped the edge of his wing, spinning Luo Feng around. He was stunned but still managed to change directions again rapidly,

making the best of Shi Wu Wings.

Although Mosha body has the talent technique "domain," it only works on the body itself—it can't carry me, Luo Feng thought.

This was the limitation of domain. It was a completely different skill than teleportation. One could teleport along with other life forms and enter a space ripple together, reaching faraway places instantly. But domain was limited to within a diameter of 6,000 miles of Mosha body.

Domain was achieved when Mosha body merged with space, then turned back into Mosha body. Luo Feng's original body couldn't do that—unless, perhaps, he entered the World Ring and let it be carried by Mosha body.

However, with Bark Mirror Emperor's permeating undying power, he had no chance of getting into his World Ring.

******

"Escaped again?" Bark Mirror Emperor smiled smugly. "I didn't expect you to dodge my attacks twice. Those wings aid you well in your escape. Let's see if you can dodge it for the third time!"

Bark Mirror Emperor's madness intensified as he began to condense a mass of tempestuous undying power.

Undying power needed to be condensed in order to be forceful. If it was dispersed among a 600-million-mile area, it was feeble and could only be used for detection instead of attacking. When undying power couldn't be condensed further, it formed a godly body.

"Undying power into threads!" roared Bark Mirror Emperor. "Cage!"

Bark Mirror Emperor reached out his paws, and suddenly, thousands of undying-power threads shot out in pursuit of Luo Feng. Each of the threads was as concentrated as possible, like Bark Mirror Emperor's godly body.

The move had consumed 10 percent of Bark Mirror Emperor's godly body. Since the start of the battle, all his other moves had only cost him 1 percent, but this single move, producing thousands of threads, required an immense quantity of undying power.

"There's nowhere to run!" Bark Mirror Emperor seethed. Two true treasures awaited him after he defeated Blade River Emperor! He could even escape universe overlords if he had those two!

Hong!

In an instant, a giant whirlpool appeared before them, producing a massive, tearing current.

Bark Mirror Emperor turned toward the whirlpool, astonished. "What?"

As Bark Mirror Emperor watched, a towering red figure emerged from the whirlpool. Two bloody horns protruded from its head. The figure leveled its gaze at Bark Mirror Emperor.

"Other races," growled the horned figure. "How dare you roam the Nine Remoteness Ocean. Die!"

"A Nine Remoteness Whirlpool!" said Bark Mirror Emperor. "And a great being... in a Nine Remoteness Whirlpool?"

He was well aware of the dangers of the Nine Remoteness Ocean, the deadliest of which being Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. But he had never expected the whirlpool to appear out of nowhere or for a great being to reside within it. He could sense the horned figure's energy. It was a universe knight. And it was superior to him.

Hong!

A burning, bloody light from the horned universe knight shrouded Bark Mirror Emperor.

"Begone!" Bark Mirror Emperor cried, manipulating the threads of undying power against the bloody light.

It would have been easy to kill Blade River Emperor with these

threads, but the great being in front of him was his real enemy. Thousands of threads, making up of 10 percent of his godly body, coalesced into a spear flying toward the bloody light.

Hong! Long!

The two forces crashed and exploded in the water, each dispersing in the aftermath.

"You've got some skill," the universe knight said, a bit surprised.

"Die!" Bark Mirror Emperor roared as he cast his talent technique. "Silence!"

Silence engulfed the area around them, and a soundless shock wave ripped forward and slammed into the universe knight in the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. But nothing happened.

"Haha!" the universe knight chuckled. "A soul attack is useless to me!"

The towering figure with its bloody horns roared and hurled himself at Bark Mirror Emperor.

"You can do nothing to me," Bark Mirror Emperor scoffed.

The thousands of threads had consumed 10 percent of his godly body while the strike from the enemy had cost him less than 2 percent. Although Bark Mirror Emperor knew he was weaker than this great being, he was unafraid.

"It's no wonder only one in 100 universe knights survives the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool," said Bark Mirror Emperor. "Is anyone who shows up here as powerful as this universe knight? I'll disregard him now. I can't beat him, but I'm faster than he is."

Bark Mirror Emperor turned around and continued to chase after Luo Feng. The towering figure with the bloody horns raced forward in pursuit.

Sou!

Sou!

Bark Mirror Emperor was proficient in tracking and hunting and possessed unparalleled speed when he accelerated. Luo Feng, even after casting the second form of Shi Wu Wing, couldn't match Bark Mirror Emperor, and neither could the universe knight.

******

"I'll kill you, Blade River Emperor!" roared Bark Mirror Emperor, right on Luo Feng's heels. "Then I'll escape."

He waved his paws, and threads of undying began to concentrate again.

"Fight!"

Luo Feng had been lucky that the bloody-horned figure showed up and forced Bark Mirror Emperor to manipulate his threads to deal with the real threat. But now, Bark Mirror Emperor knew he was not the universe knight's match and resumed focusing on killing Luo Feng.

Luo Feng had no time to think. His erratic movements had brought him back around, almost in a full circle. He shook his wings and dove directly into Nine Remoteness Whirlpool.

Hong! Long! Long!

Nine Remoteness Whirlpool possessed an incredible tearing, all-consuming current. Luo Feng was sucked inside the moment he touched it.

******

Bark Mirror Emperor saw Blade River Emperor dive into Nine Remoteness Whirlpool just as he finished condensing his threads.

"No!" he shouted in exasperation.

Bark Mirror Emperor was powerful, but even he didn't dare to go into the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. As for Luo Feng, he could only resort to taking this last-ditch effort. Bark Mirror Emperor's only choice now was to flee for his life from the horned universe

knight.

"My two true treasures!" Bark Mirror Emperor growled through clenched teeth, flying out of the ocean and up in the sky.

******

Hong!

The bloody-horned figure of the universe knight stepped out of the ocean and onto the rolling waves. It looked up just in time to see Bark Mirror Emperor teleport and disappear.

The universe knight smirked. "Was it something I said?"

The bloody-horned figure reentered the ocean and swam back down, approaching the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. Without hesitation, it dove into the whirlpool.

******

Above the ocean.

Here Crow Knight remained behind a moment longer. He had been watching the fight and was terrified.

"Everyone says the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool is the portal to the core of Nine Remoteness Ocean," he said. "There must be a group of great beings living there. The one that just showed up was stronger than me, and it comes from a race that's immune to soul attack. That human, Blade River Emperor, went directly into Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. Now he's dead, and his true treasures shall be lost forever in the core. What a pity!"

Coldness flashed in Here Crow Knight's eyes. "But at least Bark Mirror Emperor doesn't have them..."

He gazed at the whirlpool afar. Although the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool had appeared out of nowhere, it was still there now, and it was likely to remain there for a long time... And it somehow felt enticing. As if it were luring Here Crow Knight to come in.

"Too risky," said Here Crow Knight, shaking off the strange

feeling. "A portal that appears out of nowhere and isn't God Country Transportation... No wonder it's the most dangerous place of Nine Remoteness Space."

He teleported himself and disappeared.

Chapter 979: Another Sky and Land

The moment he entered the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool, Luo Feng felt an immense, tearing current the likes of which he'd never encountered before. He felt like he had been caught beneath a millstone grinding grain. His body crackled, and his face twisted.

"The current alone will annihilate me!" Luo Feng realized, terrified. "Seal Star!"

Sou!

A seal star appeared—a sealing treasure with a space inside—and Luo Feng wriggled into it. As long as he hid in it, attacks from the outside would be significantly weakened. However, there was a major downside to doing so. Since the seal star couldn't fly quickly or dodge independently, enemies could grab hold of it. This made it practically useless when trying to avoid a pursuer, such as fleeing Bark Mirror Emperor.

It was a beautiful world inside the seal star. Beams of golden light flashed through the sky above the boundless solid ground. Luo Feng merged his mind with the seal star and used his spiritual force to detect the external world around the star.

It's kind of like the wormholes of the secret region, thought Luo Feng.

Previously, a wormhole had sent to the five-colored pool, and luckily, he had gotten the Space Heart as a result.

"Well, here I am," he said.

But as Luo Feng felt the surroundings becoming steady, he inspected the external world, and his heart missed a beat. He could distinctly sense an army formed by life forms of other races, all of whom had red, burly bodies and bloody horns. They appeared to be of the same race as the universe knight that had chased after Bark Mirror Emperor.

A squad of warriors closest to the portal of the whirlpool suddenly flew toward it, approaching the seal star.

"Huh? A valuable?" one said.

"What valuable is it?" said another.

When they felt a spiritual force passing through their bodies, all of them started to roar furiously.

"An invader from another race!"

"Other races trespassing!"

Sou!

The star disappeared, instantly replaced by a silver-armored, silver-winged man.

Luo Feng looked around and saw 300 warriors, all of whom were undying fighters. The leader had such powerful energy that he might have been an invincible emperor.

Luo Feng felt numb. Even the human race did not have the ability to deploy 300 undying fighters to guard a single area.

For a random squad stationed here to be so strong... he thought, looking around in astonishment. According to my knowledge of this place, this isn't the only Nine Remoteness Whirlpool in Nine Remoteness Ocean. I wonder if all of them are so heavily guarded.

Many of the bloody-horned warriors grew eager—like predators in the presence of prey.

"Sorry," said Luo Feng. "Can't stick around."

Sou!

Luo Feng shook his wing and started to fly away.

"Intruder!" one of them roared.

"Quick! Go after him!" the captain shouted. "First team and second team, follow me! Third team, stay here!"

Howl!

Howl!

Suddenly, one bloody shadow after another flew up into the sky, roaring and raced toward Luo Feng.

As soon as Luo Feng breached the ocean, he felt the stark difference between the outside world and the sky and land, which were so different from other districts in Nine Remoteness Space. Stars shone in the sky, and a blurry, bloody mist permeated the air, giving the entire sky and land unparalleled strength.

"The resistance is so strong!" he said.

Suddenly, he realized that the strange strength here stopped the space ripple completely, thus suppressing God Country Transportation.

"No teleportation...!" he muttered in disbelief. "No God Country Transportation!"

Finally, Luo Feng understood why even universe knight-level great beings could only arrive here through the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. Teleportation and God Country Transportation were impossible.

Howl!

"Hahaha!"

Laughing voices blasted Luo Feng's ears with undying energy. He looked back to see a multitude of bloody figures dashing toward him.

"Foreign invader!" roared the captain. "This sky and land belong to our race. While you are heavily suppressed here, we are unaffected. There's no way you can get away!"

Luo Feng could feel the bloody mist suppressing the space ripple, yet these creatures flew unaffected.

"You, merely undying fighters, want to catch up with me?" Luo

Feng said.

Heng!

His Shi Wu Wings ripped through the air, causing space turbulence as his speed surged, and he shot into the distance.

******

The warriors could only watch as the intruder flew farther and farther away. Soon, he became a small, silver spot, then vanished. They stood there, perplexed and staring at each other.

"How could he be so fast?" they asked one another. "He's only an undying fighter from a foreign race. How can he be faster than us here in our homeland?"

The 300 undying warriors were unprepared for this. They were highly experienced in dealing with foreign invaders. The speed of undying fighters of other races was always sharply reduced when they entered their homeland, thus allowing them to easily outpace any intruders. If it was a universe knight, they would immediately report it and ask the universe knights of their race to take up the matter, but this one had only been a normal undying fighter.

"Damn it!" roared the biggest of the bloody-horned warriors. "We let an undying fighter from another race get away!"

They warriors looked to their captain. "What should we do, captain? What now?"

The burly figure growled, "We report what happened, of course! Unless you want to die!"

******

Stars shone in the sky, dimmed by the bloody mist hanging over the land. Mountains, streams, and forests covered the land. When Luo Feng finally felt confident that he had evaded the 300 warriors, he slowed to a halt and looked around.

"Such a large world," he said. "I've flown 6 billion miles already

and haven't encountered any other life forms. This race must only have a small number of creatures, but they're all incredibly powerful."

He sat down with his legs crossed.

No teleportation and no God Country Transportation, he thought. Which means I can't break out of here. All I can do is wait to be killed by this race like a lamb awaiting the slaughter!

Luo Feng checked his coordinates and found that, strangely, this sky and land were the at the bottom of the Nine Remoteness Ocean.

"I'm at the center of Nine Remoteness Ocean," he muttered to himself. "According to my coordinates, it's still inside Nine Remoteness Space."

Though I can't teleport myself, my Mosha body could use his talent technique "domain" to get in, he thought. As long as Mosha body isn't also hunted, he should be able to get here without any trouble.

"I'll wait here first," he said. "Mosha body has been floating for such a long time on his approach to the World Tree, and it's only a month before he reaches the final stage of the mission."

Luo Feng pondered the situation for a while and concluded that what happened around him was already beyond his control, whereas he was confident that Mosha body could get a twig and leaf of the World Tree this time.

"I can't give up now," he decided. "Besides, escape is not guaranteed, even if Mosha body were to enter now. I need to get in touch with my teacher first."

******

Just as Luo Feng connected to Primal Chaos City Leader through the virtual universe, members of the indigenous race were communicating with each other through the virtual world they

had set up in Nine Remoteness Space.

In an opulent palace in an ancient city at the center of Nine Remoteness Space, a burly black-armored universe knight roared with fury.

"A foreign invader? You can't even catch an undying fighter from another race! Follow me, my children!"

"Yes, general!"

The burly universe knight led an elite team of ten warriors to fly out from the city.

"Ma Ma Tuo," a voice said within the universe knight's head.

His godly body trembled before he stopped, and the warriors behind him followed his lead.

"General?" the warriors said, confused.

"It was the prince," the burly universe knight said in a deep voice.

"Prince?"

The ten captain-level elite warriors were all started. They quickly began to grovel, along with their general, as in the distance, tens of creatures flew out of the most towering palace of the ancient city. Three of them were unbelievably powerful. They reached the group in no time.

"Your highness," the universe knight-level general said, bowing to show respect.

"Your highness," echoed the ten warriors behind him as they kneeled.

The leader of the creatures that had just arrived had a handsome face covered in red engravings. He wore gorgeous armor of gold and red, emanating a powerful ripple that could only have come from a true treasure. He was the prince, and he stood apart from all the others of his race. He looked as if he were from a different race entirely.

"General Ma Ma Tuo," said the prince in a fair voice. "I just heard that a team under your command found a foreign invader. He's only an undying fighter, yet he managed to escape your team?"

"Yes, your highness," the burly general answered respectfully.

"Interesting," the prince continued. "An undying fighter with such power. I heard that out of the heirs in the Ancestral God School, some undying fighters are mighty. I'm also undying. Who's better? I wonder. Him or me...?"

"You have invincible power, your highness," answered General Ma Ma Tuo. "That invader is not your match."

"We can't underestimate other races," the prince said. "Lead the way. Let's go hunt this undying fighter from another race."

"Um..." The burly general was dazed.

"You're afraid that I might run into danger?" the prince asked.

"No, that's not what I meant, your highness," the general answered.

"Humph! All of my 107 brothers are still alive," the prince said confidently. "How dangerous can it be? Go."

"Yes, your highness," the general said, with no choice but to follow orders.

Sou!

The great beings departed to hunt down this undying fighter alongside their prince.

Chapter 980: Nine Remoteness Master

At the apex of Thunder Island in the virtual universe, outside the palace surrounded by fog, Luo Feng showed up.

"Things are out of my control," Luo Feng said, standing in front of the palace and pondering what had happened. "If I can't get out there, my treasures will get taken away. It'll be difficult to get them back."

"Luo Feng," said a voice.

Luo Feng was dazed and turned his head. He saw someone in a golden cape standing beside the cliff. It was Primal Chaos City Leader, who was overlooking Thunder Island below him.

Luo Feng walked towards him and saluted. "Teacher."

Primal Chaos City Leader glimpsed at Luo Feng and smiled. "You came here to see me, but you're wandering outside the door. You told me before you were going to Nine Remoteness Space to find the twigs and leaves of World Trees to breed your third body. What happened? Did something go wrong?"

Luo Feng answered respectfully, "I've been following my plan with the World Trees, and I hope I can get some. However, something happened to my original earthling body."

"Hmm." Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng.

"My original earthling body was hiding in Rock Island, the safest place in Nine Remoteness Space, but I didn't expect another group of heirs to arrive. One of them was Bark Mirror Emperor. He's famous for his tracking skills, and that was how he found me. He's jealous of my true treasures, and he attacked me."

"Bark Mirror Emperor?" Primal Chaos City Leader was startled. "How did you escape if he attacked you? Have you lost your true treasures to him?"

"No." Luo Feng shook his head. "I got away."

"You got away?" Primal Chaos City Leader was bewildered. "Although he's only an undying fighter, he can rival a universe knight, especially with his talent technique."

"I have another true treasure to protect my soul," Luo Feng said.

"Another true treasure?"

Primal Chaos City Leader furrowed his brow. He could infer from Luo Feng's past battles that Luo Feng's spiritual force weapon was a true treasure, but he didn't expect him to have a third true treasure that could protect his soul.

"Luo Feng," he said, "how many true treasures do you have now?"

Luo Feng was a bit embarrassed. "Three. Shi Wu Wing, spiritual force weapon, and a true treasure to protect my soul. Only three."

"Only three?" Primal Chaos City Leader said. "I only had one true treasure when I was a sector lord. Count yourself lucky."

Luo Feng was a bit perturbed. What if Primal Chaos City Leader teacher asked him where he had obtained the other two true treasures?

"Even if you have a true treasure to protect your soul, Bark Mirror Emperor has the power of a universe knight and won't let you go that easily," said Primal Chaos City Leader.

Luo Feng was relieved that his teacher didn't ask where the two true treasures had come from. Otherwise, he would have to lie. After all, star tower was the biggest secret. True treasures like Star Map and Shi Wu Wing were looked down upon by lots of universe masters, who gave them to the great beings of their own races.

True treasures like Sky Wolf Palace were desired by universe masters, and true treasures like Thousand-Treasure River were craved for by universe masters. As for the top-tier ones like star map, they would send the races of the universe into a frenzy. Even

by the most powerful beings in the universe longed for them, just like Five-Color Aurora Lake, which protected the greatest power in the universe.

Luo Feng knew that the secret of star tower could not be exposed before he could fully control it. Otherwise, no matter how many people were on his side, he wouldn't be able to stop the mad desire of the other great beings.

"Theoretically, I wouldn't have gotten away," said Luo Feng. "However, he was chasing me in the Nine Remoteness Space. I found the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool and thought it would be difficult to get the true treasures back if they fell into the hands of Bark Mirror Emperor. Although the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool is famously hazardous, I figured I wouldn't die instantly, at least, so I dove into the whirlpool."

He paused for a moment. "Nine Remoteness Whirlpool was kind of similar to a wormhole. I went to another world. A group of special organisms live there, all of whom are tall and red with bloody horns. There are hundreds of undying fighters of another race guarding the entry point. Luckily, I managed to escape. I think there will be more great beings coming after me, and I can neither teleport nor cast God Country Transportation in that world. The only thing I can do is to stall. The sky and land there are enormous, so I might be able to avoid detection for a while."

Primal Chaos City Leader nodded his head mildly. "You did the right thing. Bark Mirror Emperor comes from the Northern Territory Alliance, and their behavior has been tyrannical. You won't get your belongings back if you lose them to them."

Luo Feng began to sweat. Tower pearl was connected to the most vital things. Although it was unlikely that Bark Mirror Emperor would recognize that, star tower would acknowledge someone as its master only after the tower pearl merged with that creature's soul, which was why it had to be protected at all costs.

Luo Feng looked at Primal Chaos City Leader. "What should I do now?"

"Haha! Are you asking a favor now?" said Primal Chaos City Leader, a smile on his face. "I've never been to the Ancestral God Secret Region, and I know little about it, but I know some of the most terrifying beings in the Ancestral God Secret regions who can roam the universe. What are the universe coordinates of this strange land?"

"Below Nine Remoteness Ocean," Luo Feng said.

"Hmm." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded. "Then I've guessed correctly. I can only sense the keepsake you left there, and it's being interfered with by that realm. There are only a few beings in the universe that are capable of doing that."

Luo Feng was startled. That was the saving object his teacher had given to him, and it was used to call for help from his teacher in a crucial moment.

"I've never been to Nine Remoteness Space, but I know the master of Nine Remoteness Space is called 'Nine Remoteness Master,'" said Primal Chaos City Leader. "The sky and land you're currently in is his home."

"Nine Remoteness... Master?" Luo Feng blinked his eyes.

"That's right. He's a universe master. Of course, you mustn't compare him with Master of Sky Wolf. Nine Remoteness Master is at least as powerful as me."

Luo Feng was shocked. At least as powerful as his teacher? Primal Chaos City Leader had three bodies, and all of which were incredibly powerful. To think that Nine Remoteness Master was his teacher's equal!

"Nine Remoteness Master can roam the universe, and almost no one is his better." Primal Chaos City Leader continued. "Even the Ancestral God School treats him with respect, and the three

ancestral gods are friends with him. Nine Remoteness Master deals with things that they and the beast gods find... tricky."

Luo Feng listened carefully.

"He is mighty," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "Especially in Nine Remoteness Space, his home. There, he is invincible, and no one in the universe can possibly defeat him.".

Luo Feng opened his eyes wide. There was no need for his teacher to lie to him.

Everybody said Primal Chaos City Leader was unbeatable while within the primal universe. Little did they know that Nine Remoteness Master was also undefeatable while in Nine Remoteness Space.

"In Nine Remoteness Space, he can realize his full potential," Primal Chaos City Leader explained. "The most powerful World Tree—and some other beings that have the power of universe masters—as long as they live in Nine Remoteness Space, they all serve Nine Remoteness Master. That's why other supreme beings of the universe are reluctant to go there. They are at a disadvantage in Nine Remoteness Space. I also don't want to go to that place. Undying fighters and universe knights are willing to venture there for a chance to acquire some valuables, but real universe masters are not. Nine Remoteness Master is always ruthless. It's difficult for him to kill a universe master in other places, but in his Nine Remoteness Space, it's easy for him to do so."

Luo Feng was amazed. He had never expected such a supreme being to be hidden in Nine Remoteness Space. The heirs throughout history only knew basic facts of that realm. They were not strong enough to make this supreme being show himself.

"He's invincible," Luo Feng said, thinking about his destiny. "Teacher is invincible in the primal universe, and Nine Remoteness Master is invincible in Nine Remoteness Space. Can I

be like them, undefeatable in the universe, someday in the future?"

They were only invincible in certain places, but it was a tempting thought. As long as they placed one of their bodies in that place, they were immortal.

Primal Chaos City Leader did not answer but said, "Nine Remoteness Master is my equal, and we have cooperated several times. Besides, he owes me a favor."

"Owes you a favor?" Luo Feng said.

"If you really run into danger and can't manage to escape," Primal Chaos City Leader said, looking at Luo Feng, "shout out, 'Nine Remoteness Space, I'm a disciple of Chaos!' Nine Remoteness Master controls Nine Remoteness Space completely. Nothing that happens there can be hidden from him. He'll know when you shout out. No matter what kind of danger you're in, he'll make sure you're safe."

Luo Feng understood.

"I only ask that you don't cash in that favor if you don't need to," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "Do it only if there's literally nothing else you can do."

Luo Feng was moved, and he nodded. "I understand."

Returning a favor was no easy matter. A supreme being like Nine Remoteness Master owing a favor... This was so rare that it was as worthy of a true treasure.

"If you do shout out, you can request that he do something for you," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "For instance, you can tell him that you want the leaves and twigs of that sector lord-level World Tree. He'll say yes to this kind of request. But remember, such a favor will not be easy to return."

"I understand." Luo Feng nodded solemnly.

He still had Mosha body, which at least gave him a small chance

of escape. He wouldn't cash in the favor unless he was at an impasse.

Primal Chaos City Leader smiled and said, "Go."

"Yes, teacher." Luo Feng saluted the leader and disappeared.

Chapter 981: Celebration

In a world permeated with blood-red mist.

I didn't expect the entire Nine Remoteness Space to belong to Nine Remoteness Master, Luo Feng thought, hiding in the grass. Nine Remoteness Master is invincible here. Is it because this special environment helps with his amplification?

Luo Feng pondered the possibilities. This was all far beyond his understanding.

"Hmm," he muttered. "Why are they looking for me?"

Luo Feng connected to World of Glory with his mind.

******

In the open-air square of World of Glory.

All the heirs looked to Luo Feng, who had just shown up.

"Look, it's Blade River Emperor."

"Blade River Emperor showed up. He's incredible! It's difficult to kill him with his talent clone technique."

Luo Feng felt a bit awkward being stared at like this.

Why are they all staring at me?

These heirs were all peerless talents, and his 620,000 battles were things of the past. He had entered the World of Glory plenty of times before, but only a small portion of the heirs noticed him then. Now, everyone was staring at him as if he were a treasure to be claimed.

"Blade River!" Cha Man Emperor yelled from a corner.

Luo Feng walked toward him, attracting attention everywhere he walked. All the heirs were speaking in low voices while staring at him. He was further perplexed.

"Blade River Emperor, do you still have your true treasure, the

wings?" a voice called out.

Luo Feng glanced at the heirs from other races. Many were grinning and shouting at him. They were from Northern Territory Alliance, and their faces, covered with cuticles, disgusted Luo Feng.

Luo Feng sat down at the table with Cha Man Emperor, Li Li Emperor, and Thousand Rain Emperor, all of whom were his closest allies among the heirs from Hong Alliance. "What's going on?" he asked.

Cha Man Emperor blocked the sound around them and started to whisper. "Blade River, I heard you were hunted by Bark Mirror Emperor and got trapped in Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. Is that true?"

Luo Feng was shocked. He'd only been trapped there for a short while. The news had spread quickly.

"So it's true?" Thousand Rain Emperor asked, surmising the truth from the expression on Luo Feng's face.

Luo Feng nodded. "Yes."

There was no need to hide the truth if everyone already knew.

"You're really trapped in the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool?" Thousand Rain Emperor continued. "That place... Even a universe knight is unlikely to survive there."

Li Li Emperor and Cha Man Emperor, who sat beside him, gazed worriedly at Luo Feng. Cha Man Emperor added, "They say you were hunted, and your true treasure, the set of wings, was left in that dangerous place."

"Where did you guys hear this?" Luo Feng couldn't help asking.

"The heirs are talking about it in the square," Cha Man Emperor answered, "and after a short while, everyone knew. I heard you were chased by Bark Mirror Emperor and you resorted to diving

into the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool."

"Did you really die in the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool?" Li Li Emperor asked.

Many heirs presumed that Luo Feng had already died once and had resurrected himself using his clone technique, leaving his true treasure abandoned there.

Luo Feng shook his head. "I was trapped in the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool, but I didn't die immediately. I unintentionally entered a dangerous world, and I'm still there, just struggling to survive. It seems you guys knew about it immediately after I got trapped. Word spread pretty quickly..."

It must have been Here Crow Knight or Bark Mirror Emperor or their sidekicks who had spread the news.

"Where did the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool lead?" asked Cha Man Emperor.

"How dangerous is it?" Li Li Emperor asked.

Thousand Rain Emperor just stared at Luo Feng.

This was classified information. Secrets about this place were considered invaluable intelligence that should not be leaked. Only information about places that could be easily discovered by the heirs was made public.

"It's dangerous," said Luo Feng. "Highly dangerous."

Luo Feng summarized the bloody-horned universe knight who had chased Bark Mirror Emperor.

"I can't teleport or use God Country Transportation there," he said in a low voice. "Also, there are hordes of great beings. I'm still struggling. Chances are, I won't make it out."

"No teleportation and no God Country Transportation?" Cha Man Emperor, Li Li Emperor and Thousand Rain Emperor were stupefied.

"Isn't that a world of sealing treasure?" Cha Man Emperor said.

Luo Feng sighed. There was no way out. Even he didn't die, it would be tragic for a great being to be trapped in an alternate world for an eternity.

"I can't talk with you guys for long. I need to run for my life." And with that, Luo Feng disappeared.

Cha Man Emperor, Li Li Emperor, and Thousand Rain Emperor all committed the secret of the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool to memory. This was no ordinary intelligence. Luo Feng wouldn't have told them if he were not close to them.

******

While Luo Feng was running through that world, trying to flee from the creatures as quickly as possible, everyone was talking about him in the World of Glory. When Bark Mirror Emperor arrived in the open-air square, they stared at him just as they had stared at Luo Feng. Immediately, heirs began approaching him and asking questions.

"Bark Mirror Emperor."

"It's Bark Mirror Emperor!"

"Bark Mirror Emperor, I heard that you chased Blade River Emperor, and he got trapped in Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. Is that true?"

"Humph!" Bark Mirror Emperor snorted.

Without saying anything, he walked to the place where heirs from Northern Territory Alliance gathered. He had planned to adventure in Nine Remoteness Space after failing to take Blade River Emperor's true treasures, but he had received an email from his friends suddenly and realized the news of him chasing Blade River Emperor had been spread through the World of Glory.

"Damn it," said Bark Mirror Emperor. "It's either Here Crow

Knight or those other five bastards. But those five don't have the guts to do that. It must be Here Crow Knight who's telling everyone the news."

He's not stupid, though, thought Bark Mirror Emperor. Blade River Emperor owning a soul true treasure is new information. He's smart enough not to spread that information.

Bark Mirror Emperor sat down with the group of Northern Territory Alliance heirs. He glanced at the heirs around him.

"I know everyone's curious about this," said Bark Mirror Emperor. He smirked. "I have no idea who spread this news, but... it's true. Blade River Emperor indeed dove into the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool after I ran after him. Haha! Even universe knights find it difficult to survive in the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool. Even though Blade River Emperor has a clone technique, his true treasures will be lost there."

Bark Mirror Emperor was bold enough to admit everything without being questioned.

******

Six days later.

On Bauhinia Island sat palaces of all kinds.

Hong!

A sudden, powerful force from the origin law shook Bauhinia Island. Lots of heirs on Bauhinia Island gathered and looked at the center of the origin law energy: the palace of True Yan Emperor.

A five-colored whirlpool came into being above the palace. Gold, wood, water, fire, and ground—all the five law forces merged and led to a nobler, more vigorous origin law energy, which was the center of the five-colored whirlpool. After that, it turned hollow like a mystical portal connecting to the land of origin.

Immense godly energy entered the palace of True Yan Emperor.

All the figures flew up in the sky over Bauhinia Island, watching the scene, thrilled and envious.

"Who made their breakthrough?"

"Space law!"

"Who fully comprehended space law and became a universe knight?"

More than 100 million heirs were stuck in that step, craving for that day to come for them.

"Whose palace is that?"

"I don't know."

"Me neither."

"Who became a universe knight?"

"Don't know."

Only a few of the heirs knew. Even most of the members of the Hong Alliance had no idea. It was Cha Man Emperor who said, "That palace is right next to Blade River Emperor's. That's the other heir of our human race. Two heirs came last time. One is Blade River Emperor. The other is True Yan Emperor."

"True Yan Emperor?"

"True Yan Emperor became a universe knight?"

Lots of heirs within the Hong Alliance were astonished.

"True Yan Emperor has been stuck in the last step forever. Now that he finally made his breakthrough, we must visit and congratulate him."

"No need to rush. It's a crucial time for True Yan Emperor. He's surely absorbing godly power now. He can't waste any time."

On the way to becoming a great being, the three most significant milestones were becoming an undying fighter, becoming a universe knight, and becoming a universe master. At those crucial

times, and universe origin law would arrive, especially the first time when an ordinary body turned into a godly body. It could take in as much godly power as it wanted.

When someone became a universe knight or a universe master, he couldn't absorb that much godly power, but it was considerably more than usual. When the origin law arrived, it connected to the "law ocean," and energy could be soaked up without boundaries. Unfortunately, origin law would only stay for a while and would disappear afterward, which was why there was only a short window to absorb the godly power.

After a moment, all the ripple dissipated, and some of the heirs and even universe knights went to visit True Yan Emperor.

"Zhi Ya."

The door opened. True Yan Knight looked outside with a big smile. "Haha! Come on in."

"Congratulations, True Yan Emperor... No, excuse me—True Yan Knight!"

"Congratulations, True Yan, you're officially a universe knight."

Unlike Luo Feng, True Yan Emperor had many more friends, and lots of universe knights were close to True Yan Emperor.

"Finally, after such a long time, I'm a universe knight," True Yan Knight said, nodding. He didn't look apathetic anymore. Instead, he looked vigorous.

"How much godly power did you take in?"

"I tried my best to absorb as much as I could just now," said True Yan Knight. "My godly body was improved by 92 percent."

"Not 100 percent? We humans have smaller bodies and don't have much undying power. You should've grasped the chance and improve 100 percent."

The larger a body was, the more difficult it was to improve it 100

percent. In the case of the enormous World Trees, if they became universe knights, they could take in more godly power than True Yan Emperor in a short period of time, but compared to their sizes, it was nothing; they would need to cultivate for a long time after that.

"True Yan Knight's genes evolved tenfold before. After becoming a universe knight, his godly body's limit is higher. Storing 92 percent is good enough."

True Yan Knight was talking with other great beings, but he was also confused to note that his disciple Luo Feng hadn't come to congratulate him on becoming a universe knight.

Chapter 982: True Yan Knight

In True Yan's palace, all the other great beings were warm and cheerful. It was always was to be on good terms with a universe knight. And the other universe knights in the Hong Alliance were pretty close with True Yan.

Why? Because not all universe knights were the same. Those who had evolved from pinnacle emperors were completely different from universe knights who had evolved from invincible emperors.

There were two kinds of invincible emperors. Silver Eye represented the first type. He had a high life-level. Thus, it was easy for him to become an invincible emperor.

True Yan Emperor represented the second type. He was at an average level within his race and struggled to improve his genes; they were blessed if they could improve it ten times. How difficult it was for them to become invincible emperors—they had to first survive universe knights! This path required some distinctive special skills.

Both of them had great combat power after becoming universe knights. A warrior of the first type had a great godly body after turning into a universe knight. As for the second type, if one could survive universe knight attacks when they were only an undying fighter, how mighty would they be after becoming a universe knight?

******

Eventually, all the guests left except for Wu Tang Knight.

Wu Tang Knight and True Yan Knight had been close friends for a long time, even remaining close after Wu Tang Knight became a universe knight.

"Wu Tang," True Yan Knight said. "Do you know what's going on with Blade River Emperor? I came here with him, and we accepted

our inheritance together at the beginning. But after that, I started to live in seclusion and haven't heard anything about him. Do you know anything?"

He had become a universe knight, yet Luo Feng hadn't come to congratulate him. He knew something was wrong.

Wu Tang Knight had a firm voice. "You don't know anything that's happened since? Then you've really missed a lot. Blade River Emperor stole everyone's thunder by accepting all the battle invitations sent to him by the heirs on this island..."

Wu Tang Knight started to elaborate—from Luo Feng's 620,000 battles to the assassination attempt... and to what had happened recently in Nine Remoteness Space. True Yan Emperor was beaming at first, but as the story went on, his face took on a ghastly expression, especially when he heard how Luo Feng had nearly been assassinated and was now trapped in an impasse because of Bark Mirror Emperor.

"They say Blade River Emperor is Luo Feng," Wu Tang Knight said, smiling at True Yan. "Is Blade River Emperor really your disciple?"

"You don't need to worry about that." True Yan said.

"Haha..." Wu Tang Knight nodded with a smile.

"I need to ask you a favor," True Yan said.

"Just say the word," replied Wu Tang Knight.

He truly did value True Yan highly. For one thing, they had been confidants before. Plus, he believed True Yan had a bright future ahead of him. Given humans' talents, each invincible emperor that could make a breakthrough and become a universe knight was extraordinary.

"I need some information on the dangerous places in the Ancestral God Secret Region," True Yan said. "Especially Nine Remoteness Space."

"You want to go there?" Wu Tang Knight answered.

"Are you kidding?" Fierceness flashed through True Yan's eyes. "How could I not go?"

"Haha! The ferocious True Yan!" Wu Tang nodded. "I've already sent all the information to you through virtual universe."

True Yan grinned. "I've been in Primal Chaos City for hundreds of millions of years. I wonder if anyone remembers me."

******

After only half a day.

After True Yan was in his palace, patiently preparing.

"My old friend," he said, "perhaps you feel really lonely after hundreds of millions of years of not being used."

Suddenly, a black staff appeared in True Yan's hands, and there were two golden hoops on each end of the staff. The staff looked like a simple antique, which was a treasure True Yan had obtained when adventuring in the universe long ago. It had remained by his side through countless adventures, and its killing power had helped make him an invincible emperor.

"My disciple treats me as his family," he said. "I couldn't have become a universe knight without him. This Bark Mirror Emperor dared to bully my disciple. As such, how can I spare him? A special life form, skilled at soul attack and inspection...!"

True Yan suddenly became aggressive. In the past, he had roamed the universe, killing countless fighters to become an invincible emperor. He had lived in seclusion for so long that many of the undying of his generation had died.

"I've created three pinnacle techniques during the past few hundred million of years. Now that I'm a universe knight, I'll try them on you first!"

Madness filled True Yan Emperor's eyes. He had provoked

universe knights before and had survived. He was born to be reckless. His disposition grew savage. After an eternity spent in Primal Chaos City, the real True Yan was back!

Sou!

True Yan flew out of his palace and teleported to the spring portal in front of the palace of the guarding beast god and entered the secret region.

A universe knight could teleport over 1,000 light years. In less than half a day, True Yan arrived at Rock Island in Nine Remoteness Space.

"I'll wait here." True Yan sat at the apex of a mountain with his legs crossed. "Based on the information Wu Tang gave me, the heirs adventuring here will often come back to Rock Island and rest. So when Bark Mirror Emperor comes back..."

True Yan closed his eyes. He was like a tiger—relaxed yet ready to pounce and kill at any moment.

******

Under Rock Island and at the bottom of Nine Remoteness Ocean, in another world, Luo Feng fled helter-skelter, doing his best just to stay ahead of the army by moving as quickly as possible.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Three shadows flashed in the sky and stopped. They were the noble prince and his two universe knights. Both of the universe knights had red skin and bloody horns.

Coldness flashed in the prince's eyes. "We still haven't found this foreign invader, even after all this time."

"Your highness," the lanky universe knight said, "our Nine Remoteness World is vast, and that intruder must constantly be fleeing from us. Perhaps he's far away by now. It could take some time to find him."

"Some time? How long?" The prince frowned. "I'll give an order now. In my territory, each city shall designate half of its soldiers to search for the intruder from another race! Each of them will connect to the virtual world, and if anyone finds him, they will alert me right away. And all the soldiers must remain connected to the virtual world with their minds. Being disconnected means death at the hands of that intruder!"

Each prince was in charge of one territory, and they were the only leaders of their territories respectively. The prince gave an order to all the armies under him through the virtual world.

A great number of undying warriors and sector lord-level warriors flocked to the sky and flew out in different directions. Each of the warriors was responsible for one area.

"Search! Search! Search!"

"Quickly!"

"Go! Search the undying intruder!"

The creatures in Nine Remoteness World were special, as they all had red bodies and bloody horns. They were high-powered life forms with great talents. Like Golden Horned Beasts, they became sector lords automatically as they matured. However, their life level was the same as humans', as they didn't have talent techniques. Since everyone could become a sector lord when they became adults, sector lords were common in the cities, yet compared to humans, the race had a very small population.

Howl!

Howl!

All the indigenous warriors were baying with excitement. They were distributed everywhere across the sky. Some of them used world projection, some used law domain, and some even used undying-power inspection. In short, they were trying anything they could think of to search for Luo Feng.

******

Nine Remoteness World was not very large, yet Luo Feng hadn't seen even a single member of the race. After more than ten days fleeing, Luo Feng finally ran into the first searcher.

While hiding beneath a lake, Luo Feng looked up and saw a bloody shadow flying quickly through the sky. At the same time, an undying power swept across the lake.

Luo Feng hid himself with the micro-detector. He looked above and thought, Humph! You think you can find me with such simple undying-power inspection? Not while I've got the most advanced micro-detector I can afford.

However, as the undying power passed over Luo Feng, it suddenly stopped.

"No... I'm found." Luo Feng realized immediately. "How could I be found?"

The bloody shadow in the sky wheeled around sharply, looked down, and grew excited. "Intruder!" it wailed.

Sou!

Luo Feng didn't have the luxury to ponder how he had been found. He flew out of the water, shook his wings, and shot across the sky like a beam of silver light.

"Intruder! I found the intruder!" the undying warrior screamed as it flew after Luo Feng, but it was being left farther and farther behind. He immediately reported it through his virtual world. "Haha! I found him! This intruder thought I couldn't find him just because he used a detector! Haha! In our Nine Remoteness World, my undying power is combined with Nine Remoteness World energies, and I can distinguish all creatures outside of my race. Even universe knights cannot escape us once they're here."

Sou!

Sou!

Sou!

Luo Feng was terrifically fast, and he soon flew out of the undying warrior's sight.

"How could I have been found?" Luo Feng was bewildered as he flew. "Even invincible emperors can't find me when I turn my detector on. Bark Mirror Emperor found me because of his extraordinary inspection skills, but this was only an ordinary undying creature of this indigenous race! How did he find me? I'm in trouble... Big trouble."

Luo Feng knew peace was no longer an option.

Indeed, at that moment, the prince raced toward the area with his two universe knights the moment he got the news, and he arranged some undying warriors and universe knights to stop Luo Feng.

Chapter 983: Encirclement and Suppression

In the territory that the prince controlled, the undying warriors and sector lord warriors were distributed everywhere, searching for Luo Feng. As a result, even though the prince had ordered them to encircle and suppress Luo Feng, it would take a long time for all the warriors to gather and arrive.

Got to get out of here! thought Luo Feng. The army might be scattered among many places. They're probably trying to encircle me, but it might take them a long time to get here. I might still get away if I hurry.

Luo Feng cast Shi Wu Wing and started to fly rapidly, becoming a streak of silver light.

"I must take advantage of the time and get as far from them as possible," he said under his breath. "I must not allow myself to be encircled. Otherwise, I'll be doomed."

******

A great number of indigenous warriors gathered from all directions while Luo Feng tried to escape from their dragnet.

On the second day, Luo Feng ran into three indigenous warriors consecutively. Two of them were undying warriors while one was a sector lord.

Peng!

Luo Feng's spiritual force entered that sector-lord warrior, but all Luo Feng discovered there was a crystal.

An energy life, he realized. Like Mosha body. Soul attack is useless on them.

Luo Feng glanced at the indigenous sector lord warrior, knowing he wasn't able to manipulate him. He didn't want to waste time killing him, so he shook his wings and flew away.

The indigenous sector-lord warrior was perplexed. "He didn't kill me?" He immediately reported it through the virtual world. "I found the intruder! I found the fighter from another race!"

******

On the second day, Luo Feng encountered three indigenous warriors. On the third day, 12. On the fourth day, 21.

On the fifth day, he encountered 52 indigenous warriors.

As time passed by, the scattered indigenous warriors were continuously gathering, giving Luo Feng a stronger and stronger sense of crisis. But he couldn't do anything about it; the enemies knew his whereabouts.

But on the sixth day, something strange happened. He only ran into one indigenous warrior.

The same thing happened on the seventh day and all the way up to the twelfth day.

"Something's wrong," Luo Feng said. "The natives had been tracking me for the past couple of days. They were encircling and suppressing me. The other day, eleven undying fighters tried to team up and kill me. Why have they all disappeared now?"

Luo Feng sensed a storm coming. He was caught like a rat in a trap. Things were serious this time.

******

In the sky above the mountain valley.

The noble and elegant prince and his two universe-knight servants stood in the sky.

"I didn't expect that foreign undying fighter to be so good at escaping," the prince said, smiling. "The undying fighters from my race can't even catch him. It seems we need to treat him like a universe knight."

"Your highness, the dragnet is almost complete," the thin

universe knight said respectfully. "The nine generals are all in place and awaiting your orders. Soon the army will capture him. That intruder has no chance to run away."

"Don't rush. I'll go there first." The prince smiled. "I'm curious about this powerful undying fighter. It'll be a pity to let the generals kill him. I'll do it myself."

"Yes, your highness," the two universe knights answered with respect.

"Go," the prince ordered.

Sou!

They flew directly to the dragnet circle.

Even the superior prince didn't have any universe knights to serve him. Nine generals were the extent of his influence. Fortunately, it was safe for him in Nine Remoteness Space. Thus, he could send all the generals there.

******

"The native warriors must be preparing to besiege me," said Luo Feng. He stood at the edge of a swamp and frowned. "There are probably multiple waves of them. Even if I manage to break through the first wave, the rest of the warriors will draw closer to me. There might even be some teams led by universe knights."

Luo Feng had seen indigenous universe knight warriors before. Even Bark Mirror Emperor would have to run from them.

"I'll be doomed if I run into a native warrior at the universe knight level." Luo Feng frowned. "Execute the body plan."

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

Nine figures showed up around Luo Feng. All of them were from other races.

"Master of master," they said in unison, saluting Luo Feng.

"Turn into me," Luo Feng ordered.

"Yes, master."

All the undying slaves had different forms of godly bodies, and all of them transformed their shapes into that of Luo Feng. The only difference was their auras. Undying fighters could transform their shapes—although, if they were too large, their strength would be undermined. But that didn't matter to Luo Feng. As for different auras, only a few of the indigenous fighters had seen Luo Feng, and it was almost impossible for the entire army to recognize him.

"Follow my lead," Luo Feng ordered. "You're number one, and you're number two. You two will move first."

With that, Luo Feng initiated his plan. His slaves also had slaves, especially ordinary undying fighters, and official-level ones. Luo Feng didn't mind losing nine of them if that was what it took to get out of here.

"Yes," Slave number one and slave number two followed, flying away.

Luo Feng's plan depended on the nine decoys luring the indigenous warriors to change their plan.

Just as he was executing his plan, he received a message from the World of Glory. The message was simple: "True Yan Knight is fighting the Northern Territory Alliance."

Luo Feng nearly jumped out of his skin. "True Yan... Knight? My teacher became a universe knight? And he's fighting the Northern Territory Alliance? How is my teacher fighting Northern Territory Alliance?"

Bark Mirror Emperor came to mind. Although Luo Feng was still carrying out his escape plan, it would take him two to three days to finish that. He spared a bit of his mind to connect to the World of Glory.

******

In the open-air square of the World of Glory.

Again, Luo Feng's appearance drew the attention of the other heirs. He went to where the Hong Alliance was gathered.

"What happened?" Luo Feng said down and looked at Cha Man Emperor, Li Li Emperor, and Thousand Rain Emperor.

"They're fighting!" Thousand Rain Emperor said, excited. "It's madness!"

"True Yan Knight is impressive." Cha Man Emperor said. "His time in seclusion has made him furious. Now that he's finally broke out, he's thrilling!"

"Thrilling, indeed," Li Li Emperor said. "Really thrilling."

"Come on! Tell me what happened." Luo Feng was totally lost. "True Yan Emperor became a universe knight? And what's his issue with Northern Territory Alliance?"

They all looked at Luo Feng. Rumor had it that Luo Feng was Blade River Emperor, and if that was true, it was understandable why Blade River Emperor cared about True Yan Knight so much.

"True Yan Emperor became a universe knight around half a month ago," Cha Man Emperor said. "After that, he left Bauhinia Island. We don't know where he went, but now we presume he went to Nine Remoteness Space!"

"Nine Remoteness Space?" Luo Feng's heart missed a beat.

"Yes, it happened today," Cha Man Emperor said with thrill. "True Yan Knight and Bark Mirror Emperor began doing battle on Rock Island."

"True Yan Emperor defeated Bark Mirror Emperor," Thousand Rain Emperor said. "Can you believe that? Bark Mirror Emperor was almost killed! And he survived only by summoning a great being from his Northern Territory Alliance... And his name is Wan Feng Knight."

"Wan Feng Knight is a sub-member of the Ancestral God School," Li Li Emperor said. "He's powerful."

"It was him?" said Luo Feng.

Other than candidate prophets and candidate deified generals, only high achievers on the path of beast god inheritance—those who had at least completed the fifth-level inheritance—were qualified to be sub-members of the Ancestral God School. Xi Luo Duo, who had completed the sixth-level inheritance, was a universe overlord. Wan Feng knight, although not yet a universe overlord, was pretty close.

"And then?" Luo Feng asked nervously.

"True Yan Emperor pulled no punches," Cha Man Emperor said excitedly. "After almost killing Bark Mirror Emperor, he started to fight Wan Feng Knight. But Wan Feng Knight is a sub-member of the Ancestral God School. True Yan Knight is not his match. He fled from Wan Feng Knight and retreated back to Bauhinia Island."

"He successfully retreated?" Luo Feng said, feeling relieved.

"Yes," Cha Man Emperor said, nodding. "When True Yan Knight was still an emperor, he fought with universe knights, and he was able to survive. He's good at escaping. I heard that Bark Mirror Emperor is much slower than True Yan Knight and couldn't even get away. If Wan Feng Knight hadn't arrived when he did, Bark Mirror Emperor would have died."

Luo Feng was amazed. His teacher was always so low-key. He had been hiding in Primal Chaos City for hundreds of millions of years, stuck at the final step. Little did others expect that he might be even faster than Bark Mirror Emperor after becoming a universe knight, as well as being astoundingly aggressive.

Luo Feng was happy for his teacher. "Impressive," he said. "My teacher can resist Bark Mirror Emperor's talent technique."

Luo Feng was curious and exhilarated about that fight. He

connected to the virtual universe and got in touch with his teacher.

******

In an exclusive area in the virtual universe.

Each universe knight of the human race was granted a section of space. This one was a floating golden mountain. The apex of the golden mountain was covered with ice and snow. Flames burned beneath the mountain, while in the middle lived countless black plants. They managed to grow tenaciously despite being constantly burned.

Luo Feng showed up, smiled, and shouted, "Teacher!"

True Yan Knight was sitting in his palace and drinking while wearing golden armor.

"Haha! Come here, my disciple," True Yan Knight called to Luo Feng. "Drink with me. I'm so joyful. So joyful!"

Luo Feng walked to his teacher without saying anything.

"Disciple, do you know why I'm so joyful?" True Yan Knight looked at Luo Feng.

"Why?" Luo Feng asked. "Is it because of your recent battle?"

"I expected to beat Bark Mirror Emperor easily, yet I was severely injured by that Wan Feng Knight. 54 percent of my godly body was gone! Why would I be joyful of that?" True Yan Knight gritted his teeth.

Luo Feng was curious. "Then why are you so joyful, teacher?"

Chapter 984: Twigs and Leaves of World Trees

"Windfall!" True Yan Knight took the wine and drank three glasses of it. He then looked at Luo Feng with sparkling eyes. "You know, I'm kind of lucky, too. Although my luck is nothing compared to yours, it's still fairly good."

"Teacher, you got a valuable?" Luo Feng asked.

"Wrong!" True Yan Knight shook his head. "When you become a universe knight, unless you make another breakthrough during your practice, getting a valuable is what makes you happiest. However, it's not accurate to say I got a new valuable. I didn't. The reason I'm happy is because the treasure I have turns out to be extraordinary. Although it's not a true treasure, it's definitely a top-tier treasure."

Luo Feng smiled. "Congratulations, teacher."

"I'm indeed happy. I didn't even find it special when I was an undying fighter," True Yan Knight said. "This was the first time I fought after becoming a universe knight. Under my new burning godly power, it evolved into a second form. It's definitely a top-tier treasure. If it has a third form, it's qualified as a true treasure."

Luo Feng nodded. Shi Wu Wing had three forms. Luo Feng couldn't help but ask, "Teacher, what kind of treasure are you talking about?"

"Haha!" True Yan Knight glanced at Luo Feng and continued, "Although I have great techniques, Bark Mirror Emperor is proficient in tracking and inspection, and he has incredible escaping skills. Even though I can suppress him, I can't stop him from running away from me. However, a pair of combat boots I had obtained before changed into their second form, revealing their real power."

"Those boots I created—the ones with the pinnacle technique—made me much faster," True Yan Knight said. "Even Bark Mirror Emperor couldn't run away from me. I could even escape Wan Feng Knight, who's far stronger than me. My disciple, treasures that can help you flee are precious. Wan Feng Knight is as powerful as Shi Huo Knight. Being able to get away from him means I'm only an average-level universe knight, but I'm much better at fleeing. Getting a treasure is indeed delightful. All the more so if you discover that an ordinary treasure you already possess is incredibly powerful."

Luo Feng considered these words. Even a dusty old treasure might still shine someday. True Yan had also, finally, seized his opportunity to shine. After many long years, he now stood among the great beings of the universe.

"Teacher," said Luo Feng, "you said you're only at the average level. How did you crush Bark Mirror Emperor? I've heard that lots of universe knights are afraid of him."

"Bark Mirror Emperor isn't that powerful himself," True Yan Knight explained. "It's his talent techniques that make him strong. You should know, an ordinary universe knight has a godly body 100 times stronger than an emperor limit."

"Yes, I do." Luo Feng nodded.

"Even the most average universe knights have godly bodies ten million times stronger than sector lords," True Yan Knight continued. "Every universe knight will try to improve their life level. Generally, they can improve it several times. As for me, I've already improved mine ten times. After I became a universe knight, my godly body became 100 million times that of a sector lord. Bark Mirror Emperor's godly body is 2,000 times stronger than that of an average emperor limit, which means his godly body is only twice as powerful as mine."

Luo Feng nodded. That gap was not excessively large.

"His godly body, together with his defending true treasures, is what gives him the leverage to rival ordinary universe knights. Unfortunately for him, his attacking skills are mediocre, and his godly body is only twice as powerful as mine. Besides, his law comprehension is worse than universe knights, and his techniques are weaker than most universe knights. That's why he has such mediocre attacking skills. He can only resort to his talent techniques."

"His talent techniques are indeed mighty," True Yan Knight went on. "Fortunately, I'm on the warrior path. I've been studying 'soul defense technique,' knowing that warriors are most vulnerable to soul attacks like illusions. I already had strong soul defense when I roamed the universe before, and it's already a pinnacle technique. During my hundreds of millions of years in Chaos City, I spent much of my time and energy creating techniques because I knew I couldn't have a key breakthrough in law comprehension. Though I'm not as talented as you, I created three pinnacle techniques after hundreds of millions of years of practice. The most useful and powerful one is soul defense technique. It's still a pinnacle technique, but it's ten times sturdier than the original one."

True Yan Knight smiled and added, "My burning godly power, my soul defense technique, and my will—after being polished for hundreds of millions of years—give me the confidence to resist that soul attack. After all, Bark Mirror Emperor has never killed a universe knight up until now."

Luo Feng nodded. Zhu Chong Emperor had killed universe knights before, but Bark Mirror Emperor hadn't.

"I can withstand his talent technique attack." True Yan Knight grinned. "After that, he'll be crushed."

On Bauhinia Island. In Bark Mirror Emperor's palace.

"Damn it! Damn it! Damn it!" Bark Mirror Emperor roared.

His voice echoed through his palace. No one outside could hear it.

Hatefulness filled his heart.

"Damn you, True Yan!" Bark Mirror Emperor clenched his teeth. "I remember you, now. You dared attack me! You dared attack the great special organism! You're seeking death! When I become a universe knight, I'll crush you like a bug... Impressive, though, that you could withstand my talent technique. And that staff technique is terrifying."

Bark Mirror Emperor shuddered as he recalled what had happened. True Yan had almost killed him with the black staff.

"If I didn't have my true treasures. And if Wan Feng hadn't arrived in time..."

Bark Mirror Emperor shivered at the thought. Although his protecting true treasure was mighty, True Yan Knight was apparently more advanced at law comprehension, and the staff technique was exceptional. Even though the protecting real treasure was significantly weakened, his godly body still deteriorated.

Bark Mirror Emperor was full of resentment, seething with insanity. He had never been so close to death before. The more he thought about it, the more he hated that human.

"Just you wait," he muttered. "Someday, I'll become a universe knight. Just you wait..."

In the world of Nine Remoteness Space.

Luo Feng's mind had just come back from the virtual universe.

"Rumor has it a universe knight turned from an invincible emperor is more powerful than ordinary universe knights." Luo Feng nodded. "That rumor, it seems, is far from baseless. Practice makes perfect. My teacher is an invincible emperor already, and after practicing for an eternity, his techniques are constantly being refined. Now that he's made his breakthrough, he's magnificent."

Luo Feng smiled. Mosha body had finally reached the World

Trees.

"As long as I get a leaf from the World Tree," muttered Luo Feng, "I can breed my third body. Then I'll become undying. You dare to rob me, Bark Mirror Emperor? I shall kill you after I become undying."

Luo Feng had extra confidence in himself. Once he became undying, his targets would be several universe knights—and some unique organisms like Zhu Chong Emperor! As for Bark Mirror Emperor? He'd kill him directly.

"This shot determines whether or not I can get a leaf from the World Tree."

Luo Feng considered his future for a moment. He concentrated on his Mosha body.

On Tree Island in Nine Remoteness Space.

Beautiful plants covered the serene landscape of Tree Island. Seeds floated through the air.

Mosha body's seed cluster landed on the ground beside the sector lord-level World Tree.

"Arrived," Mosha body said. "This is it."

He had been looking forward to this for a long time. Through the tiny filaments of the seed cluster, he could see everything in the front of him. The World Tree towered over him, each of its leaves like emerald jades. Halos surrounded the crown and the trunk.

Meanwhile, in the cave of Rock Island.

A pinnacle emperor slave with a flame origin crystal teleported himself three times.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

After the second teleportation, he arrived in the sky of the ocean. After the third, he arrived at the center of Tree Island, the domain of World Trees.

He arrived in the crown of the sector lord-level World Tree nearest to Mosha body, around 300,000 miles away.

"Explode!"

The pinnacle emperor slave threw the flame origin crystal, then promptly teleported again, moving a 600,000 miles away. He arrived under a huge tree canopy. He started to attack the sector-lord-level World Tree.

The flame origin crystal exploded!

Hong, long, long!

This flame origin crystal was more powerful than the one that had exploded last time—and at a close enough range to kill a low emperor. And this was already a relatively weaker flame god crystal.

In the aftermath of the explosion, everything close to the crystal was annihilated. In the distance, a plethora of twigs were blasted away like arrows, and the shredded leaves shot out in all angles, carried by the shockwave of the blast.

"Twigs of World Trees," said the pinnacle-emperor slave as it grabbed a twig 1,000 feet thick. "Break!"

The emperor slave tried to snap the twig.

The sector lord World Tree started to roar furiously. Its entire canopy trembled. Its twigs and leaves slashed at the pinnacle-emperor slave.

"Damn other races, damn other races!" it roared. "You dare to hurt me again! Die! Die!"

Chapter 985: Breed the Third Body!

Last time, the most powerful World Tree had intervened, but it was not the case this time. Apparently, he wanted his child to suffer losses and learn some lessons. Besides, his godly power already surrounded the trunk of the sector-lord-level World Tree, which guaranteed his child's survival. In that case, he would rather his child fight for itself and gain some experience.

The pinnacle emperor slave burned its godly power like a star. The mighty, burning, godly power deterred all the twigs and leaves around him.

Snap!

With a crisp snap, like a jade being broken, a twig with a diameter of more than 1,000 feet was cut off by the pinnacle-emperor slave.

"Go!" The pinnacle emperor slave was ready to teleport and leave.

Following Luo Feng's order, he had thrown a flame origin crystal. With his burning pinnacle-emperor undying body, he had easily cut off a branch of that World Tree. Then he'd grabbed a twig and fled.

"Halt!"

The most powerful World Tree, observing from a distance, intervened. An invisible force penetrated the pinnacle-emperor slave holding the offshoot. He trembled violently, then turned to dust that floated away on the breeze.

Dead! Barely half a second had passed between from the appearance of the pinnacle emperor slave and its death.

He was still killed, Mosha body thought from within the seed cluster. I assumed the pinnacle emperor slave throwing the flame god crystal would draw the universe knight World Tree's attention. I knew it would kill him. I just didn't expect it to give

him a chance to break a twig first.

Mosha body was perplexed. The most powerful World Tree could have easily killed the slave the moment it detected him. Instead, it had waited. Luo Feng didn't know what was going on between these World Trees.

Weng, weng, weng!

Countless broken twigs and leaves had been blasted into the sky and scattered everywhere. The shockwave caused some plants' seeds to fly around, and some of the twigs and leaves fell to where Mosha body's seed cluster lay.

"It's coming!" Mosha body was expecting this, but he didn't dare react. Instead, he allowed himself to float along with the shockwave like an ordinary seed cluster.

Hu!

There was only one leaf on one of the broken twigs, and it came toward Mosha body.

"This is the moment," he realized. "Go!"

Mosha body hit a twig.

Zoom!

Silently, he teleported 50 light years away, instantly leaving Nine Remoteness Space.

******

At the center of Tree Island, within the domain of World Trees, the sector lord World Tree was trembling and roaring. "Me! It was me again! Why? Damn it!"

"Haha, poor Seven," taunted its siblings.

"Seven, you told me to stay out of this," said its father. "But if I had, your attacker would've gotten away."

"I told you to stay out of this," snarled the sector lord World Tree.

"I'd rather my twigs be stolen. Why did you meddle, father?"

"Don't kid yourself," echoed the gentle voice of the strongest World Tree. He can breed a Life Tree with that offshoot. I won't let another race steal a World Tree offshoot."

"Humph."

The sector lord World Tree started to recover, and the broken leaves and twigs were flying back to its crown. It didn't even realize that a small twig was gone. The most powerful World Tree sensed this with its dominance over the time and space, but by the time it realized what had happened, Mosha body had already escaped Nine Remoteness Space.

It wasn't strange for the sector-lord-level World Tree not to realize its missing twig. There were fundamental differences between sector lords and undying fighters. Once the tree became undying, each leaf would merge into its soul imprint, meaning it could distinctly sense them. However, for sector lord World Trees, they were still, in a way, mostly botanical; this one had no life imprint on any of its leaves. It couldn't feel them at all.

The same rule applied to humans. If a human undying fighter lost his arm, and it was taken tens of light years away, he could sense the arm's location. This was not the case for sector lords.

With so much of its surroundings in ruins after the explosion, the sector lord World Tree had no way of knowing that one of its twigs had been taken away.

Teleportation? thought the most powerful World Tree. Universe knight-level teleportation? He concealed his aura so well that even I didn't notice it. It must be his talent technique. A universe knight who knows how to change his aura only stole a twig?

The most powerful World Tree was perplexed, but it didn't dig into it, as its child losing a leaf was like a human losing some dandruff.

******

In the space outside Nine Remoteness Space.

Sou!

Luo Feng appeared dressed in black, holding the emerald leaf.

"Haha! Finally, I've got it." He stared at the leaf on his hand and was extremely enlivened. "My third body! If I'm lucky, I can breed a World Tree body with it. It'll be planted in my God Country, which will be stabilized and strengthened by it. Given its size, it will be larger than the godly body of Teacher Zuo Shan Ke and Teacher Primal Chaos City Leader. Even if my other bodies' godly power was exhausted, they could be supplemented by the World Tree body."

Godly power in the law ocean was the purest, and once it merged with a life imprint, it was godly power with a master. His original earthling body, Mosha body, Golden Horned Beast body, and the World Tree body would all be assembled by Luo Feng's soul imprint. Even if the Golden Horned Beast body lost 80 percent of its godly body, it could draw from the World Tree body, as 80 percent of a Golden Horned Beast was less than 1/10,000 of that of a World Tree!

"It can manipulate time and space too. If I can make it." He grew nervous.

Weng!

Emerald light flashed through the area, and an ordinary undying servant walked out of the light. This slave had been sent by Golden Horned Beast in the Primal Secret Region.

"Master of my Master." The slave saluted Mosha body.

"Go."

Mosha body took the slave and cast God Country Transportation. He used that slave as the center of God Country Transportation

and arrived at the Primal Secret Region.

******

In the towering palace of the Primal Secret Region.

Tian Chen Emperor stood in the palace, waiting.

When Tian Chen Emperor saw Mosha body and the undying slave walking out of the emerald light, he bowed. "Master."

Mosha body nodded, but he couldn't concern himself with anything else at the moment. He commanded, "From now on, nobody is allowed in my palace."

"Yes, master," Tian Chen Emperor said reverently.

Sou!

Mosha body disappeared.

******

In the core of his internal world.

Golden Horned Beast body and Mosha body stood on a boundless plain.

Golden Horned Beast's mountainous head was drooping to look at the World Tree's leaf which Mosha body carried.

"The final obstacle," Mosha body muttered. "There's a limit to my internal-world breeding, and it's almost 100 times the life level of golden-horned beasts. The World Tree barely falls within the limit of my internal-world breeding. Will I succeed? Or fail...?"

He was nervous. After so much effort and suffering, and with his original earthling body trapped in the Nine Remoteness World, Luo Feng didn't regret everything he had gone through—as long as he could have the third body! After all, it was difficult for him to have a powerful body suitable for him.

"One last plunge!" Luo Feng's eyes were bloodshot. He had never felt so anxious before.

All his three bodies were looking forward to the result—the result that determined their fate!

Zoom!

A green light flew up in the sky, shining like an aurora. Both Mosha body and Golden Horned Beast body looked up. That leaf of the World Tree flew higher and higher. The internal world had a diameter of more than 60 million miles, and the leaf didn't stop until it flew to the very core of the internal world.

Talent technique—clone, Luo Feng gave an order through his mind.

He had three clone opportunities. One bred the earthling original body, one bred Mosha body, and this was the final one.

Hong, long, long!

The entire internal world trembled, and endless world energies began to gather... All of a sudden, his internal world seemed to have met with the apocalypse. Meanwhile, a colossal golden sphere showed up in the sky.

"The critical moment."

Mosha body, Golden Horned Beast body, and Luo Feng, trapped in Nine Remoteness World, were all high-strung.

Peng!

The golden sphere trembled, which frightened Luo Feng and his bodies.

Peng!

The golden sphere trembled again. It was as if flame god crystals were exploding inside.

Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng! Peng!

The golden sphere reverberated with incessant, powerful blasts. Luo Feng could feel the great pressure from the World Tree's life

imprint inside the golden sphere, and his internal world found it difficult to withstand it.

Bang!

Cracks appeared on that golden sphere. More of them gradually came into view.

"No!" Luo Feng was shaken with fright.

Peng!

After one last quiver, the golden sphere exploded, turning into scattered world energies. The leaf of the World Tree was annihilated.

Luo Feng and the Golden Horned Beast watched quietly. In the aftermath of the explosion, the internal world was silent.

******

In Nine Remoteness World, Luo Feng's heart skipped a beat. He clenched his fist as bitterness flashed in his eyes. The breeding... had failed!

Chapter 986: Travel through Nine Remoteness World

Luo Feng squeezed the grass in front him so hard that it vanished.

"I failed! I failed at breeding the third body!"

Luo Feng felt like he had been knocked senseless. He hadn't even been this upset when his original earthling body was at an impasse. He had been improving himself ever since he stepped off Earth and entered the universe. He had made so many efforts had climbed higher and higher on the ladder to becoming a great being. However, Luo Feng had to admit that Mosha body and Golden Horned Beast body helped him dearly in this process. Talent was just as important as a strong will and perseverance.

"A third body is vital to my future development and my future status in the universe. Like Immortal Knight!"

Even though he's only a universe knight, no universe masters look down upon him, as nobody is able to kill him so far, Luo Feng thought. If I have that World Tree body, even if my other bodies fall, the abundant amount of godly power from the World Tree can revive them in no time. By then, I'll have the same ability as an undying knight. I'll be immortal!

"God Country is the essence of an undying fighter. A World Tree in the God Country not only would stabilize it but also make it much stronger with its talent 'manipulation of space and time.'"

Luo Feng felt wronged. This was the sector lord special life form he had chosen that was most suitable for him! Actually, since he had the Nine Volume Manual, he could've found a flesh-typed special life form which could improve his godly body better than World Trees. However, Luo Feng had enough access authority to know that the universe was limited. For instance, the limit of

godly body amplification and soul amplification were both 100 times. Even the unique life forms were several thousand—or even 10,000 times—stronger than the ordinary ones.

I've already had a golden-horned beast body, and with my Nine Volume Manual, my golden-horned beast body can definitely rival those unique life forms, Luo Feng thought. Given that, I don't need a flesh-type special life form. After all, flesh-type creatures generally don't have large sizes.

The size determined the amount of godly power. The larger a body, the better it was. Take the sector lord World Tree, for example. The explosion of that powerful flame origin crystal damaged several million miles of its body, but compared to its crown, which had a diameter of hundreds of millions of miles, and a height of 40 million miles, it was nothing but a minor injury!

"That most powerful World Tree. Its enormous godly body alone can leave other universe knights in despair. Even if they were to self-destruct, it would be nothing but a bee sting. It doesn't even need to care about law comprehension, with that enormous godly body, only universe masters can be a threat to it."

The injustice of it all was almost too much.

"What should I do now? I didn't succeed at breeding my World Tree body. Apparently, my internal world is unable to withhold it." Luo Feng clenched his teeth. "What should I choose for my third body?"

It was okay to fail once. Talent technique determined that he could have three bodies. Of course, he had to breed all of them before becoming undying, as if he didn't, he would lose his internal body after becoming undying and thus waste the opportunity.

Failure to breed his third body was a heavy blow to Luo Feng, yet he recovered quickly. Now that World Trees couldn't be bred, what other options were there?

"What should I breed for my third body?"

One special life form after another flashed through Luo Feng's mind. Flesh-typed special life forms? Even with the Nine Volume Manual, it could only be as powerful as golden-horned beasts. It was ruled out first!

Rock race? Plant race? There were several options for these two races.

"My first choice was World Tree, and my second choice is the Ancestral Star Tree. Both of them are plant-typed special life forms. Dawn Volcano is my third choice. " Luo Feng shook his head. Compared to World Trees, Ancestral Star Trees were obviously inferior, while the third option, Dawn Volcano, was ranked further below.

Size was of the utmost importance to Luo Feng. World Trees, Ancestral Star Trees, and Dawn Volcano were all special life forms with gigantic bodies.

"I need to think carefully," Luo Feng muttered. "I'm now stuck in Nine Remoteness World and carrying three true treasure. I can't lose any of them, especially Tower Pearl. I'll ask my Mosha body to get me out of here first."

******

Inside a palace surrounded by Thousand-Treasure River in the Primal Secret Region.

Sou.

Mosha body showed up in the palace.

"Master," Tian Chen Emperor said, saluting him.

Tian Chen Emperor was confused. He thought his master would be in seclusion for a long time, which was why he had asked him to stop others from interrupting him. However, he had already come out.

"Humph!" Mosha body was still upset. "Send me to Rock Island."

Mosha body quickly summoned a slave. There was one keepsake ring disguised as a rock in two caves on Rock Island each. Each keepsake ring held several keepsakes belonging to different slaves.

"Yes," the slave of other races said.

Weng!

Golden light flashed. Mosha body could see the boundless ocean on the other side of the portal.

Sou!

Transportation was completed.

******

On Rock Island in Nine Remoteness Space.

Mosha teleported toward the Nine Remoteness Ocean once he arrived at Rock Island. He could distinctly sense the original body's location.

Hong, long, long!

Mosha body showed up in the ocean. These depths were tempestuous. Each drop of water was as heavy as a mountain.

"The original body is right down there." Mosha body looked down. "I can sense the exact location."

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Mosha body kept teleporting himself, moving farther and farther below the ocean. After only three teleportations, he arrived at the bottom of Nine Remoteness Ocean, where bloody steam vented from the ocean floor. The force emanating from it could rival that of universe knights, which intimidated Mosha body.

"I can't teleport myself down there anymore." Mosha body frowned. "The bloody steam suppresses the space ripple completely. According to the universe coordinates, I'm six light

days away from the original body!"

Mosha body felt anxious. Six light days meant even light would take six days to travel that distance. With his talent technique "domain," he could travel a maximum of 6,000 miles each time. Even moving forward 100 times per second would take him two to three days to arrive.

Assuming, of course... that there was no danger awaiting him in the bloody steam.

"But it doesn't look safe." Mosha body looked down at the raging, bloody steam. Although the water in Nine Remoteness Ocean was heavy, it couldn't penetrate the bloody steam. "I must at least try. I'll only lose some energies even if I fail."

Mosha body stopped hesitating and dove into the bloody steam. He didn't use his talent technique domain at the beginning. Instead, he flew normally.

Mosha body felt overwhelming resistance.

Chi, chi, chi!

Mosha body tried to fly inside, but the resistance was unbelievably strong. The deeper he went, the stronger the resistance became. After moving just six feet inside the bloody steam, Mosha body was completely stuck. He couldn't even turn back.

"Terrifying resistance...!" Mosha body was in a panic. "I can get out with domain, but great beings without my talent technique wouldn't be able to move a muscle if they got stuck in this bloody steam. Little wonder that there's such danger in the Nine Remoteness Master's territory. He's invincible here."

Mosha body performed domain.

Sou!

The universe was composed of the elements of time and space,

and every inch of the universe contained space. Mosha body turned into space instantly and turned back to the original body, moving forward 6,000 miles.

Hu! Hu! Hu! Hu! Hu! Hu!

Mosha body kept performing his talent technique, moving forward 100 times per second. Everywhere he passed was filled with endless bloody steam, and the resistance was incredibly strong. Even Mosha body couldn't shake it.

"The original body is right under me." Mosha body could sense it clearly. "Quick, quick, quick!"

Mosha body continuously cast his talent technique, and even though he was tired, he only rested for 20 minutes after six hours of performing domain, after which he continued diving down.

Just when Mosha body tried to dive into Nine Remoteness World, three shadows with great force flew to the circular dragnet formed by countless indigenous warriors. The shadows were the prince and his two universe knights.

The universe knight general standing in the sky gave a salutation. "Your highness."

"Your highness." Over 1,000 warriors echoed the salutation and knelt down with great veneration.

"Hahaha...!" the prince laughed out loud. "An undying fighter from another race can bring such hustle and bustle to my territory. If any universe knight meets him, remember—don't kill him. I'll do it myself. As for other warriors, leave no stone unturned. Follow my orders! Catch him!"

"Yes!" the bloody-horned general answered respectfully.

Meanwhile, the prince gave the order to the other eight generals through the virtual world. With the orders from nine generals, the warriors in the encirclement initiated the plan of capture.

Chapter 987: Walking to His Own Death

After the prince gave his order, the circular dragnet began to narrow.

The circle had a diameter of only 200 million miles, and over 100 million indigenous warriors were involved. For every undying warrior, there were 1,000 sector lord warriors. Although it might be unlikely that the sector lord warriors could stop Luo Feng, they could serve as informants.

It would take Luo Feng two to three days to break through the circle, even if he traveled in sub-lightspeed. There were nine layers of the circle. The inner eight layers were all sector lord warriors. Undying warriors and universe knight generals were in the outermost layer.

"He won't be able to make it," said one of the generals.

"He's already trapped," said the prince. "Being caught will be his only destiny."

The sector lord warriors were tens of thousands of miles away from each other as they started to advance toward Luo Feng. Their world energies were released and connected to Nine Remoteness World energies, sweeping across the entire area. No other races could hide themselves.

The circle narrowed, and the warriors advanced.

After around three hours, a sector lord warrior flying at high speed suddenly stopped, looked down at the ground, and cried out, "Another race! It's the intruder of another race!"

Bang!

The dry land was torn apart, and a shadow in silver armor shot up swiftly, emanating a powerful force.

"Go!" the sector-lord warrior rushed to catch up with him, but he

was too slow in comparison.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

Dozens of sector lord warriors started chasing Luo Feng from all directions, yet they could only watch that silver-armored and silver-winged shadow rush toward the outside of the circle.

"He won't be able to make it. We only make up the innermost layer of the circle. There are nine layers of us!"

The sector lord warriors started to retreat back to their positions.

Meanwhile, the warriors in the northern part of the circle had stopped advancing. The second to eighth layers of sector-lord warriors started to go after him.

Zoom!

A silver-armored, silver-winged shadow was absconding straight through the sector lord warriors.

"He is fast," commented one warrior.

"So fast," agreed another.

Undying fighters had already gathered in the outermost layer. The sector lord warriors in the inner eight layers were trying to locate the intruder, which could help the great beings in the outermost layer congregate beforehand at the crucial position.

From the first layer to the ninth layer, the silver-armored and silver-winged shadow flew for almost 30 minutes.

Almost 800 undying warriors were split into three teams and were ready to fight.

"He's flown through the eighth layer," one reported. "He'll arrive soon."

"Everyone needs to be extra careful," said a general. "This one is extraordinarily fast, and based on previous intelligence, even the head of our race can't catch up with him. One-on-one combat is out

of the question. Each sub-team is going to besiege him."

30 minutes was enough for the undying warriors to fly hundreds of millions of miles away. All the undying warriors, scattered across hundreds of millions of square feet, had gathered—almost 800 undying warriors.

******

The prince stood at the side of the circle.

"He flew in that direction." The prince shook his head. "It's a pity I can't fight him. I hope he's strong enough to preserve 20 or 30 percent of his godly body under the attack of 800 undying warriors of my race. Then I can finally glimpse him."

"Your highness, this intruder is extraordinary," the lanky universe knight general said respectfully. "He won't escape being beleaguered by 800 of warriors of our race... but he can certainly survive."

Light flashed through the prince's eyes. He could see everything through synchronous transfer of the virtual universe.

"Begin," he commanded.

...

Three armies. Almost 800 undying warriors.

"The intruder has arrived," the most senior warrior of the 800 undying warriors announced. Then it gave the order. "Nine Remoteness Joint Attack!"

All the undying warriors raised their sturdy right arms and howled. Their arms started to burn, and undying power flashed in the form of bloody, red light.

Weng!

The visible red flow of air was primed, swirling above each of the undying fighters. The airflow formed blurry figures of blades above every undying warrior's right arm. Overtop of the 200

undying warriors, 200 blurry red blade figures formed a single, giant bloody blade. A giant, bloody blade was concentrated above each of the three armies of undying warriors, attracting blood-red energy from throughout the world, thus empowering them to reach the power limit of undying warriors.

Zoom!

The silver-armored and silver-winged figure showed up, saw the undying-warrior team afar, and began fleeing in the exact opposite direction in a state of panic. Unfortunately, there were now teams of undying warriors in every direction. He could only retreat!

The order was given. "Attack!"

800 undying warriors waved their right arms at the same time.

Hua!

The giant, bloody blades shot out. Nothing could stop them.

The three enormous, bloody blades pursued the silver-armored and silver-winged figure. The figure emanated incredible force in its attempt to flee, but even his speed couldn't compare to the bloody blades. The bloody blades flew hundreds of thousands of miles, and when they touched each other, they exploded simultaneously.

Boom!

The power was so vigorous it was as if it had come from the self-destruction of a super great being. The force swept into the silver-armored, silver-winged shadow.

"Ah!" A shrill, painful scream was heard as the figure was annihilated beneath the great power of the bloody blades.

In the aftermath, the 800 warriors gathered and inspected the area with their undying power.

"The intruder... died!" they realized. "Leaving behind only an ordinary undying weapon and a world ring!"

******

The prince received the news instantly.

"Dead?" said the prince, surprised to hear that the undying fighter from another race—who was faster than his captain-level undying warriors, even in a world where their race was empowered while other races were suppressed—had been killed so quickly. He had expected him to be a force to be reckoned with.

"Your highness, our undying warriors were only the catalyst of the Nine Remoteness Joint Attack," the bulky universe knight explained respectfully. "The world energies on our side played a major part. It's not surprising that the intruder was killed. If there are enough undying warriors to stimulate adequate world energies, even universe knights can be killed."

"Check that world ring," the prince commanded through the virtual world.

After a short while, he got the report. There were no valuables in the world ring. Those ordinary objects inside were just trash to the prince.

The prince shook his head. "It's a fake. The dead intruder must have been an imposter. If he can move faster than a captain-level undying warrior of my race, he must be exceptional outside of this world. How could someone of such stature have so few possessions?"

"Perhaps running is his only skill," the lanky universe knight answered.

"Inspect it again," ordered the prince. "All undying warriors, back to your position. Keep narrowing the dragnet."

800 undying warriors began to retreat. It took them 30 minutes to gather just now, and it would take them nearly 30 minutes longer to return to their positions. A full hour had been wasted because of that silver-armored, silver-winged shadow.

******

Two hours later.

"The intruder is found! The intruder is found!"

"What? Again?"

"Isn't he dead?"

The prince in charge of the circle laughed. "I knew it. We can't underestimate that intruder from another race. He must have been using his undying slaves, who took on his appearance to lure us into his trap."

"Your highness, what should we do now? This one might not be the real intruder, either."

Both of the universe knights looked at the prince. They had some ideas, but the prince was aristocratic; they generally deferred to his judgment.

"Follow the original plan," said the prince. "We need to be careful with every other intruder that appears," the prince said confidently. "We could inadvertently let him get away if we don't."

"But it's going to slow down the entire process," spoke up one of the universe knights.

"I'd rather go slowly than miss one," said the prince with a cruel scowl. "Kill every intruder you find. Don't let any of them get away. The real one will not escape."

******

In the wilderness.

As Luo Feng hid, he thought about his plan. He frowned. As the prince had presumed, both of the intruders were imposters—undying slaves sent by Luo Feng.

Now, all of his undying slaves were traveling throughout the circle, attracting a good number of undying warriors to gather so

he could kill them in the end. It would take the undying warriors one to two hours to gather each every time.

"Fortunately, several of my slaves are soul masters who have dozens or even over 100 slaves of their own, who also have slaves."

Luo Feng wasn't concerned with those slaves. They were not necessarily faster than the indigenous sector lords, yet if they burned their undying power, they would be more than 1,000 times stronger, making them far stronger than sector-lord warriors.

One undying slave after another walked to his death. And they kept stalling time.

"Quick, quick, quick," Luo Feng said, still anxious. "The slaves I send out only slow down one side of the circle while the other three armies are still advancing fast. I need to slow down all four sides!"

Almost 100 slaves will be needed to stall them one more day, Luo Feng thought. Undying slaves are useful for God Country Transportation as bait. I can't waste them recklessly like this.

Luo Feng looked up at the sky. Mosha body was using his talent technique "domain" deep in the bloody airflow over his head, drawing closer and closer.

"Come on," Luo Feng muttered, his stomach in knots. "Hurry! My escape depends on whether Mosha body can get here before they finish narrowing the circle."

His original plan had been to ask the slaves to escape so that the undying warriors in the outermost layer of the circle could gather together, after which he could break free. After giving the plan a second thought, he decided it was unlikely to succeed.

The circular dragnet was delicately formed. There were nine layers, and the last layer served almost like the teeth of a massive gear, with some of the undying warriors distributed in faraway areas as sentries. Even if most of the warriors were attracted by his

ruse, a few of would still remain behind as sentries, tracking in turns. This made it easy for them to block Luo Feng from escaping for one or even two hours.

If my luck runs out, I'll run into a universe knight, thought Luo Feng. Then I'll be doomed.

"The safest way is to ask Mosha body to do the job," he muttered under his breath. "He's the best at disguising and breaking free."

Luo Feng gazed nervously at the sky.

Chapter 988: Break Free

A massive quantity of bloody air had gathered in the sky above Nine Remoteness World.

Even universe knights couldn't venture in this place, the forbidden area of Nine Remoteness World. However, Mosha body teleported through it, his body flashing in the bloody air time and time again as he advanced toward the world below.

"I have to make it!"

******

As Mosha body rocketed through the layer of air, the giant circular dragnet searching for Luo Feng was steadily narrowing.

"A thirty-ninth one! Haha!" the prince said, grinning. "I told you that foreign invader is exceptional. How can an ordinary great being summon so many undying slaves?"

"Your highness, your intelligence is unquestioned," complimented one of his generals.

"It has almost been entertaining watching these undying slaves disguising themselves to try to get away," said the prince. "I especially enjoyed the undying slave who hid another slave inside his world ring, and the one in the world ring started to flee when the undying slave carrying it was killed. Or the three slaves trying to strike different areas of the same defensive line all at once."

"Unfortunately for him," the prince added confidently, "my 100 million warriors won't let him run off."

"That was surely his final gambit," the lanky universe knight said.

"Soon, he will be in an impasse," the other universe knight added.

The prince nodded. "The circle has narrowed to half its original size, and we have adequate warriors now. Half of the warriors shall

follow the original plan while the other half start to advance regardless of whether meeting any intruders or not. I need them to scan the whole place as fast as possible." Fierceness flashed across the prince's eyes. "Then even if the intruder sends his slaves, he can't slow my warriors from advancing."

Both of the universe knights nodded.

Indeed, as the circle being narrowed, the number of indigenous warriors soon appeared intimidating. With an order, half of the sector-lord warriors and undying warriors started to dash inward.

******

"No!"

Luo Feng, hiding in the wilderness, was stunned. He knew what was happening, thanks to the slaves he'd sent.

"They disregard my slaves and start to charge in?" he said. "What should I do...? What should I do now?"

For the first time, Luo Feng grew fearful. Based on his previous calculations, he had abundant time. The only problem was how many undying slaves he would waste. But now, the undying slaves weren't able to slow down their advance, which meant big trouble.

"Come on!" Luo Feng looked up at the bloody air in the sky. "Hurry up!"

******

The dragnet was divided into an outer circle and an inner circle. Warriors in the outer circle were still following the original plan. Those in the inner circle, however, raced in, heedless of the intruder's slaves.

"Onward! Onward! Charge!" cried the army.

One undying slave after another rushed out and broke from the circle easily. Barely any warriors even tried to stop them.

******

After a day, tens of millions of warriors in the inner circle finished gathering.

"Your highness, we've inspected every inch of the circle," said the lanky general.

"Follow my orders," said the prince. "The inner circle will start to expand and get close to the outer one. At the same time, if anyone runs into any other race, kill it. No exceptions."

The prince gave the order, and the circle shrank even smaller. The warriors were more concentrated than ever.

******

Luo Feng was stuck in a trap.

"A pincer maneuver?" Luo Feng clenched his teeth. "I'll fight to the very end and squeeze the last bit of time for my Mosha body. It'll take him around three hours and 17 minutes to arrive, and I must make use of the time."

Although that almighty Nine Remoteness Master owed Primal Chaos City Leader a favor, a favor from Nine Remoteness Master was not to be spent frivolously. Luo Feng wouldn't use it unless he absolutely had to.

As long as I can escape from the junior ones, Nine Remoteness Master will be too proud to attack me, Luo Feng thought. I've never heard of Nine Remoteness Master attacking an heir.

He waved his hands, and six undying slaves appeared. They saluted Luo Feng and said, "Master of my master."

"Follow my orders," Luo Feng said.

"Yes."

All of the slaves took on the shape of Luo Feng and departed, following Luo Feng's command.

Luo Feng sighed. He felt like he was going crazy. Pincer maneuvers and killing all the enemies at the same time was a good

idea, but the time that elapsed was now insignificant compared to their steady advance toward Luo Feng. It wouldn't be long now.

******

"Your highness, two circles will meet soon, and the other race won't be able to make it after that."

The two universe knights were both looking forward to the result. The prince nodded mildly with a smile on his face.

Like a rat in the trap. This was the final struggle. The undying invader's struggle pleased the prince.

You really don't want to die, do you? the prince thought. Otherwise, you won't be putting up such a fight, knowing you're in a dead end.

"Alas, you'll be in my hands in the end," he muttered, "and I'll see what skills you've got."

The prince was eager for this moment. He hadn't had this much fun in his long life.

******

Luo Feng looked up at the sky, and his fear turned to joy.

Sou!

A figure in the sky teleported and kept blinking. He dove down immediately and stopped. It was Mosha body.

"It finally arrived!"

Luo Feng felt relieved and went into Mosha body's world ring. Mosha body shook, and black air surged. It transformed into an indigenous undying warrior with a red body and bloody horns. Even its aura was copied from one of the undying warriors that had chased Luo Feng when he first stepped into Nine Remoteness World.

"For more than a day, I performed that talent technique more

than 100 times," said Mosha body. "I'm so exhausted."

Mosha indigenous warrior's pressure was finally mitigated. He was too tired from the past day, as he hadn't been able to rest in the slightest. Even a universe knight couldn't stand such weariness.

Luo Feng had an unbending will, and together with his desire for survival, he was able to make it.

"It'll take me around eleven minutes, and the inner encirclement will arrive sooner." Mosha indigenous warrior smiled. "Unfortunately, you're late."

******

Warriors in the inner circle and outer circle were pretty close, and they squeezed in to complete the final stage of the chokehold.

Up in the sky, the prince floated, overlooking the boundless land. All the warriors bowed to the prince to show respect when they saw him.

"Haha! The final strangle. Each inch of this space will be occupied by my warriors soon. Let's see where he runs!"

The prince was overjoyed.

Yet after only 20 minutes...

"Your highness, my team has already searched everywhere," one of his generals reported. "We didn't find that powerful other race."

"My team didn't find the other race either," reported another.

"We... didn't' find him," said the third.

The generals reported to the prince immediately.

"What! How?" the prince shouted at the generals in the virtual world.

"Your highness, we found 83 suspects while searching, and our undying warriors jointly stimulated Nine Remoteness World

energies, which can kill even a pinnacle emperor. Perhaps the undying other race is already dead."

"Yes, your highness. We've found a suspect, too. He's powerful and left lots of valuables after falling. He might be the one we're looking for."

"He must be that one, then," agreed another general.

Reports from the nine generals further infuriated the prince.

"No, that can't be him!" the prince roared. "The earliest report says this guy is even faster than a captain-level undying warrior. He's no ordinary great being! But we didn't find any other races! Go search! Find him at all costs!"

"Yes."

"Yes, sir."

The nine universe-knight generals could only comply with the furious prince's order. However, no matter how carefully they inspected the circle made by their armies, they couldn't find Luo Feng.

******

Of course you can't find me, thought Mosha body, disguised as an indigenous undying warrior. I'm one of you now.

As the 100 million warriors continued searching under the order of the infuriated prince, Mosha body flew far away.

Each warrior was responsible for one area. The same rule applied to Mosha body's indigenous warrior form. But instead of searching, he simply flew farther and farther away without turning back.

No matter how fiercely the prince roared, none of the warriors could find Luo Feng. In the end, the prince reluctantly ordered the warriors to go back to their original positions.

Mosha indigenous warrior was in no rush.

With Mosha body, I can conceal my aura and change my identity, he thought. They won't be able to find me. Besides, even if they find me, my talent technique "domain" can escape from even universe knights.

Mosha body was confident for a reason, as universe knights couldn't teleport themselves in Nine Remoteness World. The great beings couldn't teleport themselves, but Mosha body could perform his talent technique domain. Who could possibly catch up with Mosha body?

Mosha body flew in the sky for a long time, eventually coming across some indigenous warriors on his way, but none of them suspected him. They had no reason to suspect anything out of the ordinary. He looked away.

"A quiet indigenous city," he said. "There isn't even a wall around it."

There were plenty of buildings outside the city, where lived lots of indigenous creatures with red bodies and bloody horns. The only wall was one towering one separating an inner portion of the city from the rest of it. Luo Feng presumed that some seniors and great beings lived in the inner city.

Chapter 989: Father

Luo Feng walked calmly through Nine Remoteness World, a world filled with creatures looking for him. Many indigenous creatures lived in the buildings around him, and all of them had red bodies and bloody horns. Some were babies that only reached Luo Feng's knees, running around on the ground. Some of the older children were already fighting.

The babies are at the star traveler level, and adults are automatically sector lords, Luo Feng thought, looking around. Almost all the indigenous creatures at normal height were sector lords. No wonder there were so many sector lords chasing me. This indigenous race is indeed powerful. Much more powerful than the Golden Horned race. It might be qualified as one of the most powerful races in the universe.

Suddenly, he heard a voice. Three indigenous babies were flying and frolicking. They flew quickly with their star traveler-level power, and those small, bloody horns were almost cute.

"I was born in Ancestral Sea. You should regard me as your leader."

"You're indeed more talented since you absorbed the essence and were born in the Ancestral Sea, but that doesn't mean you can be undying. We were born in the Royal Sea, but we're still stronger than you."

"You don't want to obey me? Then I'll beat you until you do!"

"Do you think we're scared of you?"

The three babies continued assailing one another with threats as they frolicked.

Luo Feng thought to himself, They look like babies, but they're naturally intelligent, like Golden Horned Beasts. Perhaps they can rival human teenagers...

Born in the Ancestral Sea? Born in the Royal Sea? "Absorbed the essence" in the Ancestral Sea? Thoughts flooded Luo Feng's mind. Does that mean those indigenous creatures were not born to mothers? That sounds right. They're energy-based life forms, and energy life forms are quite different from others. It seems some indigenous creatures were born in the "Ancestral Sea" while some others were born in the "Royal Sea." The Ancestral Sea sounds superior.

Royal Sea... On my way here, I came across other indigenous creatures. I've heard about this prince, leading over 100 million warriors, who is trying to capture me. The prince has such a high status already, there must be a king or emperor above him.

Questions flashed through Luo Feng's mind.

Indigenous creatures saluted Luo Feng when they saw him. Luo Feng knew that in this indigenous world, undying great beings were highly respected.

******

In the towering ancient city where countless indigenous residents lived.

This ancient city was much larger than the one Luo Feng was touring. It was the home of the prince, as well as several universe knight-level generals who had palaces throughout the city, too.

The prince wandered into the great palace, frowned, and clenched his teeth.

"Damn it!" he growled. "Damn it!"

All his servants quickly had fled, and he was the only one in the palace. They were frightened for their lives. They didn't know why their prince was so furious, but he had already executed three servants.

"They dare to laugh at me! Just because you become a universe knight sooner than me? And they think that undying fighter from

another race can't get away—that I'm hallucinating?"

The prince gritted his teeth even harder. As the supreme being of this world, even universe knights revered him. Only his brothers dared provoke him. The 108 brothers constantly competed with each other, and his failure to encircle and trap the undying intruder couldn't be kept a secret. Thus, he was mercilessly ridiculed.

"I was not wrong... I was right!"

The prince waved his hand.

Hong, long, long!

The door closed. The servants outside didn't dare to make a sound.

In the palace, a red light dimmed on the huge pillar, soaking the entire palace in a red glow.

"Father. Father?" The prince raised his head and shouted, "Please show up, father!"

Hong, long, long!

An invincible force permeated the palace, and Nine Remoteness World energies started to gather. The servants outside didn't even notice the movement inside the palace as Nine Remoteness World energies gathered, forming a huge, blurry face.

"My child," said the giant head, looking down at the prince.

"My father," said the prince, giving a salutation. Then he started to complain. "I led 100 million warriors to encircle and suppress an undying intruder from another race, and my warriors killed many undying slaves. Yet the undying intruder must still be alive. I even asked the 300 undying warriors who guard the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool at that time. Those who chased him said he was unbelievably fast. The slaves killed afterward were nothing like that. This confirms my suspicions. But—but..." The prince

clenched his teeth to prevent himself from stuttering with frustration.

The giant head looked down and said in an apathetic voice, "But the universe knights under you, and your brothers, all think you're hallucinating, don't they?"

"Yes," the prince said. "But—"

"You're not wrong," said the giant head. "But neither are they. Nine Remoteness World energies can't detect this intruder, and that's why they think you're hallucinating." The giant head stared at the prince. "But the intruder is indeed still alive."

"Alive? Really?" The prince was overjoyed. "I knew it! I knew he was exceptional the moment I learned of his speed."

"Exceptional, indeed," the giant head said coldly.

"How did he escape my army?" the prince asked. He was curious about it, and it was also the issue his older brothers had questioned him about the most.

"Under Nine Remoteness World energies, other races can do nothing but show themselves," said the giant head. "Yet he eludes the army's efforts to find him. By all accounts, it would appear he has been killed already. You claim that he's still alive, so let me ask you this: How do you surmise that he got away?"

The prince was bewildered.

"Because he can disguise himself," said the giant head, looking down. "He can camouflage himself as any creature of my Nine Remoteness race."

"Ah!" the prince said. He was excited to discover an answer, though he found it hard to believe. "Then... Then we need to kill him right now! How can we let him roam freely if he can camouflage himself?"

The giant head snorted, and the prince went silent. Although his

father cared for him and his brothers, he was innately cold and indifferent. It was enough for him to care for his children. If the princes dared to ask too much of their father, however, they would be punished.

"Train harder," said the head. "If you can become a universe knight like your brothers, I can take you outside to adventure."

With that, the giant head disappeared.

The prince took a deep breath. "How lucky," he muttered.

The prince was still in a panic. Realizing he had said something inappropriate, he quickly clamped his mouth shut. Such careless words were grounds for punishment.

"Universe knight," he said. "I'll achieve that. I will."

Aggression filled the prince's eyes when he thought about this. It was a determination that came from an infinity of repression. None of the princes were allowed outside Nine Remoteness World unless they became universe knights.

******

Luo Feng walked among the buildings. He saw another group of babies playing in front of him.

"Come here." Luo Feng waved at one of them. He was the most jubilant and apparently the leader of the group.

The baby ran towards Luo Feng and gave a salutation. "Greetings, undying."

"Um..." said Luo Feng, grinning. "Were you born in the Ancestral Sea?"

"Yes," the baby answered shyly and touched his horn.

Luo Feng nodded. Based on what he had learned so far, indigenous creatures born in the Ancestral Sea were naturally stronger than those born in one of the Royal Seas. Generally, any who were born in the Ancestral Sea was automatically a leader.

"Tell me about the Ancestral Sea," Luo Feng said.

"An undying fighter who has never been to the Ancestral Sea?" The baby looked excited, then continued, "The Ancestral Sea is outside our world. Even if we were born in the Ancestral sea, we can't go back once we enter this world. Only if we become undying will we have the chance to go to the Ancestral Sea through the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool."

Luo Feng was dazed. Ancestral Sea? Nine Remoteness Whirlpool? Outside?

"Is it the Nine Remoteness Ocean?" Luo Feng couldn't help linking these two together.

"The Ancestral Sea is vast," the indigenous baby continued. "It's boundless and right on top of our world. Rumor has it that it's larger than our world. Haha! Those born in the Royal Seas can't compare to us. There are 108 Royal Seas, but even the largest Royal Sea is nothing compared to the Ancestral Sea.

The baby indulged in this grand verbiage and was obviously proud to be born in the Ancestral Sea. Luo Feng's heart skipped a beat. The pieces were falling into place.

It must be the Nine Remoteness Ocean! Nine Remoteness Space is actually Nine Remoteness Ocean with some islands on it, and Nine Remoteness Ocean has bred indigenous life forms.

As these thoughts flooded Luo Feng's mind, he remained calm on the outside, saying, "It's not that bad to be born in Royal Seas. Have you ever been to one of them?"

The baby shook his head. "Never." He seemed to perceive the undying fighter in front of him to have been born in a Royal Sea, and he added, "Royal Seas are not bad at all, especially the largest one. I'm still very young, but when I get stronger in the future, I can go there."

Luo Feng suddenly understood everything.

He can go there when he is stronger... It must be difficult for these indigenous warriors to leave this world to see the Ancestral Sea again. Since it is easier to see the Royal Seas, those must be located inside Nine Remoteness World.

Chapter 990: Strictly Confidential

"What about them?" Luo Feng asked, looking to the babies afar. He was still in his Mosha body, disguised as a creature of the indigenous race of Nine Remoteness World. "Which royal sea were they born in?"

"Bei An Shell was also born in the Ancestral Sea," said the baby. It had a pair of bright eyes and articulated itself well. "Everyone else was born in Royal Seas except Bei An Shell and me. Some of them were born in the Large Royal Sea while some in the Small Royal Sea."

Luo Feng's Mosha body nodded. "Make efforts, and you can become undying in the future." He touched the baby's bloody horn with a smile.

"I see." The baby nodded.

Mosha body turned around and planned to leave, but the baby looked at his back and bit his lip. Clearly, he wanted something more.

Other babies came flying toward him.

"Leader!" they said. "Leader! How did it go, leader? Did that undying fighter recruit you as his disciple?"

"Why're you even asking?" one of them jeered. "That undying fighter left. Of course he didn't recruit him."

Other babies began discussing this. A long time ago, a Golden Horned Beast who was only a child had almost destroyed the earth. Now, even these indigenous babies were intelligent.

"Shut up!" the first baby shouted and looked at Mosha body's back with bitterness.

He had thought that the undying fighter valued him and would be willing to recruit him as his disciple. That was why he had

explained everything with such passion. Little did he expect that the undying fighter hadn't intended to do any such thing.

The adults of this race were sector lords by default; there were numerous sector lords but only a few undying fighters. In the army, for every 1,000 sector lord warriors, there was only one undying warrior. Given that most of the creatures were not qualified for the army, the proportion compared to the overall population was even smaller. Only after being taught by an undying fighter could one be guaranteed a bright future.

"Why didn't he recruit me as his disciple? Is it because I was born in the Ancestral Sea while he was born in Royal Sea?" The baby leader clenched his teeth. "Humph! I was born in the Royal Sea, which makes me nobler. Someday, I, Mai Si Shell, will become an undying fighter—a captain or even a general!"

******

Mosha body wandered casually through the indigenous city. He could clearly hear chatting among 10,000 indigenous creatures and integrated the information. Suddenly, he heard a conversation about 108 princes. Mosha body, carefree a moment prior, was suddenly dazed.

108 princes? And 108 Royal Seas? Mosha body thought, standing still. Ancestral Sea and Royal sea. 108 Royal Seas and 108 princes. Do the Royal Seas have something to do with the princes?

Mosha body felt encouraged. If the Royal Seas and the princes are connected, then the Ancestral Sea must be connected to... the Nine Remoteness Master! That's right. Teacher said before that Nine Remoteness Master is invincible in Nine Remoteness Space. Perhaps Nine Remoteness Master can utilize the power within that Nine Remoteness Ocean. That's a sea with a diameter of over ten light years. It's so forceful that it might even be the Five-Colored Aurora Lake's rival. He's truly invincible if he can use the ocean's power!

The more Mosha body thought about it, the more excited he got. Another thought struck his mind. Why is every prince correlated with a Royal Sea? Were they born together? Does that mean every prince was born with a Royal Sea? If my third body can be born with a Royal Sea like those princes...

108 princes, and based on my information, some of the princes are universe knights, some are undying fighters, and others are sector lords. The princes are of royal blood, and they even have universe-knight guards, which would make it difficult to get their genes. If a prince is, indeed, so gifted... then I'll use the favor Nine Remoteness Master owes my teacher to acquire my third body.

Mosha body sorted out his mind instantly. Based on the information at hand, this seemed likely. The numbers matched perfectly. Besides, Nine Remoteness Master was undefeatable in Nine Remoteness Space. It was likely that these facts were related. The princes could be regarded as weaker versions of Nine Remoteness Master!

Those indigenous creatures did say the princes were immortal!

Mosha body continued gathering information by traveling the city and eavesdropping for two days. Based on what he knew, the indigenous children were indoctrinated. He heard comments such as, "You must be loyal to your Emperor and your princes!" And, "The Emperor and princes are holy!" Or, "Fight for your Emperor! Fight for your princes! It's your duty and your glory."

The more information Luo Feng gathered about the Emperor and the princes, the more curious he got. Eventually, he decided it was time to meet again with Primal Chaos City Leader.

******

In the virtual universe, at the apex of Thunder Island.

In that towering palace surrounded by haze, Luo Feng stepped in.

"Teacher," Luo Feng said respectfully, standing within the haze.

"Did you run into some trouble in Nine Remoteness World?" said a gentle, placating voice. Primal Chaos City Leader walked out dressed in a golden cape. "Have you used that favor already?"

"Not yet," Luo Feng answered.

"Oh?" Primal Chaos City Leader was surprised. "Have you broken out?"

"I have Mosha body now," said Luo Feng. "I was trapped in Nine Remoteness World, but fortunately, my Mosha body arrived in time to save me."

"How did he get there?" Primal Chaos City Leader asked. "Did your Mosha body fly through the Nine Remoteness Whirlpool? I don't think that's possible."

"He went into Nine Remoteness World," Luo Feng answered.

Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng, perplexed. Although he had never been there before, that place belonged to Nine Remoteness Master. That sky and land were supposedly strictly guarded. Even universe knights might not be able to get in.

"My Mosha body was lucky enough to get a talent technique, 'domain,'" Luo Feng explained.

"Domain?"

Though Primal Chaos City Leader was startled, he did know some universe knight-level great beings of the Mosha clan who had this talent technique. After all, Mosha clan was a reproduction clan, and some of the non-classified information was already known to the outside world. A supreme being like Primal Chaos City Leader naturally knew about domain.

"Domain is indeed impressive." Primal Chaos City Leader nodded with a smile. "It's quite powerful until you become a universe master."

"Yes." Luo Feng nodded.

Primal Chaos City Leader was curious. "Since you have Mosha body to protect you, it should be fairly easy for you to survive Nine Remoteness World. After all, you're an heir of the Ancestral God School, and Nine Remoteness Master is close to the Ancestral God School. It's not likely that he'll attack you directly. Given these factors, why are you here to see me?"

Luo Feng took a deep breath and said, "I obtained the leaf of the World Tree as planned. Unfortunately, I didn't manage to breed my third body."

"Didn't manage to?" Primal Chaos City Leader sighed. He felt sorry for his disciple.

"However, I've discovered something more interesting." Luo Feng looked at Primal Chaos City Leader but hesitated.

"Speak," prodded Primal Chaos City Leader.

Luo Feng stared at Primal Chaos City Leader. "Allow me to ask first... what's the connection between Nine Remoteness Master and the Nine Remoteness Ocean?"

Primal Chaos City Leader glanced at Luo Feng in shock, then said, "That is a top secret in the universe, but since you've already deduced part of it, I'll tell you. Nine Remoteness Master is Nine Remoteness Ocean, and Nine Remoteness Ocean is Nine Remoteness Master!"

Luo Feng trembled. God! This was even more unbelievable than he thought.

"Nine Remoteness Master has always been a terrific being," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "He is my rival. Actually, in one-on-one combat, he's weaker than me. So what makes him my rival? Because even if I kill him, he would be resurrected very soon after. In other words, he's immortal!"

Luo Feng was startled.

"After Nine Remoteness Master dies," Primal Chaos City Leader

said, "a new version comes into being. It happens every time. How terrifying is that? That's why even the Ancestral God School treats Nine Remoteness Master with respect. Lots of issues that the beast gods can't deal with are left to him."

He paused, then went on. "Nothing can be kept a secret forever, I suppose. Lots of great beings study why universe masters can be revived so quickly. After all, it should take a long time to resurrect such a powerful godly body. It has been discovered that each time he dies, Nine Remoteness Ocean gives birth to a new Nine Remoteness Master. Nine Remoteness Ocean is his endless source."

Primal Chaos City Leader continued, "Back when this was first discovered, it merely confirmed a special relationship between Nine Remoteness Ocean and Nine Remoteness Master. However, something momentous then occurred, which spread the name of Nine Remoteness Master throughout the entire universe. He killed a universe master! Because of a certain true treasure, two universe knights of the demon race jointly hunted Nine Remoteness Master and chased him to Nine Remoteness Ocean. Nine Remoteness Master dove into the ocean and vanished. At the same time, the entire ocean started to burn, burning boundless godly power."

"The entire ocean burned?" Luo Feng was dazed.

"That's right," said Primal Chaos City Leader. "The entire ocean was burning. Apparently, Nine Remoteness Master was enraged and used all his power to burn the entire ocean. It was so forceful that it suppressed the true treasures carried by both of the universe masters of the demon race and annihilated a universe master instantly. As for the other one, he escaped using his true treasure. The dead universe master was called Cang Yang Master. The one who survived is... Master of Sky Wolf."

Luo Feng gaped at Primal Chaos City Leader.

"Some other great beings were following them and tried to take advantage of the situation," Primal Chaos City Leader went on.

"They witnessed everything, and word spread. Other supreme beings knew, after that fight, that Nine Remoteness Master and Nine Remoteness Ocean are one and the same! As long as Nine Remoteness Ocean exists, Nine Remoteness Master is immortal. Within Nine Remoteness Ocean, he is invincible!"

Chapter 991: Arrival at the Royal Sea

"He has the ocean with a diameter of ten-something light years..." Primal Chaos City Leader said. "Who in the universe can rival him in terms of godly power? The size of his godly body is outrageous."

Luo Feng nodded. It was indeed outrageous.

There were quite a few special organisms in the universe, and lots of them had colossal bodies, yet even the largest special life forms had the height of several hundred million miles, and most of them were of the plant race and rock race. As for Nine Remoteness Ocean, it had a diameter of over ten light years!

Several hundred million miles, compared to over ten light years, was like the most powerful World Tree being compared to Nine Remoteness Ocean; it was a drop in the bucket!

"Nobody has ever figured out why he has such an unbelievably enormous body." Primal Chaos City Leader shook his head. "Nobody else's godly body can compare to his. I've also heard that Nine Remoteness Master doesn't have any talent techniques."

"Huh?" Luo Feng was dazed. No talent techniques?

"Nine Remoteness Master is no doubt a special life form in the universe," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "However, even if he's annihilated, and another godly body is bred, he has never mastered any talent techniques. It's a fair universe, after all. He was already bestowed, by the universe, an outrageously large godly body. As such, he must be strictly limited in other fields."

Primal Chaos City Leader suddenly looked at Luo Feng and asked, "Why are you here to ask about Nine Remoteness Master? Can you tell me the reason now?"

"I want to breed my third body," answered Luo Feng. "A third body like the prince."

"The prince?" Primal Chaos City Leader was dazed

"Yes," said Luo Feng. "The princes in Nine Remoteness World. "Based on what I know, those princes have something akin to Nine Remoteness Ocean, but they're called Royal Seas!"

"But Nine Remoteness Master only has three children," Primal Chaos City Leader said.

"Three?" said Luo Feng.

"Yes. Three children. One of them is a universe overlord, and the other two are universe knights. However, they can be revived even if they're killed."

Luo Feng broke into laughter. "Teacher, based on what I have learned from Nine Remoteness World, Nine Remoteness Master actually has 108 children in total! And there are 108 Royal Seas in Nine Remoteness World! But those princes are not equally powerful. There are three universe knights, dozens of undying fighters and dozens of sector lords.

"108?" Primal Chaos City Leader was startled. "If there are 108 of them, their life level won't be too high. You'll have a high chance of success."

Luo Feng nodded. He had thought the same thing. There were nine World Trees, whereas Nine Remoteness Master had 108 children. The greater the number, the lower the life level. After all, the more powerful the life forms were, the rarer they were. Some special life forms were the only one of their kind.

"You want to acquire the water of a Royal Sea?" Primal Chaos City Leader asked.

"All the 108 Royal Seas are located at the center of Nine Remoteness World, and no indigenous armies are guarding them," Luo Feng said.

"Wrong." Primal Chaos City Leader shook his head. "Nine Remoteness Master will notice it, even without armies."

Luo Feng was dazed, but he quickly realized Primal Chaos City

Leader was right! Nine Remoteness Ocean part of Nine Remoteness Master himself, and the entire ocean was completely under his control. He would be aware of anything that happened there.

"I'll only take a little water. I think it's going to be okay." Luo Feng was nervous.

"I wouldn't be so sure," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "The water is part of his children's godly bodies, after all. But even I can't be sure what will happen. If Nine Remoteness Master finds out that you are taking the water, just tell him you're my disciple. He owes me a huge favor, and some water will be fine."

Luo Feng felt more grateful than ever for his teacher. Primal Chaos City Leader had, indeed, helped him a lot.

Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng contently. If Luo Feng's future third body was like Nine Remoteness Master's, he could be revived shortly after he died! And the energies were limitless! Then Luo Feng would certainly become an incredible immortal warrior of the human race!

Luo Feng could resist the urge no longer. "I'll go and get the water now."

"Go," Primal Chaos City Leader said. He also looked forward to the result.

******

In Nine Remoteness World.

Mosha body's eyes blazed. He flew up in the sky and raced towards the center of Nine Remoteness World. This world was so immense that Mosha body flew for over half a year until he finally reached his destination.

"The Royal Seas!"

Mosha body stood in the sky, looking out over the boundless ocean. It was a spectacular sight.

"I'll examine the 108 Royal Seas first."

Although he knew of the existence of the 108 Royal Seas, he didn't have any details about them. The sizes of the oceans would make a huge difference to his future godly body, which was why Luo Feng needed to decide carefully. He spent another month flying around the seas for inspection.

56 of the 108 Royal Seas were red and were worthy of the name "Bloody Seas"! All 56 Bloody Seas were of the same size, with a diameter of around 50 million miles.

There were also 49 Royal Seas in which water tumbled inside. They looked like the other seas but had diameters of 600 million miles, and these were the so-called "Small Royal Seas" the indigenous creatures talked about.

There were also three Royal Seas with diameters ranging from 20 billion miles to 63 billion miles. These were the legendary "Large Royal Seas."

"So many indigenous creatures come here for worship," Mosha body said, looking down.

Around the 108 Royal Seas, especially around the Small Royal Seas and Large Royal Seas, many indigenous creatures groveled to show their veneration. As for the Bloody Seas, barely anyone was around them.

"Worship." Mosha body nodded.

A great number of indigenous creatures were born in Small Royal Seas and Large Royal seas. That meant these Royal Seas were like their parents! They would be taken away once they were born and spread to all the various cities of Nine Remoteness World. When they became adults and got powerful enough, they would return and worship their mother seas!

There were even some sickly and dying indigenous creatures coming here and waiting for their doom. They were born here, and

they died here.

Perhaps these indigenous creatures don't know that the princes are the Royal Seas, and the Royal Seas are the princes, Mosha body thought to himself. But some of them were born in Royal Seas while others were born in Ancestral Seas. That means they'll naturally revere their princes and their emperor.

Sou!

Mosha body dove down and landed beside a Bloody Sea. Small Royal Seas indicated undying princes. Large Royal Seas indicated universe knight-level princes. As for Bloody Seas, they stood for sector lord-level princes!

Sector lord-level princes are weak, and their seas look like blood, he thought. Besides, their young can't be born in the Bloody Seas. Only after becoming undying will the Bloody Seas sublimate into ordinary seas and have the ability to breed lives.

Luo Feng nodded.

******

Around the Small Royal Seas and Large Royal Seas, countless indigenous creatures were worshipping. There was almost nobody worshipping around Bloody Seas, as nobody was born in Bloody Seas.

"What are you doing here?" An indigenous creature landed.

Mosha body glanced at him and turned toward the extensive Bloody Sea, where blood flowed rapidly inside. He said respectfully, "I just want to see the Bloody Sea. I was born in a Large Royal Sea, but my Large Royal Sea was just like this Bloody Sea a long time ago."

The indigenous undying warrior stared at Mosha body. "Be careful. The rule is very clear. No fighting around the Bloody Seas, and no one should take the water."

"Of course. I understand." Mosha body nodded.

"Good."

The undying indigenous warrior didn't say anything further, as he surely didn't imagine one of his own people would do anything forbidden.

Mosha body murmured after watching the undying indigenous warrior leave. "I didn't even know there were such taboos. Perhaps I didn't collect enough information. But that's right. Royal Seas are the princes, and Bloody Seas are sector lord-level princes, who are relatively weak and have fragile lives. Some powerful indigenous creatures might be able to hurt Bloody Seas unintentionally, and some might even kill the sector-lord princes.

Time passed. In the sky and land of Nine Remoteness World, the bloody mist always pervaded the air. In the Bloody Sea, the blood tumbling, and on the edge of the Bloody Sea stood Mosha body.

"I care of nothing else right now. I must have it."

Mosha body looked around. There were no worshippers near the Bloody Seas, and the closet ones were more than a billion miles away. As long as he was fast enough, nobody would notice him—with one exception. Nine Remoteness Master.

"It'll be okay for me to just take some water. It's a sea with a diameter of 50 million miles. It won't mind a little water."

Mosha body was actually kind of anxious. That terrifying Nine Remoteness Master might be infuriated.

"For my third body! For my future! I must do it."

Mosha body performed his talent technique domain and showed up on the sea. He reached out his hands, took some water from the bloody water, and quickly put it in his world ring. The world ring was carried by the original earthling body, and it was the most solid world ring Luo Feng had. Of course, Nine Remoteness Master could destroy it with a wave of his hands.

The sea reeked of blood, and Mosha body could smell it when his finger touched the water. "This is not water at all," he realized. "This is blood."

Sou!

Mosha body returned back to his original position. Less than 0.1 seconds passed after performing domain twice. He had already gotten the water of the Bloody Sea.

"I've been traveling through Nine Remoteness World, and Nine Remoteness Master must already know about my technique domain." Mosha body looked to the indigenous creatures worshipping in the distance. "They didn't notice me. Good. Otherwise, I'll be besieged if they see me do something forbidden."

Just when Mosha body planned to leave.

Hong!

An incredible and unbelievable force arrived, the Nine Remoteness World energies hundreds of millions of miles around Luo Feng concentrated and became a space in front of Luo Feng. It then turned into the contours of a huge face. Ferocity filled the sky and land around him.

Everything turned red. In the bloody sky and land, the giant head glared at Mosha body.

Nine Remoteness Master had arrived!

Chapter 992: Furious Nine Remoteness Master

Mosha body was stunned. He looked around and found that the sky and land hundreds of millions of miles around him was already blocked from the outside. Only Nine Remoteness Master could have acted so instantaneously.

At the same time, other indigenous creatures worshipping in other Royal Seas could only see ordinary Bloody Seas even if they looked in the direction of Luo Feng.

A large head floated in the sky, looking down at Mosha body.

A cold voice echoed across the entire bloody sky and land. "Human! You're trying my patience!"

Mosha body was dazed. Nine Remoteness Master really did know everything that was going on in Nine Remoteness World. Luo Feng appeared as Mosha body now, yet Nine Remoteness Master called him "human," which meant he knew the human body was his original one.

Fortunately, he didn't just kill me right away, Mosha body thought to himself. He still cares about his status, and he has a close relationship with the Ancestral God School, so he didn't attack an heir like me.

But what am I supposed to do now? He has a noble and special status, even with the three ancestral gods of the Ancestral God School. The only reason he didn't attack me was for the sake of his status. If I further provoke him, he'll kill me directly, and neither Ancestral God School nor the human race will be able to do anything about it. Firstly, I must not provoke him again. Secondly, I need the water in that Bloody Sea.

Nine Remoteness Master might have figured out what I'm really up to because I stole twigs and leaves of the World Trees before,

but that's just my assumption. I stole the leaf from Tree Island, which belongs to the World Trees. For what it's worth, the most powerful World Trees have the power of a universe master.

Then again, Nine Remoteness Master wouldn't have been watching that place constantly. No great beings like being watched all the time. Even I don't like it, let alone the most powerful World Tree. Perhaps Nine Remoteness Master didn't even notice me stealing the leaf of World Trees. If he didn't notice that, he might not even know why I took the water.

Thoughts flooded Mosha body's mind when the giant head of Nine Remoteness Master was roaring, as he needed to prepare for the worst.

"Greetings, universe master," Mosha body said, saluting him.

He changed into his original earthling body while Mosha body went back to the world ring. Since Nine Remoteness Master had called him "human," Luo Feng definitely needed to show his original earthling body out of respect.

The giant head looked down at Luo Feng. "Why didn't you leave after escaping the circle?"

"I—I wanted to take my chances." Luo Feng said respectfully. "After breaking out of the circle, I thought nobody would identify my Mosha body, and the other side of Nine Remoteness Whirlpool has always been kept a secret to all generations of heirs of the Ancestral God School. I wanted to take the opportunity to see it. I thought I could be lucky enough to avoid being found out, but now, after seeing you, universe master, I realize everything was under your watch."

The giant head was observing Luo Feng with its head down. It appeared satisfied that Luo Feng was answering with respect and tranquility.

"My real name is Nine Remoteness Master," the giant head said.

"Nine Remoteness Master," Luo Feng responded respectfully.

"I've heard something about you, human Blade River Emperor. You have a clone talent technique, and you can revive yourself even if I kill you. That's why you're so calm, isn't it?"

Luo Feng responded, "I'm meeting Nine Remoteness Master now. How can I not be nervous? I'm just pretending to be calm.

"Hahaha..." The giant head burst into laughter, and the sound swept across the entire bloody sky and land like great waves; it stopped after a long while. Gradually, its face became apathetic. "You should've known that the 108 Royal Seas, especially the bloody ones, are off-limits. You should've gathered the information in my world. How dare you steal the water? Speak! Speak! Speak! Speak!"

"Speak!"

"Speak!"

"Speak!"

It penetrated Luo Feng's soul and echoed in his mind. All of a sudden, he was trapped in illusion.

"Break!"

Luo Feng had a stronger will than most universe knights. It was not enough for Nine Remoteness Master to control him with only his voice.

"Hmm?" Nine Remoteness Master looked down at Luo Feng. Surprise flashed across his giant face. He was surprised that a sector lord could resist that voice, as even some universe knights could be tempted.

"I'm curious about the legendary 108 Royal Seas, so I came here to see them," he said. "I find that there's nothing special about the water in other Royal Seas, but the water in this Bloody Seas not only looks like blood but also smells like blood. I was curious about

the secret behind this, so I took some water. I thought a little water was nothing, as the Bloody Sea is so large, so I took my chances."

"Took your chances?" The giant head's voice grew colder. "Humph! You knew it was off-limits, but you touched it anyway. As such, you should prepare for your punishment..."

Luo Feng got scared. Originally, he didn't want to use the favor Nine Remoteness Master owed his teacher, but he couldn't worry about that now.

"Nine Remoteness Master..." he said.

"No," said Nine Remoteness Master. "I actually wanted to..."

Just when Luo Feng was to use the favor, he stopped talking when he heard Nine Remoteness Master say, "I actually wanted to."

The giant head sneered at him. "You thought I wanted to kill you? Humph! I did want to kill you, but I gave up that plan because you're a great being trained by the Ancestral God School."

"Ancestral God School?" said Luo Feng.

"There are formal members and sub-members in Ancestral God School," said the giant head. "Sub-members fight more than formal members. Sub-members are the most powerful force of the Ancestral God School!"

Luo Feng nodded. There were only a few formal members in the Ancestral God School, while countless peerless talents from hundreds of millions of races were admitted as sub-members of Ancestral God School, like candidate prophets, candidate deified generals, and high-achievers of beast god inheritance, many of whom were at the universe overlord level! It was a mighty force.

"I am the guarding godly master, Nine Remoteness!" The giant head looked down at Luo Feng. "You, Blade River Emperor, are a member of the sub-organization, and you're a crucial one."

Luo Feng blinked his eyes fast. Guarding godly master?

"There are guarding prophets, guarding knights, a guarding knight master, and a guarding godly master in the sub-organization," the giant head said, looking down at Luo Feng. "Each guarding godly master is the head of a power. From today on, you, Blade River Emperor, are the guarding prophet of the sub-organization of the Ancestral God School, and I am your guarding godly master. The stronger you become, the higher your status will be. I'll spare your life if you accept these terms. If you don't, you know what will happen."

Luo Feng was dazed. Amazing! Nine Remoteness Master was a guarding godly master!

Luo Feng had originally planned to use the favor Nine Remoteness Master owed his Primal Chaos City Leader teacher. Little did he realize that the Ancestral God School had already had its eyes on him.

"You won't be an enemy to your human race even if you're in the sub-organization," the giant head continued. "You'll be very free in the sub-organization, and there will be no boundaries to your behavior. Once in a while, there are some issues of the Ancestral God School that need dealing with, and that's when an order comes. You can even write your reasons to reject the mission if you don't want to do it. So, do you want to be a part of it?"

Luo Feng blinked twice, then gave a salutation. "Greetings, guarding godly master."

"Smart," Nine Remoteness Master said. "Good. This is 'Ancestral God Token.'"

A black token showed up out of nowhere. It dropped from the sky and fell in front of Luo Feng.

Luo Feng took the token, which was heavy and cold. There were only two words on the token: "Ancestral God." It was sculpted by

engravings that Luo Feng didn't recognize, but he knew it said "Ancestral God."

"It's integrated with your life imprint, and you're the only one in the Ancestral God School who can use it," Nine Remoteness Master said. "You can contact the Ancestral God School with this token, and the school uses it to announce its tasks. You can get in touch with the Ancestral God School as long as you're in the universe."

Luo Feng was startled. This was how the virtual universe worked.

"Only through words," Nine Remoteness Master continued. "The Ancestral God Token is unique. Don't lose it."

"I understand." Luo Feng felt relieved.

It was impressive that they only communicated through words. Apparently, it was difficult to make an Ancestral God Token.

"If anyone in the Ancestral God School comes for you, show them the token, and they'll know you."

"Got it," Luo Feng answered respectfully.

"Now, go."

An invisible force surrounded Luo Feng.

Sou!

Luo Feng disappeared.

The giant head said, "Blade River Emperor belongs to me now. I didn't fight for him. On the contrary, it was him who came to my Nine Remoteness World and offended me. That was why I took him. How will the others react when they discover I took Blade River Emperor. Hahaha! Last Time, 'Flame Sky' got Zhu Chong Emperor, but I got Blade River Emperor. Hahaha..."

******

"Huh?" Luo Feng looked around and found himself in the middle

of deep space. He could see Nine Remoteness Space afar.

"I... I'm outside Nine Remoteness Space now?"

Luo Feng was thrilled by Nine Remoteness Master's skills. He felt exhilarated to be out, but he didn't dare show his feelings yet; he didn't know if Nine Remoteness Master was still watching him. He ordered his soul slave to cast God Country Transportation.

Weng!

A blurry, golden light flashed. Luo Feng took his soul slave and stepped into the light, then disappeared into space.

******

In the palace of the Primal Secret Region.

"Hahaha...!" Luo Feng showed up in the palace and was overjoyed.

Finally! He had successfully retrieved the water of Bloody Sea!

Chapter 993: Third Body

Perhaps Nine Remoteness master didn't know why Luo Feng took the water from the Bloody Sea—or perhaps he knew already—but he had other plans. Regardless, Luo Feng had achieved his goal!

"I don't care whether he knows or not. The point is, I can be stronger! I can start to breed my third body with the water from the Bloody Sea."

Luo Feng was exhilarated. He thought he could get some water from the Bloody Sea with the favor from Primal Chaos City Leader, but he hadn't expected to be admitted to the sub-organization in exchange.

"There are many great beings in the human race who made it to the sub-organization." Luo Feng was beaming. "With my power getting stronger, I'm basically guaranteed to finish the fifth-level inheritance, especially after getting so many beast-god inheritance opportunities. I'll have to join the sub-organization someday in the future."

Candidate prophets, candidate deified generals, and heirs who completed the fifth-level or higher beast-god inheritance had to join the Ancestral God School sub-organization! Yet Luo Feng had been invited in now.

Incredible talents like Zhu Chong Emperor, Bark Mirror Emperor, and Luo Feng were highly valued by the Ancestral God School, as they could rival universe knights as undying fighters and would be universe overlords' match once they became universe knights. It would only take a little training for them to have the power of universe masters after becoming universe knights!

After all, peerless talents like these wouldn't come back to Bauhinia Island if they failed on the beast god path, but they could still make great accomplishments following the time and space

path, which was why the Ancestral God School admitted them in advance to make sure they didn't let these future supreme beings slip.

I'll at least achieve something following the beast god path, Luo Feng thought. I might as well join now since I'll join in the future anyway.

"Especially since it helped me avoid being killed. Haha...!"

Luo Feng certainly hadn't expected himself to become a follower of Nine Remoteness Master.

"Excellent! Excellent!" The more Luo Feng thought about it, the more excited he got.

In the palace, Tian Chen Emperor gave a salutation. "Congratulations, master."

"Okay." Luo Feng waved his hand and got the world ring temporarily kept by Tian Chen Emperor. He sat down with his legs crossed while Mosha body entered the internal world with the water from the Bloody Sea.

...

The core, in the internal world.

Ah-ooo!

The 600-mile long Golden Horned Beast howled with excitement, producing a sound that was like far-reaching thunder.

"There are nine World Trees in total, while Nine Remoteness Master has 108 princes." Mosha body stood in the sky, watching the basin-sized blood churning and smell of bloody permeating. "There are 109 creatures of the same race counting Nine Remoteness Master. 109 of them! Nine Remoteness Master is indeed powerful, but I refuse to believe that every prince has such an outrageous life level."

"It will succeed! It must succeed!"

Mosha body stared at the lump of water from the Bloody Sea. Although he presumed the chance of success to be high, Luo Feng wasn't sure of the princes' life levels. Thinking about his last failure, he couldn't help but be anxious.

"The moment that determines my fate!"

Both Mosha body and Golden Horned Beast calmed down and gazed at the churning blood.

Sou!

Surrounded by the world energies of the internal world, the water from the Bloody Sea shot up and flew high in the sky. It grew dead silent in the internal world.

After a long while, the lump of water flew to the center of the internal world.

"Talent technique, clone! Breed!" Luo Feng said, controlling the entire internal world with his mind.

The internal world started to tremble after the doppelganger technique was triggered the last time. This time, boundless world energies flocked to the lump of bloody seawater at the center of the world. The water evaporated immediately, and only the basic life material was wrapped by the world energies.

A golden ball showed up, high in the sky. It had already started to breed the third body. Luo Feng's mind sensed everything in an instant.

It succeeded! Luo Feng realized. All the life material has been resolved, and it has started to be bred!

"Hah-hah-hah...!" Mosha body guffawed. "My third body is meant to be Nine Remoteness of the Bloody Sea, and I'll have boundless godly power in the future. Even if I die, I can be reborn again. This is real immortality!"

Ah-ooo!

Golden Horned Beast roared with thrill.

"Excellent! Excellent!" Luo Feng stood up, beaming. He grabbed Tian Chen Emperor and said, "Tian Chen, drink with me!"

He even summoned some other emperor limit slaves, and they started to drink their fill!

******

Luo Feng sensed that it would take over 600 years to breed the third body. The more stable and powerful the internal world was, the easier it was to breed a body, but the stronger the body was, the longer it took for the body to be bred.

It had taken Luo Feng over a year to breed the earthling body, while it took him three years and nine months to breed the Mosha body.

As for the Bloody Sea Nine Remoteness Body, it would take him over 600 years. If Luo Feng didn't choose to swallow the metal to improve his internal world but turn to the ninth-level sector-lord internal body of the ordinary Golden Horned Beast, it would take him more than 10,000 years.

"I already expected that it would take such a long time. It's a special life form after all."

Luo Feng was overjoyed. He had taken so many risks and tried so many different methods just for his third body. Now that his internal world had finally started to breed it, all it took was cultivation.

Only 600 years... He could spend the 600 years practicing, and it would be like a blink of an eye. After which, his third body would be finished.

"I'll go to the Ancestral God School! I'll need to study law comprehension in the coming 600 years. Being undying isn't difficult for me, but it'll take a lot of effort to be a universe knight."

Luo Feng knew clearly that he could only fully comprehend the teleportation part of his space law. As for space strangle and space seal, he could only comprehend a small portion of it. The complete space law required the combination of all three parts! Countless peerless talents comprehended all three but had been stuck at the last step for an eternity like True Yan Emperor, Zhu Chong Emperor, and Bark Mirror Emperor. Luo Feng couldn't underestimate it.

"The more I accumulate, the more beneficial it is for a breakthrough. Besides, I've fully comprehended the third chapter, which means I need to create the third move for Moon Policy and Star Map."

Luo Feng realized he had lots of things to do.

******

After drinking, Luo Feng told Primal Chaos City Leader what happened. Primal Chaos City Leader was thrilled to know that Luo Feng didn't use his favor and had started to breed his third body.

"Haha!" Primal Chaos City Leader said. "Even though the powerful universe masters close to the Ancestral God School are the leaders of different streams of the sub-organization of Ancestral God School, they only belong to the sub-organization. This Nine Remoteness... He's lived so long that he thinks competing with the other old guys is fun. Luo Feng, work hard! Since you're so valued by the Ancestral God School, you might get some true treasures in the future. Think about Zhu Chong Emperor who obtained two. Take anything you can when the time comes."

"Yes, teacher," Luo Feng answered.

On the same day, Luo Feng's original earthling body left Primal Secret Region and arrived at Bauhinia Island through God Country Transportation.

******

Luo Feng gathered with his teacher True Yan Knight, and some of his friends like Thousand Rain Emperor, Cha Man Emperor, and Li Li Emperor after being back to Bauhinia Island, and the news spread.

"Blade River Emperor is back!"

"Blade River Emperor is back from Nine Remoteness Space!"

"Were Blade River Emperor's true treasures left at the central place where Nine Remoteness Whirlpool leads to?"

"They have to be. Even universe knights aren't likely to survive that place. Blade River Emperor must have revived himself using his clone technique."

"But I can't sense Blade River Emperor's sector lord aura."

"Same. I saw Blade River Emperor, too, but I didn't sense his sector lord aura."

"I think Blade River Emperor still has his true treasures."

"How is it possible? Even universe knights can't survive that place. I think either Blade River Emperor has become undying or he got a new true treasure."

"New true treasure?"

"Humans are a peak race. Those lower-tier true treasures might be attracted to ordinary races, but they are just ordinary to humans, and they have an abundant number of them."

The news spread like wildfire through the open-air square in the world of glory, and Bark Mirror Emperor knew it, too.

******

In the palace.

Bark Mirror Emperor's godly body had fully recovered. However, he looked colder and crueler. He was innately gloomy and

ferocious—even more so after being crushed by True Yan Knight.

"No sector lord aura?" Bark Mirror Emperor clenched his teeth. "Did he become undying or get a new true treasure? I'll kill him directly if he's undying! I'm a noble and powerful special life form! If he has a new true treasure, then I'll take it by force! Blade River Emperor, True Yan Knight! I'll have my revenge!"

******

Luo Feng sat in his palace and started practicing after spending quality time with his teacher and friends, in spite of the spreading rumors outside.

Chapter 994: Ancient Ship Galaxy

Luo Feng felt the mountain quivering right after he landed on its top, even before he moved. He was bewildered... Was this the sign that the treasure was opening?

The mountain kept trembling more and more fiercely.

The heirs who had been chatting casually or looking for treasures all shot up and looked toward the mountain Luo Feng stood on. Soon, the sky was filled with heirs from all races in every direction.

"The treasure!"

"The treasure will be opened."

"He opened the treasure!"

Bark Mirror Emperor flew up too. "Impossible!" He opened his golden eyes wide and saw that there were seven heirs on the trembling mountain, including Luo Feng. "It has to be one of the other six heirs. It has to be!"

He hated Blade River Emperor from the bottom of his heart and was not willing to see him get the valuable. It was the 106th tallest mountain. Although it was only ranked 106th, it was still one of the top 108 valuables, and each was as valuable as a true treasure. Even the lower-ranked valuables were a match for most average true treasures.

Bark Mirror Emperor only had one ordinary true treasure and refused to believe that Blade River Emperor could also get one.

Unfortunately for Bark Mirror Emperor, that wasn't his decision.

******

The other heirs standing on the mountain were thrilled.

"The valuable. It's the valuable!"

"The mountain has started to tremble."

"The treasure will be opened."

"It's me! I just touched this tree. I must have triggered it."

"No, it's me! I triggered the valuable!"

The heirs were all excited and nervous. Even though they all knew that the mountain had only trembled after Blade River Emperor landed on it, they still held out hope that it could be one of them. They wouldn't give up, as long as there was even a slight trace of hope. After all, this was one of the top 108 valuables!

Hua! Hua! Hua!

The Five-Colored Aurora Lake was right above the mountain, and suddenly, thousands of auroras started to swirl like whirlpools.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Thousands of auroras dropped from the sky, each of them more than six thousand miles long and comprised of five colors. They dove like meteors and enveloped the mountain instantly—separating it from the outside world like an impossibly massive bead curtain.

The heirs felt an upwelling of emotions looking at the magnificent scene! Breathtaking! The thousands of auroras bore incredibly energy. Just a few of them was all it would take to kill a universe knight! It was, after all, the guarding true treasure of the first power of the universe, and also the most powerful true treasure in the universe.

The heirs continued to argue with one another.

"It's mine!"

"The valuable is mine."

The auroras shrouded the entire mountain, together with the heirs standing on the top and hillside. Suddenly, strong forces

swept across them, teleporting them outside the veil.

"No, no! It's mine!" The heirs from other races complained.

******

Outside the veil, the many onlookers speculated the implications of the scene.

"Who opened the valuable?"

"It has to be Blade River Emperor. I saw him land on the mountain."

"There are lots of heirs on the mountain, and some are on the hillside. Perhaps it's a valuable hidden at the hillside."

They were engaged in a heated debate when they saw—Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!—one creature after another, large or small, covered with scales, transparent, or liquid alike, were kicked out by the Five-Colored Aurora Lake.

"Who triggered the valuable?"

"They're all kicked out."

"All of us?"

"It's Blade River Emperor. He's the only one still there."

The heirs who got out grudgingly looked at each other, confirming that only Blade River Emperor was still there. Those watching from afar started to search for Blade River Emperor, but they couldn't find him. They knew instantly that he was the one who had triggered the valuable.

Bark Mirror Emperor clenched his teeth and showed his fangs, watching furiously. But what could he do?

The heirs beside him looked at each other but didn't dare to make a sound, as they knew that Bark Mirror Emperor was infuriated.

Bei Shan Knight looked at Bark Mirror Emperor afar and cursed him. "Imbecile. An idiotic, crazy, ferocious beast with no

intelligence."

Ferocious beasts were creatures in the universe with great power but limited intelligence.

******

Even though Luo Feng couldn't see anything happening outside, he could guess what was happening. He smiled, feeling the mountain tremble under his feet.

"It's me who gets the valuable."

He had heard about the scene when a valuable within the land of valuables was triggered. Some of the supreme beings in the Ancestral God School had designed specific conditions for opening unlocking the valuables hidden there, and those conditions were managed by the Five-Colored Aurora Lake! It monitored everything it covered, and every move by the heirs was under careful surveillance.

For instance, when Luo Feng was assassinated and revived, he had the apparent aura of a sector lord. Five-Colored Aurora lake would then record information that he was a sector lord with clone technique, and the attributes were automatically collected and processed by the lake. Once the attributes matched the conditions of a certain valuable, it would reveal that valuable if a qualifying heir arrived at its location.

However, for the sake of confidentiality, it would blockade the area where the valuable was hidden to make sure that only the valuable contributor, the valuable opener, and the Five-Color Aurora Lake knew what the valuable was. When Seven Blade Emperor had gotten a valuable, nobody had known what valuable he had acquired.

******

There was only one object in the world ring. An ancient ship!

It was 75,000 miles long and 19,000 miles wide. Shining with

silver light, the ship looked more like a seagoing warship than a spaceship.

"What is it?"

Luo Feng snuck his spiritual force into the ancient ship and merged a trace of spirit imprint into the ship. All of a sudden, a great amount of information flooded his mind, which amazed him.

Luo Feng reached out his hand.

Sou!

A flash of silver flight flew out and fell into his palm. It was an ancient ship the size of a glass marble.

"It is... It is the flying-palace type treasure!" Luo Feng's eyes were blazing, and he gazed at the ancient ship with excitement. "It's only a top-tier treasure, but it's believed to be as precious as a true treasure. No wonder... It's a flying-palace type, and there are definitely great beings willing to trade it with a true treasure."

Luo Feng instantly knew everything about the ancient ship. It was called "Silver Dragon Phantom Ship," and it was a top-tier treasure and functioned like Sky Wolf Palace. It would protect the user as long as he was inside the ship. Unless the enemy destroyed the ship, a material attack would be rendered almost useless, and a soul attack would also be significantly weakened. If Luo Feng had this ship when he was hunted by Bark Mirror Emperor, he couldn't be hurt by Bark Mirror Emperor as long as he hid inside the ship, and he could get rid of Bark Mirror Emperor with the ship.

Similarly, Master of Sky Wolf had escaped the dreadful attack that came from entire burning Nine Remoteness Ocean with the help of his Sky Wolf Palace.

"Armor can only weaken a small portion of material attacks and soul attacks," Luo Feng said, his eyes gleaming. "But this Silver Dragon Phantom Ship is enormous, and staying inside is like being protected by a huge fortress. It's better even than the most

expensive godly base of the automaton race."

Though Silver Dragon Phantom Ship couldn't change its direction flexibly, it was incredibly speedy running on a straight line and had mighty defending power.

"Haha! This is a top-tier treasure. Universe knights definitely won't be able to destroy it. As for universe masters, even they might need to use significant energies to damage a top-tier treasure." Luo Feng was overjoyed. Inside the Silver Dragon Phantom Ship, together with his Tower Pearl to protect his soul, once he became undying...

Luo Feng couldn't help grinning.

Of course, a valuable needed adequate power to be utilized. Otherwise, it would be taken by a supreme being if the user couldn't drive the ancient ship fast enough.

"I can use this Silver Dragon Phantom Ship once I become undying." Luo Feng nodded. "When I become much stronger in the future and able to drive Star Tower, that will be my trump card. After that, this Silver Dragon Phantom Ship will be my vehicle only on the surface. Silver Dragon Phantom Ship sounds redundant... I'll just call you 'Galaxy.'"

Luo Feng named it after its aura of silver light, glimmering like the stars in the galaxy. Treasures all had their own original names, but most of them sounded redundant. Purple clock was one such example. Its original name was Demon Note Flame God Clock, but Luo Feng called it "purple clock" instead.

Galaxy, you'll be my partner until I can drive Star Tower, Luo Feng thought, looking at the ancient ship in his hand.

Chapter 995: Valuables! Valuables!

It had been 500 years since Luo Feng came back from Nine Remoteness Space.

In the Land of Valuables of the Ancestral God School.

The end of the mountain range was not visible. Mountains stood shoulder-to-shoulder. Some of them were towering, and some were precipitous. There were lakes of all sizes between the mountains.

A fighter stood using his snake tail to wipe clean the rock behind him. "I haven't seen a new valuable for a long time. They say there are countless valuables here. It wouldn't make sense if valuables showed up all the time! No matter how many valuables there are, they will be gone in the end. It's boring if the valuables don't appear. Valuables coming into sight, that view is thrilling."

Expectation flashed through the triangular eyes of the snake-tailed other race.

"I really hope that view is for me."

"Haha...!" someone laughed all of a sudden. "You've been here tens of millions of times. Stop dreaming."

"It's Blade River Emperor," said a nearby heir.

"Blade River Emperor's here!" another replied.

"Blade River hasn't shown up after coming back from Nine Remoteness Space. The first place he chose to land is in the Land of Valuables."

"Where is he? Where is Blade River Emperor?"

Many heirs were looking in all directions, some even flew up in the sky, and soon, they all turned in the same direction. A silver-armored human youngster was flying directly to the tallest mountain in the Land of Valuables.

Luo Feng looked around and rejoiced in his heart. "Looks like I'm famous among the heirs of Ancestral God School."

What made Luo Feng overjoyed was the progress he had made in the past 500 years, especially the maturing of his third body.

"It'll take around 100 more years for my third body to mature, after which I can become undying. I need to come here before turning into an undying fighter." Luo Feng glanced at the mountain range where there were innumerable valuables. "I'm a sector lord now. Perhaps some supreme beings prepared valuables for sector lord-level heirs. If I become undying, I won't be able to take them anymore."

Sou!

His first target was the tallest of the mountains. Each of the 108 mountains stored one of the most precious of 108 valuables, and only 42 of them had been acquired by heirs. The others were still waiting for the suitable heirs.

"Look, Blade River Emperor went to the tallest mountains."

"It seems Blade River Emperor came here for valuables, too. He came here once before, and after confronting Bei Shan Knight, he left instantly without taking a proper tour around the Land of Valuables. I thought he wasn't interested in this place. Finally, he came."

"108 most precious valuables are equally distributed among the 108 tallest mountains in the Land of Valuables. And his first target is the tallest one. He's ambitious."

******

Among the great beings of other races standing afar, some were jealous of or even hostile against Luo Feng.

With a loud snort, a figure with golden hair and eyes walked out from the apex of a mountain. His back was slightly bent, giving him the appearance of an aggressive beast. Bark Mirror Emperor!

"Bark Mirror Emperor, do you think Blade River Emperor can get a valuable?" asked an heir.

"He's targeting the highest mountain," several heirs beside him said.

Bark Mirror Emperor smirked. "The valuables on the highest mountains have been here ever since the Ancestral God School was founded. Rumor has it that they were placed by one of the ancestral gods. A few sector lord-level special life forms throughout the history have tried, but none of them could get a valuable. As for Blade River Emperor, he's so unqualified for the Land of Valuables."

The heirs around him nodded.

"Bark Mirror Emperor," came a voice from a towering figure.

Bark Mirror Emperor followed the direction of the voice and spotted Bei Shan Knight.

Bei Shan Knight glanced at Luo Feng afar first, then said, "Blade River Emperor has disappeared for so many years. And now, the first place he goes is the Land of Valuables. It seems he really wants a valuable. I think his efforts will be in vain."

"Begone!" Bark Mirror Emperor suddenly shouted.

Bei Shan Knight's eye went wide in surprise.

"Humph! Do you think you can be my ally just because both of us hold grudges against that Blade River Emperor? You damn one-eyed thing who bullied an undying heir from my Northern Territory Alliance! Get the hell away from me."

Bark Mirror Emperor showed his fangs and stared at Bei Shan Knight coldly. Bei Shan Knight's body trembled with anger. He was a universe knight who had heard that Bark Mirror Emperor was ruthless, greedy, and unapproachable, which was why he hadn't approached him until now. Now that there was a feud between Bark Mirror Emperor and Blade River Emperor, he

thought they could be closer because of their commonality.

He was willing to become friends with Bark Mirror Emperor, who was already his equal. Once Bark Mirror Emperor became a universe knight, he could become a universe overlord with some proper training very soon. But Bark Mirror Emperor clearly did not share this sentiment.

"Okay, okay," said Bei Shan Knight, so furious that his face was twitching. "Bark Mirror Emperor, how ruthless you are."

Bark Mirror Emperor clenched his teeth, snorted, and flew away. Bark Mirror Emperor simmered. "Just who does he think he is?"

The heirs around him gazed at each other with dismay. Heirs like Bark Mirror Emperor and Zhu Chong Emperor were so powerful that they didn't need to respect universe knights! There were differences between universe knights. Those who were universe overlords could crush Bark Mirror Emperor without any problem.

Even Bark Mirror Emperor and Zhu Chong Emperor needed proper training to become universe overlords after becoming universe knights.

Without a doubt, these special life forms—whose life levels were thousands of times higher than ordinary life forms—had great potential to become universe overlords, which was why the top superpowers like the Northern Territory Alliance and the Ancestral God School all valued special life forms and even gave them true treasures.

******

Luo Feng didn't see the confrontation between Bark Mirror Emperor and Bei Shan Knight. He landed on the tallest of the mountains.

"The tallest mountain means the most precious valuable," he said. "Rumor has it that an ancestral god put the valuable here personally."

Luo Feng stood on the top of the mountain and walked around, but nothing happened. The rule said the valuable would show itself if an heir was qualified and stood on the mountain.

If there was no change... Luo Feng was not qualified. He had failed!

******

The heirs standing afar began to gossip about what they had just seen. As for Bark Mirror Emperor, he had a rare smile on his face.

"It is 90 percent possible that Blade River Emperor is Luo Feng," he muttered. "Luo Feng is True Yan's disciple."

Bark Mirror Emperor snorted and stared at Luo Feng. Although he had hunted Luo Feng before, he wasn't quite as belligerent now as he had been. He had, after all, almost been killed by True Yan Knight! That encounter was the closest he had ever been to death!

Bark Mirror Emperor was infuriated! He hated True Yan Knight and swore that he would kill True Yan once he became a universe knight.

Blade River Emperor was likely to be a disciple of True Yan, who went after him to avenge Blade River Emperor, which made Bark Mirror Emperor antagonistic against Blade River Emperor, too.

"True Yan. Blade River." Bark Mirror said the two names in a low voice.

"Bark Mirror Emperor!" an heir called out. "Blade River Emperor failed again! This time, he went to the second tallest mountain, and he stopped by other mountains and lakes. Nothing happened!"

"He arrived at the second tallest mountain. Haha! Nothing happened at all."

The heirs kept talking.

Bark Mirror Emperor smiled more and more broadly. He said, "It's not that easy to get a valuable! The most precious 108

valuables here have been attracting heirs since the beginning of the universe, and only 42 of them have been taken. On average, the time elapsed between two valuables being taken is practically an eternity. The conditions are harsh."

******

One mountain after another, one lake after another.

Luo Feng kept flying and landing, flying and landing...

Failed! Failed! Failed!

Luo Feng failed again and again, from the tallest mountain to the sixtieth tallest mountain. He also stopped by lots of other places along the route, which took him tens of hours. Meanwhile, undying fighters watched while drinking glasses of wine.

"It's so difficult to open a valuable," Luo Feng said.

However, he did not panic. He had come here, after all, simply to try.

"It seems lots of other races hate me."

Luo Feng flew to a canyon and glanced at the onlookers afar. In the past tens of hours, he had been watched. Most of the heirs were just watching him try for fun, while some were actually jealous or hostile toward him. In fact, most weren't hostile toward Luo Feng personally; instead, they were hostile toward the whole human race. The human race was a peak race in the universe and had committed countless massacres in the universe. Other races wanted to kill them!

Humans were ruthless when it came to killing other races, and generation after generation, many races had learned to loathe humans.

"The peak races became peak races through killing! You can't be a peak race if you're merciful. You need resources to become a peak race, and you need to kill to get the resources!" This was what True

Yan had told Luo Feng once when they were drinking together.

Presently, Luo Feng spotted some other races flying toward him, cursing the human race. However, Luo Feng just sneered.

Those who were not his kin were sure to be of a different heart. Everyone was fighting for their own race, and there was no right or wrong.

Humans needed to kill or enslave a plethora of animals to survive on earth. If humans were not pitiless enough, they might have been killed off by those other animals. The same rule applied.

Luo Feng had such a strong will that he disregarded all the curses. "This is the universe. The weak are the prey of the strong."

Luo Feng arrived at the 106th tallest mountain. He didn't have much hope by now. However, just as Luo Feng landed on the 106th tallest mountain...

Hong, long, long!

The entire mountain started to quiver, which attracted the attention of all the heirs present. Suddenly, hustle and bustle filled the Land of Valuables.

Chapter 996: Ancient Ship Galaxy

Luo Feng felt the mountain quivering right after he landed on its top, even before he moved. He was bewildered... Was this the sign that the treasure was opening?

The mountain kept trembling more and more fiercely.

The heirs who had been chatting casually or looking for treasures all shot up and looked toward the mountain Luo Feng stood on. Soon, the sky was filled with heirs from all races in every direction.

"The treasure!"

"The treasure will be opened."

"He opened the treasure!"

Bark Mirror Emperor flew up too. "Impossible!" He opened his golden eyes wide and saw that there were seven heirs on the trembling mountain, including Luo Feng. "It has to be one of the other six heirs. It has to be!"

He hated Blade River Emperor from the bottom of his heart and was not willing to see him get the valuable. It was the 106th tallest mountain. Although it was only ranked 106th, it was still one of the top 108 valuables, and each was as valuable as a true treasure. Even the lower-ranked valuables were a match for most average true treasures.

Bark Mirror Emperor only had one ordinary true treasure and refused to believe that Blade River Emperor could also get one.

Unfortunately for Bark Mirror Emperor, that wasn't his decision.

******

The other heirs standing on the mountain were thrilled.

"The valuable. It's the valuable!"

"The mountain has started to tremble."

"The treasure will be opened."

"It's me! I just touched this tree. I must have triggered it."

"No, it's me! I triggered the valuable!"

The heirs were all excited and nervous. Even though they all knew that the mountain had only trembled after Blade River Emperor landed on it, they still held out hope that it could be one of them. They wouldn't give up, as long as there was even a slight trace of hope. After all, this was one of the top 108 valuables!

Hua! Hua! Hua!

The Five-Colored Aurora Lake was right above the mountain, and suddenly, thousands of auroras started to swirl like whirlpools.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

Thousands of auroras dropped from the sky, each of them more than six thousand miles long and comprised of five colors. They dove like meteors and enveloped the mountain instantly—separating it from the outside world like an impossibly massive bead curtain.

The heirs felt an upwelling of emotions looking at the magnificent scene! Breathtaking! The thousands of auroras bore incredibly energy. Just a few of them was all it would take to kill a universe knight! It was, after all, the guarding true treasure of the first power of the universe, and also the most powerful true treasure in the universe.

The heirs continued to argue with one another.

"It's mine!"

"The valuable is mine."

The auroras shrouded the entire mountain, together with the heirs standing on the top and hillside. Suddenly, strong forces

swept across them, teleporting them outside the veil.

"No, no! It's mine!" The heirs from other races complained.

******

Outside the veil, the many onlookers speculated the implications of the scene.

"Who opened the valuable?"

"It has to be Blade River Emperor. I saw him land on the mountain."

"There are lots of heirs on the mountain, and some are on the hillside. Perhaps it's a valuable hidden at the hillside."

They were engaged in a heated debate when they saw—Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!—one creature after another, large or small, covered with scales, transparent, or liquid alike, were kicked out by the Five-Colored Aurora Lake.

"Who triggered the valuable?"

"They're all kicked out."

"All of us?"

"It's Blade River Emperor. He's the only one still there."

The heirs who got out grudgingly looked at each other, confirming that only Blade River Emperor was still there. Those watching from afar started to search for Blade River Emperor, but they couldn't find him. They knew instantly that he was the one who had triggered the valuable.

Bark Mirror Emperor clenched his teeth and showed his fangs, watching furiously. But what could he do?

The heirs beside him looked at each other but didn't dare to make a sound, as they knew that Bark Mirror Emperor was infuriated.

Bei Shan Knight looked at Bark Mirror Emperor afar and cursed him. "Imbecile. An idiotic, crazy, ferocious beast with no

intelligence."

Ferocious beasts were creatures in the universe with great power but limited intelligence.

******

Even though Luo Feng couldn't see anything happening outside, he could guess what was happening. He smiled, feeling the mountain tremble under his feet.

"It's me who gets the valuable."

He had heard about the scene when a valuable within the land of valuables was triggered. Some of the supreme beings in the Ancestral God School had designed specific conditions for opening unlocking the valuables hidden there, and those conditions were managed by the Five-Colored Aurora Lake! It monitored everything it covered, and every move by the heirs was under careful surveillance.

For instance, when Luo Feng was assassinated and revived, he had the apparent aura of a sector lord. Five-Colored Aurora lake would then record information that he was a sector lord with clone technique, and the attributes were automatically collected and processed by the lake. Once the attributes matched the conditions of a certain valuable, it would reveal that valuable if a qualifying heir arrived at its location.

However, for the sake of confidentiality, it would blockade the area where the valuable was hidden to make sure that only the valuable contributor, the valuable opener, and the Five-Color Aurora Lake knew what the valuable was. When Seven Blade Emperor had gotten a valuable, nobody had known what valuable he had acquired.

******

There was only one object in the world ring. An ancient ship!

It was 75,000 miles long and 19,000 miles wide. Shining with

silver light, the ship looked more like a seagoing warship than a spaceship.

"What is it?"

Luo Feng snuck his spiritual force into the ancient ship and merged a trace of spirit imprint into the ship. All of a sudden, a great amount of information flooded his mind, which amazed him.

Luo Feng reached out his hand.

Sou!

A flash of silver flight flew out and fell into his palm. It was an ancient ship the size of a glass marble.

"It is... It is the flying-palace type treasure!" Luo Feng's eyes were blazing, and he gazed at the ancient ship with excitement. "It's only a top-tier treasure, but it's believed to be as precious as a true treasure. No wonder... It's a flying-palace type, and there are definitely great beings willing to trade it with a true treasure."

Luo Feng instantly knew everything about the ancient ship. It was called "Silver Dragon Phantom Ship," and it was a top-tier treasure and functioned like Sky Wolf Palace. It would protect the user as long as he was inside the ship. Unless the enemy destroyed the ship, a material attack would be rendered almost useless, and a soul attack would also be significantly weakened. If Luo Feng had this ship when he was hunted by Bark Mirror Emperor, he couldn't be hurt by Bark Mirror Emperor as long as he hid inside the ship, and he could get rid of Bark Mirror Emperor with the ship.

Similarly, Master of Sky Wolf had escaped the dreadful attack that came from entire burning Nine Remoteness Ocean with the help of his Sky Wolf Palace.

"Armor can only weaken a small portion of material attacks and soul attacks," Luo Feng said, his eyes gleaming. "But this Silver Dragon Phantom Ship is enormous, and staying inside is like being protected by a huge fortress. It's better even than the most

expensive godly base of the automaton race."

Though Silver Dragon Phantom Ship couldn't change its direction flexibly, it was incredibly speedy running on a straight line and had mighty defending power.

"Haha! This is a top-tier treasure. Universe knights definitely won't be able to destroy it. As for universe masters, even they might need to use significant energies to damage a top-tier treasure." Luo Feng was overjoyed. Inside the Silver Dragon Phantom Ship, together with his Tower Pearl to protect his soul, once he became undying...

Luo Feng couldn't help grinning.

Of course, a valuable needed adequate power to be utilized. Otherwise, it would be taken by a supreme being if the user couldn't drive the ancient ship fast enough.

"I can use this Silver Dragon Phantom Ship once I become undying." Luo Feng nodded. "When I become much stronger in the future and able to drive Star Tower, that will be my trump card. After that, this Silver Dragon Phantom Ship will be my vehicle only on the surface. Silver Dragon Phantom Ship sounds redundant... I'll just call you 'Galaxy.'"

Luo Feng named it after its aura of silver light, glimmering like the stars in the galaxy. Treasures all had their own original names, but most of them sounded redundant. Purple clock was one such example. Its original name was Demon Note Flame God Clock, but Luo Feng called it "purple clock" instead.

Galaxy, you'll be my partner until I can drive Star Tower, Luo Feng thought, looking at the ancient ship in his hand.

Chapter 997: Inborn Beast God

Luo Feng waved his hands, and the Ancient Ship Galaxy merged into the skin of his arm.

"I got all my spaceships from the emperors, but I already feel that they're inadequate. My original plan was to get a better spaceship after becoming undying, but this Ancient Ship Galaxy that can rival a true treasure is better than any spaceship built by humans or the automaton race." Luo Feng was overjoyed.

Xiu!

A trace of shrinking aurora flew towards Luo Feng. This startled him, as the universe knight who had tried to assassinate him had been easily killed by the aurora. Luo Feng tried to dodge it, but the surrounding space seemed to be sealed, making it difficult for Luo Feng to move.

The aurora touched Luo Feng gently.

"Huh?" Luo Feng stood on the ground, dazed.

Hong!

The rocks that had begun to float when the treasure was revealed suddenly dropped back down into the hole, and the mountain reverted back to how it was originally. The thousands of auroras shrouding the mountain from sight shot up and flew back to the Five-Colored Aurora Lake.

******

The heirs watching the scene from afar were all guessing, but none of them could see anything.

"Look, Blade River Emperor seems to be stupefied."

"Because he was amazed."

"A defending true treasure?"

"An attacking true treasure?"

"A treasure to recover his godly body?"

Luo Feng glanced around, then teleported himself to a canyon in a remote part of the Land of Valuables.

******

It was silent in the canyon.

Luo Feng stayed there alone and whispered, "Wine Master?"

The moment the aurora touched his head, he received some information—a message from the valuable's contributor to the future inheritor of the valuable. He heard a voice passing along the message.

"I don't belong to any race, and I've been all alone since the beginning of the universe. The only friend I have is 'Crane Knight,' but Crane is blessed with good luck. I don't know who I should give my valuables to that are no longer of any use to me. Since the Ancestral God School set up a land of valuables, I'll leave this Silver Dragon Phantom Ship to my juniors. The conditions are: a sector lord who wins over 1,000 challenges and completes the third-level beast god inheritance. If you can satisfy those conditions, you're a true talent of your time. Remember, it was Wine Master who gave you the valuable. Hahaha..."

It was a plain and simple message.

Luo Feng immediately realized that it was a universe master who had given him the valuable, but his title was a bit bizarre.

"Wine Master? Wine as his title?" Luo Feng was confused. He immediately connected to the virtual universe with his mind. Now that he had high access authority, he could search for lots of secrets in the universe.

******

In the virtual universe.

In front of the desk, Luo Feng looked at the laptop screen, searching for "Wine Master."

Shua.

There was only a single entry.

"Hmm?" Luo Feng clicked it.

Wine Master: An inborn beast god, and a "Wind and Time" beast god. He was a unique life in the universe and was born to be a beast god. He called himself "Riding Wind." He was obsessed with drinking, and thus, other supreme beings in the universe gave him the title "Wine." He was one of the first beast gods of the Ancestral God School. Deceased.

"Ah!" Luo Feng was shocked by the message. This Wine Master was an inborn beast god!

There were inborn beast gods and learned beat gods. The latter were those who completed the comprehension of the beast god path and inherited the beast god position, and these were the ordinary beast gods. Yet there were some creatures who were innately universe masters at the beginning of the universe, and they themselves were the "beast god" manifestation of fusion laws.

"Deceased?"

The voice echoed in Luo Feng's ears: "Remember, it was Wine Master who left you the valuable. Hahaha..."

"Such a supreme being, deceased." Luo Feng couldn't help but sigh.

An alcoholic inborn beast god. Luo Feng could imagine the scene—an inborn beast god carrying a huge wine jar, standing on the ancient ship.

"Alcoholic..." Luo Feng murmured. "Now that you left me a valuable, I'll certainly pay you back if I have the opportunity. An inborn beast god, alcoholic, Wine Master, called himself Riding

Wind..."

Luo Feng had a favorable impression of the fallen Wine Master even though he'd never seen him. Unfortunately, the inborn beast god had been born when the universe first came into being. Perhaps he was older than Primal Chaos City Leader and Gigantic Axe Founder.

He had been one of the earliest beast gods of the Ancestral God School, and he had fallen a long time ago.

Even the powerful universe masters can fall, Luo Feng thought. Like the universe supreme masters. If they're willing to pay the price to kill a universe master, most of them can't survive it, except those like Primal Chaos City Leader and Nine Remoteness Master, who have extraordinary skills.

Primal Chaos City Leader was invincible in the Primal Universe; Nine Remoteness Master was undefeatable in Nine Remoteness Ocean. Luo Feng rejoiced at the choice of his third body.

******

After lamenting the death of "Wine Master" in the remote cave in the Land of Valuables, he was soon found by other heirs. He was calm and frank, and he continued touring Land of Valuables. The bottom line for him was to tour the Land of Valuables thoroughly because he might obtain some other valuables.

Most of his will was practicing in the virtual universe, and thus searching for valuables didn't consume much energy.

Half an hour after he obtained Ancient Ship Galaxy, a shadow flew towards him.

"Blade River, Blade River."

Luo Feng lifted his head and saw Thousand Rain Emperor.

"Thousand Rain Emperor." Luo Feng nodded with a smile.

"Congratulations!" Thousand Rain Emperor said excitedly. "I just

entered the world of glory and heard that you got one of the 108 valuables. Congratulations!"

"It's no big deal." Luo Feng grinned. "Where are the others?"

"True Yan Knight has prepared a celebration meal for you," Thousand Rain Emperor said. "Cha Man Emperor and the others are all there. True Yan Knight asked me to invite you. The knight said that getting one of the 108 valuables from the Ancestral God School will be remembered forever, so we need to formally celebrate your achievement. That's why I was asked to invite you."

Luo Feng was dazed, then smiled. Teacher True Yan had prepared a celebration meal.

"Well, I had planned to fly around for a bit longer." Luo Feng looked at the Land of Valuables. "But it seems I'll have to come another time."

"Fly around? For what?" Thousand Rain Emperor was confused. "There's nothing to fly around for! You've got a valuable, haven't you?"

"Perhaps I can trigger a second valuable," said Luo Feng.

"Impossible. As long as you open the first valuable, you can't trigger a second one." Thousand Rain Emperor said, "This has been the law ever since the Ancestral God School established Land of Valuables."

"Eh..." Luo Feng blinked his eyes. Although he had asked Cha Man Emperor about the details of the land of valuables, he only knew the basics when the land of valuables was opened. He didn't know whether he could open a second valuable.

"I wouldn't lie to you," Thousand Rain Emperor said. "Let's go. Fortunately, you've only been here for a short while. If you wander around here much longer, many heirs from other races will figure out that you're trying to trigger other valuables and will secretly laugh at you.

Luo Feng looked around. The heirs in the distance were still amazed by the opening of the valuable half an hour ago. After all, since the birth of the universe, only 42 of the 108 valuables had been opened—43 including the one opened today. The heirs were conversing with each other and only glanced at Luo Feng once in a while. Most of them looked envious or jealous. No one looked greedy except those great beings from races hostile to the human race.

Power and status should match valuables. A star traveler-level small fry getting a true treasure was like committing suicide. Even for a powerful sector lord like Luo Feng couldn't make it public knowledge that he owned the true treasure Shi Wu Wing, given to him by Primal Chaos City Leader. Otherwise, he would be in trouble.

However, it was different for him now. Luo Feng had proven his capabilities by surviving Bark Mirror Emperor and Mud Swallowing Knight. Only a few would dare to try to take the valuables Luo Feng was carrying. After all, it was not worth risking lives for an unknown valuable.

"When I first stepped off Earth, I was so careful, as even a spaceship of the automaton race would bring me disaster." Luo Feng shook his head and sighed. Now, he had several true treasures, but almost nobody dared to attack him.

******

Bark Mirror Emperor's face twitched. He bared his fangs as he watched Luo Feng and Thousand Rain Emperor leave. The heirs standing beside him knew that Bark Mirror Emperor was furious.

"Damn it! Goddamn human." Bark Mirror was exasperated. "This is pure luck! When the time comes, I'll show you that power is everything. Next time, there'll be no Nine Remoteness Whirlpool for you to hide in."

He hated True Yan and Blade River Emperor. Now, he was full of

grievances seeing Blade River Emperor obtaining one of the top 108 valuables.

"Bark Mirror Emperor," a green-tongued creature said. "The reason this Blade River Emperor can kill emperor limits as a sector lord has to be the special power of the valuables he gained outside. However, with his power growing, the valuables become less useful. When he becomes undying, those valuables won't be that helpful anymore. No matter what, he's just a human with a low life level. He can in no way compare with special life forms like you and Zhu Chong Emperor when he becomes undying."

"You're right!" Bark Mirror Emperor's eyes gleamed with satisfaction. "He's just a human."

Bark Mirror Emperor licked his fangs and looked in Luo Feng's direction. "His life level is just so low. Could it be possible that he can be so forceful with his valuables forever? My life level is 1,000 times higher than him even if he becomes undying. Killing him will be as easy as destroying a star."

Chapter 998: Life Gene Level

Bark Mirror Emperor was correct. Valuables couldn't help someone forever! A powerful true treasure like Star Tower required amazingly great power to drive completely, which meant treasures without strength meant nothing. As for things like Fei Mo poison, they were useless in a fight at the universe knight level.

Even the golden armor Golden Horned Beast wore was destroyed completely under a strike from Bark Mirror Emperor's burning godly body. Things like general armors, golden armors, and Fei Mo venom, which had helped Luo Feng a great deal, were either eliminated or significantly weakened.

******

After the celebration meal, Primal Chaos City Leader summoned Luo Feng.

At the apex of Thunder Island in the virtual universe, Primal Chaos City Leader was looking down at Thunder Island in the towering palace enveloped by boundless haze.

Luo Feng showed up and gave a salutation. "Teacher."

Primal Chaos City Leader turned around and looked at Luo Feng with his brooding eyes. He smiled and said, "You got one of the 108 valuables?"

"Yes," said Luo Feng. "It's a top-tier flying-palace-typed treasure. It's called Silver Dragon Phantom Ship."

"Silver Dragon Phantom Ship?" He thought in silence for a while but couldn't recall that valuable. He continued, "You're lucky to have a flying-palace type because it's rare and precious. Flying-palace-type top-tier treasures might be more highly desired by universe knights than the Shi Wu Wing I gave you."

Luo Feng nodded, as he had thought that too.

"Who left it there?" Primal Chaos City Leader asked him.

"Wine Master," Luo Feng said. "I've searched for him online, and know he was one of the earliest beast gods of the Ancestral God School."

"Wine Master? Riding Wind?" Primal Chaos City Leader broke into laughter. "Now I know it! It's his wine ship! That Wine Master was a very interesting universe master, and he was unbelievably powerful as an inborn beast god. Unfortunately, inborn beast gods are destined to be hunted, and that's why..." Primal Chaos City Leader sulked.

Luo Feng was startled. Inborn beast gods were destined to be hunted? He couldn't help recalling the ancient picture he had previously seen in Blood River World. There had been a supreme being fighting the beast god in Blood River World, and that beast god seemed to have fallen.

"Why were they hunted?" Luo Feng couldn't help asking.

Primal Chaos City Leader glanced at Luo Feng and answered calmly, "Inborn beast gods are different from the learned ones. They were born out of the essence of the universe, which made them a natural valuable. Their scales, furs, and blood—every part of their bodies had amazing effects and were more precious than several thousand of or even 10,000 ordinary true treasures. Hunting an inborn beast god was a feast—a feast where lots of supreme beings joined."

Luo Feng was shocked. Their bodies...?"

"Every part, for resources and for opportunities," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "There are many different ways to compete. Malice, and thus killings among different races in the universe were a form of competition! Yet the Ancestral God School, who claimed not to favor any faction or occupy any territory, practices a different type of competition. It may appear not to be involved in competition on the surface, but it has reached another level of it."

Luo Feng nodded. As an old saying went in Hua Xia: Only by giving up the competition can a man find no competitors in the world.

Finding no competitors in the world required a great amount of power and influence. For instance, the Ancestral God School couldn't reach a higher level of competition without its three ancestral gods and its neutrality policy. And that was how it could attract countless talent fighters from all the races in the universe through inheritance tokens. At the same time, other races were willing to send their talented fighters within their races to the Ancestral God School for training, as they knew the Ancestral God School didn't compete—at least superficially.

That was how the Ancestral God School had become the number-one power in the universe.

"They're all competing with each other." Primal Chaos City Leader said. "Ever since the first time an inborn beast god died, all the races in the universe knew the majestic functions of a dead inborn beast god. From then on, all the other inborn beast bods were hunted. No matter how powerful they are, unless they hide forever, they will fall under intensive attacks." Primal Chaos City Leader looked at Luo Feng. "Like the blood river crystals you're using. Those came from an inborn beast god."

Luo Feng's heart skipped a beat. The one who had died in Blood River World was indeed an inborn beast god.

"Remember, the weak are the prey of the strong." Primal Chaos City Leader stared at Luo Feng, "That is the law of the strong. You are one of 'another race' to all the other races in the universe, and nobody will pity you. The only thing eternal is competition! The fight! All you must do is gain resources continuously to make yourself stronger. If you're stronger, your race is stronger. The strength of a race is determined by the most senior group, and each member of that group is a pillar of the race. You're quite likely to become a pillar of our human race."

Luo Feng nodded.

"Before you become undying, merge with that blood river crystal completely," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "It can help you improve your life gene level. You're a black warrior. You're likely to improve your life gene level to 100 times stronger than a universe ordinary life."

"100 times?" Luo Feng asked.

The life gene level of his original earthling body was already 48 times stronger since Luo Feng started practicing the Nine Volume Manual. If he used the power of Blood River, it would hit 480 times! It was already a major universe special life form.

"100 times is the limit." Primal Chaos City Leader said. "Body, strength, and amplification—100 times is their limit. And it's the same for soul amplification and life gene level... This is part of the universe's rule, just as lightspeed is the fastest one can travel in the original universe."

Luo Feng held his breath. Both body strength amplification and soul spirit amplification were extremely rare! Luo Feng only had 32 times soul amplification after receiving "Demon Note General inheritance," which was soul spirit amplification technique. As for body strength amplification, Luo Feng hadn't had such luck.

"The limit is 100 times?" Luo Feng murmured.

"That's right. 100 times."

However, his original earthling body was already 480 times stronger, and his Golden Horned Beast body was over 1,000 times stronger.

"Are there any other ways to improve the life gene level more than 100 times?" Luo Feng asked.

"Yes," said Primal Chaos City Leader.

"What is it?" asked Luo Feng.

"Soul transfer," Primal Chaos City Leader answered. "You do soul transfer on a special organism, and once that's completed, you'll have the body of a special life, just with a different soul. Though some soul-related talent techniques will disappear, those body-related talent techniques and life gene levels can both be inherited. But it is difficult. First of all, undying fighters' life imprints are merged with each of their cell fragments, and if you destroy their life imprints, you effectively destroy their entire godly body. That is why you can only do soul transfer on creatures beneath the undying level. Besides... If I'm a sector lord trying to do soul transfer on a universe-level special life form, it'll be easier to defeat him than to transfer his soul. Even if you try to transfer his soul, my sector lord soul will be a huge burden to the body! And it will be crushed if the body can't withhold it."

Luo Feng nodded. He knew that souls and bodies had to match each other. For humans, in general, their bodies needed to be at level seven sector lord to hold level nine sector lord human souls. Otherwise, the bodies would be crushed.

"You need to find a special life form whose body can withhold your soul," Primal Chaos City Leader explained, "but if his body is capable of doing that, it means that special life form is your match. And together with his talent techniques, chances are that you'll be killed by him. Besides, sector lord-level special life forms hardly leave the secret region of the universe, and even if you can meet and defeat them, they'd rather self-destruct than have soul transfer done to them. In short... Doing soul transfer on special life forms is highly beneficial, but it's difficult to succeed. Only a few have succeeded so far."

"Are there any other ways?" Luo Feng asked.

"Those like you who have clone techniques can breed a special organism body," Primal Chaos City Leader said. "Of course, the downside is that a special organism that can be bred is generally one of the weak ones."

Luo Feng nodded.

Yes. He couldn't breed a World Tree. He had Golden Horned Beast's internal world. It swallowed a huge amount of metal to form a gigantic internal world, but it could only breed a body with a life level hundreds of times higher.

"In short, there are lots of ways to accomplish it, and it often needs special organisms," said Primal Chaos City Leader.

"Any other ways?" Luo Feng asked again.

"No, there are not!" Primal Chaos City Leader shook his head. However, he hesitated and added, "Of course, there are hundreds of millions of races in the universe, and there are some supreme beings. Some secrets remained undiscovered. Perhaps there are some methods even I don't know of. However, I can be sure of one thing. It's a fair universe. Even if there are some secret, extraordinary methods, they'll surely cost a lot."

Luo Feng nodded. That was right. The Nine Volume Manual was created by the universe supreme master 'Zuo Shan Ke,' who devoted all his time and energy and created the invaluable Sky-Soul Crystal to bear it, and only after that could it be inherited. Even so, only one creature could obtain the information of the Nine Volume Manual. It could be seen how demanding the universe rule was.

Primal Chaos City Leader smiled. "Don't overthink it. 100 times was the limit. It's already rare to be 100 times stronger. Lots of universe knights only improve their life gene level ten times. As for you, you're a black warrior, and you're already at ten times. You can improve it a great deal with 'beast god blood' in the future."

Luo Feng nodded.

He also planned to merge with blood river crystals before becoming undying. Thus, his godly body could reach a supreme

level after becoming undying.

"Go," said Primal Chaos City Leader. "If you need beast god blood, you can apply for the resource through the virtual universe company."

"Yes." Luo Feng gave a salutation and left.

******

In the palace of Primal Secret Region.

Mosha body sat with his legs crossed, and in the internal world, Golden Horned Beast started to merge blood river crystals again.

Chapter 999: 6,400 Times

Luo Feng had let Golden Horned Beast body merge with blood river crystals in the outer-region battlefield before, and he could merge with 165 blood river crystals! Back then, he had only completed the first volume of the Nine Volume Manual and hadn't completely transformed his will, as he hadn't completed the life-or-death inheritance in Star Tower.

"166, 167, 168..."

Golden Horned Beast sat there like a mountain. As for Luo Feng's original earthling body, he sat on the Golden Horned Beast's back with his legs crossed. As a space beast measuring over 600 miles long, he was like a towering mountain with a broad back. The original earthling body sitting on his back looked like he was in the middle of colossal, rolling plains.

Chi!

The original earthling body moved his wings and cut through the scales, creating a deep wound in Golden Horned Beast's back. The original earthling body took out a triangular-prism-shaped blood crystal and tossed it into the gaping cut. Then another. And another.

Golden Horned Beast merged with each of the blood river crystals as they were thrown into its body. The process repeated itself over and over again.

"196, 197, 198..." Luo Feng said, tossing blood river crystals into the wound. He recalled the life-or-death inheritance last time—a life-or-death experience lasting more than 6,000 years. It had completely reshaped his will, and he had made great advancements in the 10,000 years since the last blood-river-crystal merging.

"200."

After the 200th blood river crystal integrated into Golden Horned

Beast's back, the back started to flow with the blood river energies. The muscles, bones, and scales on it were transformed instantly. The back bulged, and the muscles twisted like pieces of rebar under enormous pressure.

The scales condensed and turned golden. There were bloody threads on the golden scales, and they constituted a terrific, roaring beast god. The mighty power! The magnificent power!

After completing the first five volumes of Nine Volume Manual—coupled with Golden Horned Beast's life gene level being 10 times that of ordinary life forms—his life gene level had been improved 480 times! Now, under the blood river energies, his right claw hit the limit instantly. His back was improved 20 times, which was twice as powerful as the undriven body. The same thing happened to his right claw, and once it was driven, it was twice as powerful as the body before the blood river energies began to flow.

"Keep merging... Keep the balance and choose the left claw."

The original earthling body stood on the boundless meadow, looking at the giant claws. The scales on the claws were cut, and blood was dripping down. Luo Feng threw in one blood river crystal after another.

"226, 227, 228..." The process continued. "281, 282... They have started to affect his will."

The original earthling body frowned. After merging 282 blood river crystals, Golden Horned Beast's mind was affected by the vicious energy.

"I can see how much I've improved based on the number of blood river crystals I'm able to merge with. My will was greatly enhanced." Luo Feng didn't change his facial expression at all,. The pain under the vicious attack and the blood river energies merging were nothing compared to the agony he'd had to endure when "Star Tower" integrated with his soul.

"299, 300!"

His right claw had also hit the limit.

Howl!

Golden Horned Beast roared with thrill. Meanwhile, he moved his front claws, and both his claws became sturdy. His scales turned shining gold. Two beast-god heads made of bloody threads roared on the golden scales. Golden Horned Beast could feel his power surge as he stepped on the image of the beast god.

I think he can still merge dozens more, thought Luo Feng. And to make it more beneficial, I need to merge it in different places.

Luo Feng made up his mind.

"10 more for each part of his body."

******

Luo Feng was exhilarated every time one more crystal was merged, as this represented his power increasing. However, there was a limit to his power.

With his ultra-strong will, he was able to merge 380 blood river crystals. When he was trying to merge the 381st one, however, he couldn't withhold it anymore. The energy surpassed his limits. Luo Feng screamed with agony and failed.

The right claw, the left claw, and the back had all merged with 100 blood river crystals. The tail, both of the back claws, the scaled-wing, and the upper back all merged with 10 blood river crystals while the head merged with 20. He had successfully merged with 380 crystals!

"The right claw, the left claw, and the back are all twice as powerful as before the blood river energies were integrated," he said, gasping. "The other seven areas of my body also became twice as powerful. Which means it's now more than 6,000 times stronger than that of a sector lord! My life gene level is more than 6,000

times stronger now—nearly 6500 times stronger, in fact."

Ah-ooo!

Golden Horned Beast lifted his head and roared, feeling the blood river energies that had penetrated every part of his body. The genes changed instantly, together with the constitution.

The bones started to crack, and suddenly, Golden Horned Beast grew to twice its previous size. The scales became pale, especially the front claws and the back, which were the sturdiest parts of the body. Each scale was covered with bloody threads and formed one beast god picture after another. Some of them were simple while others were exquisite. The bloodline empowered Golden Horned Beast a great deal.

"It should be 6,400 times more powerful."

The body had been 480 times stronger before the energies were driven. Now, it was 6400 times stronger now. Golden Horned Beast started to roar with excitement.

Ah-ooo! Ah-ooo! Ah-ooo! Ah-ooo! Ah-ooo!

"Haha...! 6,000 times! I'm 6,000 times stronger! Zhu Chong Emperor, as a special life form, is only 5,000 times! Bark Mirror Emperor's life gene level is 2,000 times, and there are only a few in the universe can rival him. I'm even stronger than Zhu Chong Emperor!"

Luo Feng looked up at Golden Horned Beast with excitement. Magnificent! His life gene level was higher than the special life form Zhu Chong Emperor!

Luo Feng made a quick estimate. "Only the extraordinary have life gene levels higher than 5,000 times. Now, I am one of them. Based on the number of blood river crystals, I can put 100 on each part of my body, and there'll be 1,000 of them. After which, my life gene level will be 10,000 times higher."

10,000 times! Special life forms were generally thousands of

times stronger, some as high as 10,000 times. For ordinary life forms, 100 times was the limit, and as for special life forms, 10,000 times was their limit.

After venting his excitement, Luo Feng smiled and said, "Golden Horned Beast body is indeed my trump card. With high life gene level and a body 600 miles long, it'll take a long time to burn his godly body."

Compared to humans, who grew barely over six feet tall, Golden Horned Beasts had much more godly power.

A high life gene level and an extremely large body—how incredible was that?

Expectation flashed in Luo Feng's eyes. "Hmm... Now I'll try blood river crystals on my original earthling body."

The original earthling body was different from Golden Horned Beast. Golden Horned Beast had an enormous body, which required ten different parts to complete the merging, yet the original earthling body was far smaller than a single claw of the Golden Horned Beast. Thus, the original earthling body could only merge with 100 blood river crystals at most.

"My life gene level is six times stronger after finishing the second volume of the Nine Volume Manual," said Luo Feng, "and I successfully merged with ten blood river crystals after that. Now I've finished the first five, and my life gene level is 48 times higher. I wonder how many crystals I can merge with."

Without a doubt, his will could withhold the evil energy from 380 blood river crystals. As for the number of crystals his original earthling body could merge with, it depended on the life genes of the earthling.

"11th one." Luo Feng scratched his palm and started to merge with blood river crystals.

******

One blood river crystal after another merged with the original earthling body, whose life gene level was 48 times stronger.

"61..." Luo Feng kept merging with blood river crystals.

"81, 82, 83—no! No...!"

Suddenly, Luo Feng could feel his muscles and bones being torn apart, and the blood river energies flowed back into the 83rd blood river crystal.

"82?" he said. "Only 82?"

Luo Feng was reluctant to believe it. The first time Golden Horned Beast merged with 100 blood river crystals, he hadn't even practiced the Nine Volume Manual, and Golden Horned Beast's life level was only ten times. On the contrary, the life gene level of Luo Feng's original earthling body was 48 times stronger, but it couldn't compare to Golden Horned Beast in the past.

Is it because blood river crystals are more suitable for Golden Horned Beast? Luo Feng thought.

Based on his observation, it was difficult for other life forms to merge with blood river crystals—including his original earthling body, who could only merge with 10 after finishing the first two volumes of the Nine Volume Manual—whereas it was always easy for the Golden Horned Beast to merge with them. Golden Horned Beast bodies could merge with blood river crystals at all times. The only thing that troubled Luo Feng was that his will was not able to withstand the evil energy.

Blood River Crystals come from the "gold and space" inborn beast god, thought Luo Feng. Golden Horned Beasts are the peak race of space beasts of the gold attribute, and they have "swallowing" power. Perhaps Golden Horned Beasts are designed for merging with blood river crystals.

"It's demanding for a part of the life gene to merge with blood river crystals," he muttered, "but Golden Horned Beasts are born

able to withstand the process. As for the Nine Volume Manual, it will improve the life gene as a whole, simultaneously improving that part of my body. That must be why it's easier for me to merge with blood river crystals."

******

On the plain, the Golden Horned Beast lay with a human leaning against its enormous claw.

"What should I do?" Luo Feng said, leaning on the cold scales. "I can only merge with 82 blood river crystals. If I can merge with 100 crystals, my original earthling body would be 4,800 times. Although my original earthling body is small, it would have high combat power. Am I only able to merge my original earthling body with 100 blood river crystals after I finish the sixth volume of the Nine Volume Manual? No. Maybe..."

Luo Feng sat up abruptly.

"Beast god blood!"

He nodded and quickly used a portion of his mind to connect to the virtual universe.

Chapter 1000: Third Body, Finished!

In front of the desk of Yu Xiang Mountain of the virtual universe.

Luo Feng read the information of "beast god blood" and frowned. "I can get a drop of beast god blood from 100 blood river crystals, but the process is complicated. I have to apply for it through the virtual universe company."

A single drop of beast god blood merging with the body was equal to one blood river crystal merging with the body. That was why beast god blood was so highly sought-after. The typical limit was 100 blood river crystals. For beast god blood, it required 100 drops, which cost 10,000 blood river crystals.

This was the price one had to pay to lower the effect of the evil energy and to reduce the pain. After all, a human body that could merge with 10 blood river crystals might only be born once in many countless eras.

I wonder how much beast god blood I can apply for, Luo Feng thought. These precious resources are strictly managed. Lots of emperors have to wait for an auction to bid on it.

At the same time, Luo Feng was filled with his application.

After a short while, a fox-like girl with downy ears and soft purple hair appeared on the screen. She was likely a "Fox Human" of the human race.

"Greetings, Mr. Luo Feng," she said.

"I need beast god blood," Luo Feng said bluntly.

The fox girl paused to check something. "According to the quota," she said, "you can have 50 drops of beast god blood for free."

She flashed a lovely smile, but deep in her heart, she was shocked. Universe knights and universe masters weren't qualified for free resources; on the contrary, they needed to trade for them

through their contributions to the race. As for some emperors who deserved cultivation, they might receive some highly limited resources—perhaps 10 blood river crystals—but they couldn't have a single drop of beast god blood. Her job was to receive the seniors of the race, and she had never seen anyone qualified for 50 drops of beast god blood for free.

No wonder he's a peerless genius, thought the fox girl. Everyone says he's Blade River Emperor, and if that's the case, it's not surprising.

"Give me 30," Luo Feng said.

"Certainly," said the fox girl. "Where shall it be delivered?"

"This is the address."

Luo Feng typed his detailed address in the primal secret region. His residence was within Primal Chaos City Leader's territory, at the core of the center of the primal secret region.

"In the primal secret region..." The fox girl smiled. "The 30 drops of blood will be delivered today."

"Okay." Luo Feng nodded. He turned off the telecommunications. "For free, eh?" He smiled. "It seems my race has a quota of free resources for me. But until I apply for them, they won't be given to me. 50 drops of beast god blood... I've heard it's difficult to get that much even at an auction. However, my original earthling body is able to merge with 82 blood river crystals, and all I need are 18 drops of beast god blood. As for the Golden Horned Beast, he needs more than 600 blood river crystals, and beast god blood can't do it all."

His Golden Horned Beast body's life gene level was already strengthened 6,000 times. When he became undying someday and owned an enormous amount of superior undying power, he would breed a powerful consciousness. That could help his will to some extent, just as a strong-bodied person had a staunch will, whereas a

feeble person had a wavering will.

The strength of a soul served a supporting function. Universe masters, who had extensive godly power and had their souls integrated with the universe, had stronger wills than Luo Feng. Although they were relatively lucky, their godly power was the main reason for the powerful wills. It was impossible for an ordinary being to have a will that could rival a universe master.

The life gene level is already strengthened 6,000 times, thought Luo Feng. After that, the amplification will improve only slightly each time. There's no need to rush it.

******

After only three hours, a servant delivered a space ring to the palace where Luo Feng lived. His beast god blood was in the ring.

"Go," Luo Feng said.

"Yes," the undying servant answered respectfully.

In the territory of Primal Chaos City Leader, even the delivery men were undying, and they needed to compete for those positions, as those without skills wouldn't be admitted. After all, here they could see the great Primal Chaos City Leader from time to time! Usually, the disciples of Primal Chaos City Leader lived here.

Luo Feng went back to his internal world. He took a silver suitcase out of the space ring and opened it to find 30 transparent tubes inside. There was a drop of shiny golden light in each tube, emanating considerable energy. Luo Feng could practically hear the roaring of the beast god.

"Beast god blood."

Luo Feng took out a tube, unplugged it and poured it on his left palm. It looked like pure, golden light, but he could see, within the light, that it was actually a golden liquid. Countless law engravings flowing within it.

The golden light dropped into his palm and penetrated the skin.

Pow!

Luo Feng's body started to glimmer with golden light. The blood river energies in Luo Feng's cells were already sturdy, and the drop of beast god blood merged with them easily without causing any reaction.

"Black warriors can please Primal Chaos City Leader teacher," said Luo Feng. "He says merging with beast god blood is an easy task. Now that I can merge with 82 blood river crystals, I'm already way ahead of the limit of a black warrior." Luo Feng smiled. "Absorbing the beast god blood is like drinking water to me."

He took out another tube, opened it, and poured out the beast god blood.

One drop after another, the beast god blood merged with Luo Feng's body. After a short while, all 18 drops of had successfully integrated with Luo Feng, which was an easier task than he had previously perceived it to be.

When Luo Feng tried the 19th drop of beast god blood, it only rolled on his palm and lay there without seeping in.

"That seems to be the limit," Luo Feng said, nodding. "I've already hit the limit of blood river energies." His eyes gleamed. "Now... drive the blood river energies!"

Hong!

An ancient force shot out from Luo Feng's body. It suddenly felt as if energy from the origin of the entire universe was emanating from deep inside him. His body was heightened and strengthened, and indistinct scales formed on every inch of his skin. Countless threads wound across his body, and a giant image of a roaring beast god appeared on his chest—so detailed and realistic that it looked like an actual, bellowing beast god in all its exquisite detail. Golden halos pulsated outward, surrounding his body.

Luo Feng looked down at his chest. He had already taken off his armor as he wanted to feel the power touching his body. "How mighty this energy is...! Huh?" Luo Feng was stunned. "Wait. Something's wrong. Only 3,000 times? How is that possible?"

Luo Feng was perplexed. Theoretically, once 100 blood river crystals were merged with the body, the body would be 100 times stronger. Golden Horned Beast's right claw had been strengthened 100 times at the beginning, and it stopped growing after hitting the 10,000-times limit.

Luo Feng frowned. "I was originally 48 times stronger, but now that I've surpassed being strengthened 3,000 times, I'm only around 60 times stronger than before."

The effect was weakened! The blood river energies that worked perfectly on the Golden Horned Beast were far less effective on the original earthling body!

Luo Feng considered the implications. Beast god blood might be useless for the special life forms in the universe. Like a unique life form of water category whose life gene level is already thousands of times stronger, the beast god blood won't help that much. Beast god blood comes from an inborn beast god of "gold and space." Is it possible that the beast god blood worked well in the beginning, but its effect will be weakened as time goes by?

He decided to let the matter drop. Regardless of the reason, it was now proven that the original earthling body reached a life gene level that was 3,000 times stronger after merging with the beast god blood, together with its 48-times-stronger base.

"I'll just wait. My life gene level can be improved when I get another metal from the Nine Volume Manual."

Luo Feng smiled and nodded. Although it hadn't been the best possible outcome, he was still exhilarated that his life gene level had been improved 3000 times. That put it at the level of some top-tier special life forms in the universe.

Fortunately, I have the Nine Volume Manual, Luo Feng thought. Otherwise, I'd be like other life forms of the other races in the universe, who can only improve their life gene level to 100 times.

The Nine Volume Manual... It was his secret weapon. With it, Luo Feng could rival top-tier special life forms. Other things like blood river crystals were just icing on the cake.

******

Time passed. Since the original earthling body and Golden Horned Beast body had merged with blood river crystals, Luo Feng continued to train in seclusion. He didn't do anything but spend time with his family.

After another century, his third body was about to be born.

In the internal world, Golden Horned Beast's claws gripped the plain like pillars. He looked up at the sky. Mosha body stood on Golden Horned Beast's back, gazing at the sky as well. There was a colossal, oval-shaped, golden egg floating in the sky.

The golden egg had been small when it first came into being, but it had grown larger and larger as time went by, and it was now more than 6,000 miles tall.

"Soon..." said Luo Feng. "It'll soon be born." Luo Feng pondered the result. "Will it be a whole sea?"

The life form in the oval golden egg would remain a mystery until it revealed itself.

Around eight hours later.

Cr—ack!

Dozens of hairline fractures appeared on the colossal, golden egg. Luo Feng and his three other bodies held their breath as they watched.

Pow!

All at once, the eggshell was completely crushed. In its place was

a giant man in the sky, standing almost 6,000 miles tall. Its naked body cast a perfect, almost exotic figure, with sparkling skin and crystal-clear jades across its skin, and bloody threads flowing inside it.

Luo Feng's original earthling body and his other bodies were all dazed by such a pleasant surprise.

"My... my third body," said Luo Feng, "is flesh and blood!"

Table of Contents

- Swallowed Star
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 901: Silhouette of a Whip
  - Chapter 902: Luo Feng Vs Black Ti
  - Chapter 903: The Legend of Blade River Emperor
  - Chapter 904: Primal Sky Mountain
  - Chapter 905: Gamble
  - Chapter 906: 21st Level
  - Chapter 907: Devil Hand Emperor
  - Chapter 908: Back To Earth
  - Chapter 909: One Order
  - Chapter 910: 1,000 Vine Star Eating Plant
  - Chapter 911: Heavily Injured Devil Hand Emperor
  - Chapter 912: God Body Separation
  - Chapter 913: Black Flower Secret Region
  - Chapter 914: Name Doku
  - Chapter 915: Da La Sha Teacher
  - Chapter 916: Exposed
  - Chapter 917: Flee
  - Chapter 918: Ice Hell
  - Chapter 919: Stuck in Ice Hell
  - Chapter 920: Danger
  - Chapter 921: Path of Death
  - Chapter 922: Cang Jiang Clan
  - Chapter 923: Ten Emperors
  - Chapter 924: Secret Techniques
  - Chapter 925: Searching for Humans
  - Chapter 926: Hit the Light-Racing Star
  - Chapter 927: First Combat
  - Chapter 928: Silver Eye Shows Himself
  - Chapter 929: Death God’s Point
  - Chapter 930: Luo Feng’s Message
  - Chapter 931: Easily Obtained
  - Chapter 932: Anxiety
  - Chapter 933: 2,000 Years of Hibernation

Chapter 934: Meet Sky Wolf
Chapter 935: Sky Wolf's Treasure
Chapter 936: Reckoning
Chapter 937: Luo Feng's Original Plan
Chapter 938: Master of Sky Wolf
Chapter 939: Arrival of the Primal Chaos City Leader
Chapter 940: Seeing Through
Chapter 941: Famous in the Universe
Chapter 942: True Yan Emperor and Luo Feng
Chapter 943: Land of Inheritance
Chapter 944: Bauhinia Island
Chapter 945: Guarding Beast God
Chapter 946: Three Paths
Chapter 947: Inheritance
Chapter 948: Extrapolation
Chapter 949: Land of Treasures
Chapter 950: The Knight and the Emperor
Chapter 951: He is Blade River Emperor
Chapter 952: The Trouble with Fame
Chapter 953: Hong Alliance
Chapter 954: A Difficult Invitation to Battle
Chapter 955: Accepting the Challenge?
Chapter 956: Luo Feng’s Strength
Chapter 957: 620,000 Battles???
Chapter 958: Win! Win! Win!
Chapter 959: Astonishing the Universe
Chapter 960: Kill Him!
Chapter 961: Ambush on All Sides
Chapter 962: Assassinate! Luo Feng Died!
Chapter 963: Anyone Who Touches It Shall Be Killed
Chapter 964: Only the Soul
Chapter 965: Departure
Chapter 966: World Tree
Chapter 967: Space Whirlpool
Chapter 968: Wormhole
Chapter 969: Original Real Treasures
Chapter 970: Sudden Changes
Chapter 971: Birth
Chapter 972: Talent Techniques

Chapter 973: Nine Remoteness Space
Chapter 974: Bomb It
Chapter 975: Bark Mirror Emperor
Chapter 976: Universe Mirror
Chapter 977: Fight
Chapter 978: Nine Remoteness Whirlpool
Chapter 979: Another Sky and Land
Chapter 980: Nine Remoteness Master
Chapter 981: Celebration
Chapter 982: True Yan Knight
Chapter 983: Encirclement and Suppression
Chapter 984: Twigs and Leaves of World Trees
Chapter 985: Breed the Third Body!
Chapter 986: Travel through Nine Remoteness World
Chapter 987: Walking to His Own Death
Chapter 988: Break Free
Chapter 989: Father
Chapter 990: Strictly Confidential
Chapter 991: Arrival at the Royal Sea
Chapter 992: Furious Nine Remoteness Master
Chapter 993: Third Body
Chapter 994: Ancient Ship Galaxy
Chapter 995: Valuables! Valuables!
Chapter 996: Ancient Ship Galaxy
Chapter 997: Inborn Beast God
Chapter 998: Life Gene Level
Chapter 999: 6,400 Times
Chapter 1000: Third Body, Finished!